

**CENTRAL STORE 2**

UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY  
BIRMINGHAM

Author

PATRICK

Class Mark

BR1720.C6.P2  
S/BR 65.C5Z

Book No.

248155

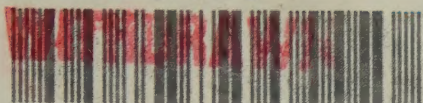


UNIVERSITY  
OF NOTTINGHAM  
LIBRARY



6 00 225773 1

TELEPEN







JOWETT MEMORIAL LIBRARY

**WITHDRAWN**



PATON CONGREGATIONAL COLLEGE

JOWETT MEMORIAL LIBRARY

Clement of Alexandria





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2024

The Croall Lecture for 1899-1900

# Clement of Alexandria

BY

JOHN PATRICK, D.D.

PROFESSOR OF BIBLICAL CRITICISM AND BIBLICAL ANTIQUITIES,  
UNIVERSITY OF EDINBURGH

William Blackwood and Sons  
Edinburgh and London

1914

UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY  
NOTTINGHAM

C  
248155

To the Memory of  
WILLIAM PATRICK, D.D.,  
PRINCIPAL OF MANITOBA COLLEGE,  
1900-1911.





## P R E F A C E.

---

THE Lectures on which the present volume is based were delivered in 1899-1900, and their publication is long overdue. The delay has been caused by impaired health, which compelled me for many years to confine myself to the work of my Chair. I have to thank the Croall Trustees for their courtesy and forbearance.

Since the delivery of the Lectures there has appeared the edition of the works of Clement by O. Stählin, the three volumes of which were published respectively in 1905, 1906, 1909. In preparing the Lectures for publication I have used his text throughout. It is impossible to exaggerate the services of Stählin in the elucidation of the text and sources of Clement. I have also consulted the relative literature that has appeared since the Lectures were written, as well as other earlier writings on the subject, to which I had not access at the time. This has led to the reconsideration of some questions touched upon in the Lectures and to the consideration of others not then discussed. For these reasons the work

in its present form differs in many respects from the Lectures as delivered, though the general plan and order of treatment have been preserved.

I desire to acknowledge my obligations to the Rev. Dr Gardiner of Kirknewton for the great care which he has bestowed on the revision of the proofs.

# CONTENTS.

| LECTURE                                                                          | PAGE |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| I. CLEMENT AND HIS WRITINGS . . . . .                                            | I    |
| II. THE RELATION OF CHRISTIANITY TO HELLENIC CULTURE<br>AND PHILOSOPHY . . . . . | 34   |
| III. THE NATURE AND ATTRIBUTES OF GOD . . . . .                                  | 65   |
| IV. THE PERSON AND WORK OF CHRIST . . . . .                                      | 97   |
| V. THE ETHICS OF CLEMENT . . . . .                                               | 141  |
| VI. SCRIPTURE: ITS NATURE, INTERPRETATION, AND EXTENT .                          | 188  |
| -----                                                                            |      |
| APPENDIX                                                                         |      |
| A. ANALYSIS OF THE PROTREPTICUS . . . . .                                        | 249  |
| B. ANALYSIS OF THE PÆDAGOGUS . . . . .                                           | 256  |
| C. ANALYSIS OF THE STROMATEIS . . . . .                                          | 267  |
| D. THE ORDER OF THE WRITINGS OF CLEMENT . . . . .                                | 301  |
| E. LOST WRITINGS OF CLEMENT . . . . .                                            | 309  |
| F. THE BIBLICAL TEXT IN CLEMENT . . . . .                                        | 311  |
| G. NON-CANONICAL SAYINGS IN THE WRITINGS OF CLEMENT .                            | 317  |
| H. BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .                                                        | 322  |
| -----                                                                            |      |
| INDEX . . . . .                                                                  | 325  |

## ERRATUM.

P. 56, l. 22—*for* “Christ,” *read* “Christianity.”



# Clement of Alexandria.

---

## LECTURE I.

### CLEMENT AND HIS WRITINGS.

ALEXANDRIA occupies an important place in the intellectual and spiritual history of the world. Founded by Alexander the Great in 332 B.C., with the view of binding the East with Greece not only in an external political union but in the bond of a common intellectual culture, it amply fulfilled, under the Ptolemies, the end for which it had been established. From its geographical position in relation to Greece, Asia Minor, and Syria, it was a natural centre for the commerce of the world; and in the realm of thought in like manner it became a centre of intellectual activity, a bridge between East and West, Greek and barbarian, the gods of Greece and the gods of Egypt. On the institution of the Museum, scholars from Greece of all schools flocked to it, some to study, some to lecture on criticism, or history, or rhetoric, or philosophy. Its two great libraries furnished abundant materials for work in every department of science and scholarship—for the philological criticism which sometimes degenerated into pedantic

trifling, for the laborious commentaries which took the place of original work, for the dilettantism and endless controversies of the cloistered literati which called forth the gibes of the satirist.<sup>1</sup> Some half a century before Clement began his activity there, the Emperor Hadrian visited Alexandria, and in a letter of his which has been preserved we have a vivid, if one-sided and unsympathetic, picture of the restless life, religious and commercial, of the community. "I have now gained full knowledge," he writes, "of that Egypt whose praises you were wont to sing. I have found the people vain and fickle, shifting with every breath of popular opinion. Those who worship Serapis are in fact Christians; and those who call themselves Christian bishops are devotees of Serapis. There is no head of a Jewish synagogue, no Samaritan, no Christian presbyter, who is not an astrologer, a fortune-teller, or a conjurer. . . . The populace are seditious and turbulent to a degree. The city is rich and opulent; in it no one lives at leisure. . . . They have but one god—money; him Christians, him Jews, him all the peoples adore."<sup>2</sup> The picture, in part, no doubt, owes its malicious touches to the irritation felt by Hadrian at the rejection by the Alexandrians of his minion Antinous; but it contains sufficient truth to point the sting, and in some of its features it is confirmed by many details in the writings of Clement. To an observer of a different order, the greatness of the city seemed to contend with its beauty, and the people to be rivals of the city.<sup>3</sup> To Hadrian, the syncretism of various forms of religious thought might well seem an amalgam of contradictory elements, a confusion of antagonistic systems in which everything that

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Athenæus, i. 41 (Meineke).

<sup>2</sup> Flavius Vopiscus-Saturninus, c. 8—'Scriptores Historiæ Augustæ,' vol. ii. p. 209 (Hermann Peter).

<sup>3</sup> Achil. Tat., v. i.

was most distinctive of each had been toned down and effaced. So with the material luxury. Even if all allowance be made for the tendency of all moralists in their eagerness to discourage every form of vice or moral weakness to exaggerate its extent, and to ascribe to one city or age the collective vices of all cities and ages, there remains enough in Clement's allusions to show that in spite of its intellectualism the population of Alexandria was passionately devoted to all forms of luxury and enervating pleasure.<sup>1</sup> The religious syncretism was in harmony with the aim of its founder. In the centuries that had intervened between its foundation and the Christian era, Alexandria had become a rendezvous of all creeds, all languages, all nationalities, a veritable cosmopolis of intellectual and religious movements, a nursery of all forms of eclecticism. Like as the founder himself had built temples to Isis as well as to the gods of Olympus, so there had been effected there a fusion of forms of thought and belief which elsewhere existed in sharp antagonism to each other. Partly from an apologetic motive, partly in harmony with the tendency to syncretism in its environment, Jewish writers before the Christian era sought to show that the great thinkers of Greece were indebted to the Hebrews for their deepest speculations, and, not out of harmony with some aspects in the literary activity of the period, even fabricated and adulterated writings to prove their thesis. The translation of the Old Testament into Greek not only enabled the Jews of Alexandria to read their sacred books in their own tongue, but excited a measure of interest in Greek-speaking peoples of other nationalities, though mainly an interest of antagonism called forth by what seemed to them the preposterous claims put forth on behalf of the religious literature of a despised

<sup>1</sup> See Glaser, 'Zeitbilder aus Alexandrien nach dem Paedagogus des C. A.,' 1905.

section of the community. In the early years of the Christian era, Philo, while not ignoring the hypothesis of dependence, took a loftier view of the relation between the Greek philosophy and Mosaism, and by means of the allegorical method of exegesis read speculative forms and conceptions into the Pentateuch. A like syncretistic tendency was exhibited in Gnosticism, which found in Alexandria its most brilliant representatives. This intellectual and religious ferment was at once a danger and a stimulus to the exponent of the Christian faith. Such syncretism led to indifference to, or toleration of, all manifestations of the religious spirit; but Christianity by its very constitution could not but be intolerant of any form of polytheism. It furnished an interested audience; for if in Alexandria there was no great eagerness in the attainment of truth, there was keen interest in discussions about it. Into this soil in which so many diverse seeds had been sown the Gospel of Christ had been cast; it had a fierce struggle for mere existence, a still fiercer struggle before it if it were to gain the mastery. It was compelled to face new problems, to define its attitude to various forces and movements with which elsewhere it had not been brought into such immediate contact. Was it to stand aside as if these forces were of no interest to it, to leave its adherents in an intellectual atmosphere without intellectual armoury? Was it to strive to bring all that was best in them into relation to itself, or to act as if they were absolutely out of relation to it? To show the method that was adopted in the solution of such problems by the first great Alexandrian thinker whose works have come down to us, in what spirit he confronted Greek philosophy and culture, what conceptions of God, of Christ, of the Christian ideal, of Scripture, he presented to his students and fellow-disciples, is the purpose of the present course of Lectures.

From an early date, according to Eusebius, there had

existed at Alexandria a school of sacred learning.<sup>1</sup> The assumption of some of the older writers on the subject that it stood in a close relation to the Museum has no validity. That its teachers must in some measure have felt the academic influence, that the teaching would have reference direct and indirect to the intellectual needs and characteristics necessarily arising from its environment, may be assumed; but of any official or actual relationship between it and the Museum there is no trace. Of the origin of this Christian School nothing definite is known. A gnostic origin has been assigned to it.<sup>2</sup> This would no doubt account for the jealousy which it created in some quarters; but on other grounds it is improbable. Eusebius speaks of it in varying terms. Sometimes he speaks of it as a school of catechesis, sometimes as a school of sacred learning.<sup>3</sup> From this it may be inferred that it was a school of catechesis that had developed into a school of sacred learning. It derived its origin from the necessity of giving special instruction to catechumens in the elements of the Christian faith; but it was compelled from its surroundings to extend the sphere of its operations and give instruction in all branches of learning. Whether from the first it was dependent on the local bishop is doubtful. That it was so by the time of Origen we see from a statement of Eusebius; <sup>4</sup> that it may have been so at an earlier date may be conjectured from the fact that both Pantænus and Clement were presbyters of the Church. Like the Missionary Colleges in India in our own time, it was probably attended by non-Christian students as well as by Christians. But we must dismiss any idea of a separate

<sup>1</sup> Ἐξ ἀρχαίου ἔθους διδασκαλείου τῶν ἱερῶν λόγων παρ' αὐτοῖς συνεστῶτος (Eus., H. E., v. 10).

<sup>2</sup> Loofs, 'Leitfaden . . . Dogmengeschichte,' p. 106.

<sup>3</sup> . . . τοῦ τῆς κατηχήσεως . . . διδασκαλείου (vi. 3). . . τῆς τοῦ κατηχεῖν διατριβῆς (ib.) . . . τῆς τῶν πιστῶν . . . διατριβῆς (v. 10).

<sup>4</sup> H. E., vi. 3.



building as such an analogy would suggest. The language of Eusebius with regard to Origen rather suggests that he taught in his own house.<sup>1</sup> The picture presented by Gregory Thaumaturgus<sup>2</sup> of the school under the guidance of Origen may be regarded as exhibiting the general lines on which it was working from the third quarter of the second century. Christianity was set forth as the crown of all learning, and all liberal arts were represented as its handmaids. The scholars were carefully trained in the art of detecting sophisms and fallacies. They were encouraged to read everything that had been written by poets and philosophers of old, with the exception of the works of atheists. They were trained in natural science, especially in astronomy and geometry, in ethics, and in the discussion of philosophical problems; but in all these not for their own sakes, but as a means to an end, as aids to the interpretation and defence of the Scriptures. In this lay the essential difference between it and the Stoic and Platonic schools of the Imperial era, though otherwise it ran on parallel lines.<sup>3</sup> In this respect, too, it had analogies with the Missionary Colleges of to-day.

According to a statement of Philip of Side, the first head of the Catechetical School was Athenagoras. But in view of the notorious inaccuracy of the writer, and especially of his reversal of the relation of Pantænus and Clement, no weight can be attached to the tradition. The first teacher whose name is definitely known to us, who prescribed the range of its work, and from whom it received the impetus that made it famous and influential in the history of the Church, was Pantænus. Probably not later than the year 180 he became the head of the school. Of the ecclesiastical traditions concerning him the one statement that may be admitted without controversy is that, before his con-

<sup>1</sup> H. E., vi. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Paneg. in Orig., vi.-xiv.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. 'Rheinische Museum für Philologie,' vol. lvi. p. 56.

version, he had belonged to the school of the Stoics.<sup>1</sup> By his teaching he attracted many scholars, and among others Clement. According to Jerome,<sup>2</sup> Pantænus wrote commentaries on many books of Scripture. The accuracy of the assertion is disputed;<sup>3</sup> in any case, with the exception of one or two passages or allusions, which may have been derived from oral tradition, they have perished; but his teaching, his methods, his principles, in all likelihood even many of the details of his system, survive in the works of his disciple.

Titus Flavius Clemens was born in all probability in Athens,<sup>4</sup> and of heathen parentage, about the middle of the second century. He was endowed by nature with a deeply religious temperament and a burning thirst for knowledge. His religious yearnings he seems to have sought to satisfy by initiation into the mysteries;<sup>5</sup> he evinced his love of learning by the passionate pursuit of all branches of science and philosophy. The same religious earnestness that had created in his spirit dissatisfaction with heathenism drove him to seek for fuller knowledge and deeper insight into the mysteries of the Christian religion. In many lands—in Greece, Italy, Syria, Palestine—and under many teachers, he studied zealously, but found no lasting satisfaction for his spirit till he came to Egypt. Of the “truly blessed and memorable men” whom he was

<sup>1</sup> Eus., H. E., v. 10.

<sup>2</sup> De Vir. Ill., c. 36.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Ec. Pr., 27: οὐκ ἔγραφον δὲ οἱ πρεσβύτεροι.

<sup>4</sup> Epiph. Hær., xxxii. 6. Κλήμης τε ὃν φασὶ τινες Ἀλεξανδρέα, ἕτεροι δὲ Ἀθηναῖον. Greece was the starting-point of his search for truth (Str., i. 1<sup>1</sup>). In Prot., ii. 20, referring to the prevalence of the legend concerning Demeter, he says: ὅπου γε Ἀθηναίοις καὶ τῇ ἄλλῃ Ἑλλάδι, αἰδοῦμαι καὶ λέγειν. His sensitiveness on the point suggests that he was a Greek and an Athenian. He is not sensitive as to the details.

<sup>5</sup> This is an inference from the knowledge which he displays of the details of the mysteries. Cf. Eus., Præp. Evang., ii. 2, p. 61. It is not regarded as cogent by Bratke. ‘Die Stellung des Cl. Al. zum antiken Mysterienwesen’ (St. u. Kr., 1887, p. 656). Cf. St. u. Kr., 1894.



privileged to hear, and of their "convincing and living words," he writes as follows: "Of these, one was in Greece, an Ionian. Others were in Magna Græcia, one from Cœle-Syria, the other from Egypt. There were others in the East, one of whom was of the Assyrians, and the other in Palestine, a Hebrew by origin. When I fell in with the last of my teachers (he was the first in power), having hunted him out as he lay concealed in Egypt, I came to rest. He was in truth a Sicilian bee who culled the flowers of the prophetic and apostolic meadow, and begot in the souls of his hearers an unsullied store of knowledge. These men, preserving the true tradition of the blessed teaching directly from Peter, James, John, and Paul, the holy apostles, the son receiving it from the father (but few are like their fathers), came with God's blessing also to us to deposit these ancestral and apostolic seeds."<sup>1</sup> That these were Christian teachers is manifest; they were six in number. Who the others were is disputed or unknown: some have identified the Ionian with Athenagoras, the Assyrian with Tatian; but that the last was Pantænus there can be no doubt. The words of Clement show his eagerness in the search for a solution of the problems that had created unrest and his complete satisfaction with the solution. He became a presbyter of the Church,<sup>2</sup> and for a period of more than twenty years he wrought and taught in Alexandria, first as coadjutor of Pantænus, and afterwards as his successor. In the year 202 the persecution of Severus broke out, and in accordance with his own teaching on martyrdom, as professedly based on the injunction of Christ, he left Alexandria that he might serve the Church of Christ elsewhere.<sup>3</sup> Of his subsequent career little is known. We catch a final glimpse of his activity in the year 211, in a

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 1<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>37</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. x. 23. Cf. Str., iv. 4<sup>14-17</sup>; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 226, fr. 56.

letter of Alexander, then bishop of Cappadocia, who had been a fellow-student of Origen in the school of Clement. In sending a letter to the Church of Antioch by the hands of Clement, he describes him as the blessed presbyter, a man virtuous and approved, who had confirmed and advanced the Church of the Lord.<sup>1</sup> In a later letter of Alexander to Origen, he alludes to Pantænus and Clement as those blessed fathers who had trodden the way before them, with whom after a little they would be.<sup>2</sup> He died probably about 215.

Though the facts of his life are so meagre, the portrait of the man himself stands out in his writings as that of a singularly lovable personality. He gives the impression of a certain intellectual naïveté, combined with a moral austerity. He has a lofty conception of the function of the teacher, as well as of the duty of the scholar. If he demands from the student that he shall approach the study of the Christian faith with earnest reverence and not in the merely curious spirit with which men go to strange cities and buildings, and if he insists that the ears of those who seek to become partakers of the truth must be sanctified, he demands from himself as a teacher that he shall keep in view the varied character and temperament of those who are under his tuition, that he shall set aside all ignoble impulses and motives, and have for his sole aim the salvation of his hearers.<sup>3</sup> What Gregory says of his scholar Origen may be applied to his master. "He did not merely discuss ethical matters with his scholars, but incited them to the practice of morals, and stimulated by what he did even more than by what he said."<sup>4</sup> There can be little doubt that in the representation of the gnostic he sets forth the ideal which was the goal of his own

<sup>1</sup> Eus., H. E., vi. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Str., i. 1<sup>4-6</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 14.

<sup>4</sup> Paneg. in Orig., c. 9.

endeavour. "I do not know," says Maurice, "where we shall look for a purer or a truer man than this Clement of Alexandria. . . . He seems to me that one of the old fathers whom we should all have revered most as a teacher and loved most as a friend."<sup>1</sup>

Of the writings of Clement many have perished; many to which he makes allusion as in contemplation were in all probability never written. Of the writings that have survived, the most important are the *Protrepticus*, the *Pædagogus*, and the *Stromateis*. Till a few years ago it was universally assumed by writers on the subject that the three works were written in the order named, that though distinctive in aim they were closely and progressively related to each other and formed a series, that they were so intended by the writer himself, and, accordingly, that they may be regarded as one work in three sections, the general aim of which was to transform the Greek pagan by stages into a Christian gnostic, to initiate the reader into the ethics and philosophy of the Christian faith by setting forth different aspects of the activity of the one Logos. But the "discovery" of Wendland—to use the phrase of Harnack—has produced a complete reversal of this view, and introduced an entirely novel conception of the literary relationships of these writings. According to Wendland, the order was, *Protrepticus*; *Stromateis*, I.-IV.; *Pædagogus*; *Stromateis*, V.-VII. The hypothesis has been supported by Heussi and Harnack, and accepted by Duchesne and others. The question is discussed afterwards;<sup>2</sup> here it may be said that, if not "ungrounded and improbable," as it is described by a patristic authority of the first rank,<sup>3</sup> the hypo-

<sup>1</sup> 'Ecclesiastical History of the First and Second Centuries,' p. 239. Clement has no legal right to the official designation of "saint" sometimes ascribed to him.

<sup>2</sup> See Appendix D.

<sup>3</sup> Bardenhewer.

thesis raises difficulties not less great than the traditional view which it seeks to supplant. It is not a purely literary or academic question, for in some cases the order has a direct bearing on the exposition of the teaching.

The 'Exhortation to the Greeks'<sup>1</sup> is the earliest extant work of Clement, and is at once a powerful exposure of the paganism from which he sought to wean them and a powerful appeal in favour of Christianity. He begins with an invitation to turn aside from heathen myths and listen to the New Song—the Word of God. He then exposes with almost superfluous fulness the corruptions of paganism, its mysteries, the legends as to the gods, the cruelty and impurity of its sacrifices, its worship of images made by men's hands. From this he passes to the imperfect views of God set forth in the works of philosophers and poets, with which he contrasts the truth of Christianity as set forth in the Scriptures. He then refutes the objection that they should not abandon ancestral customs, showing its folly and the loss which it entails. Finally, he exhibits the beneficence of God as revealed in Christianity, and urges them in the name of Christ to choose life, not death.<sup>2</sup> It was probably written before 195<sup>3</sup>—perhaps some years earlier.

With the *Pædagogus* or Tutor we enter upon the second stage of the work of the Word. Clement himself tells us that the aim of the writing was to set forth the way of life and training from the stage of childhood—that is, the rule of life, derived from instruction, which grows along with faith, and prepares the virtuous soul in the case of those who

<sup>1</sup> *Προτρεπτικὸς πρὸς Ἕλληνας*.

<sup>2</sup> For an analysis, which, however, can give no idea of its eloquence and passionate movement, see Appendix A.

<sup>3</sup> Bardenhewer, *Patrologie*,<sup>3</sup> about 195; *Geschichte der altkirchlichen Litt.*, before 199; Zahn, before 189; Harnack, in the ninth decade of the second century.

were reaching the rank of men for the reception of gnostic science.<sup>1</sup> An ethical foundation had to be laid before introduction to the higher truths of Christianity, for moral health was the condition of spiritual insight. The Tutor is the Word, the Son of God Himself, who sets forth a system of practical ethics in conformity with a Christian ideal of life. Certain general principles are laid down. Nothing is to be done contrary to nature.<sup>2</sup> We must beware of all that is unnatural and all that is excessive.<sup>3</sup> Everything is to be done in harmony with right reason.<sup>4</sup> Moderation should be our aim in everything.<sup>5</sup> We are not to take away what is natural to man but to impose upon it a just measure.<sup>6</sup> The life of the Christian ought to be a unity.<sup>7</sup> It should be a kind of organised whole of rational actions—that is, an infallible fulfilment of what is taught by the Word.<sup>8</sup> He ought to live after the image of the Tutor,<sup>9</sup> to take on the impression of the truly saving life of the Saviour and follow in the footsteps of God.<sup>10</sup> As his aim is to set forth what a Christian ought to be in every relation of life,<sup>11</sup> Clement gives the most minute details of guidance in everything that affects a citizen of the kingdom of God. The extraordinary minuteness of the instruction, of which he himself at times is conscious,<sup>12</sup> has brought on him the charge of petty pedantry; but it is in large measure due to the fact that he has throughout the needs of the catechumens in mind; and, it may be, in part due to the fact that he is following the methods of some Stoic teachers,<sup>13</sup> possibly of Pantænus himself, who gave to their disciples similarly detailed prescriptions. The dominating ethical ideal in Alexandria was non-Christian; and the emphasising of a negative to it at all

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 1<sup>1</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 13<sup>129</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., ii. 11<sup>114</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>29</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., iii. 10<sup>51</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 5<sup>48</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., iii. 1<sup>1</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 13<sup>102</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., i. 12<sup>100</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., i. 12<sup>98</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>1</sup>.<sup>12</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>7</sup>.<sup>13</sup> Cf. Zeller, 'Eclecticism,' p. 253 (Eng. trans.)



points was imperative; and this involved in the circumstances not merely the inculcation of general principles but definite instruction by way of guidance. As they had to adjust the new force to their intellectual environment, they had also to adjust it to the manifold relations of everyday life. Many of the precepts which seem to us trifling or superfluous were no doubt called forth by antagonism to the immorality or irreligion with which they were associated. If any justification for his procedure is necessary, it is justified by the consideration that the strength of paganism, from the glamour of which the converts were only just emancipated, lay not so much in its religious conceptions, which could easily be overthrown by arguments, as in the social customs which were an inseparable element in it. In this way things in themselves morally indifferent might acquire a moral stamp or stigma for the time. A code of practical ethics, with suggestions, so to speak, on Christian etiquette, was a necessary part of the equipment of the Greek who had entered upon the career of a Christian citizen. From the nature of the case it was inevitable that emphasis should be placed on the restrictions imposed by their Christian profession, rather than on its liberties. Clement certainly did not err in insisting on the necessary relation between the dogmatic and the ethical side of Christianity, or in making the attainment of truth in its highest form depend on the realisation of the moral ideal in every relation of life as its essential prerequisite. It is significant that the first systematic teacher of Christian doctrine, the foremost champion of liberal culture in the Church, should at the same time be the most eloquent exponent in that age, and for many ages that followed, of Christianity in common life.

The treatise was divided by the writer himself into Three Books. In the First Book Clement explains who the Tutor



is, who His pupils are, and what has been and is His method of education. The Tutor is the Word; babes in Christ are His pupils; He adopts all methods of training—including punishment, which is consistent with, nay, is a proof of, love—to secure the moral salvation of those under His tuition. In the Second Book he enters into details. Under the subject of the relation of the Christian to the body, he touches on the proper use of food, of drink, of gold and silver vessels, of music, of jesting, condemns all manner of filthy speaking and frivolous talk, the use of floral crowns, and indicates the limits to be placed on the use of ointments and sleep. He sets forth the Christian view of marriage, reprobates all manner of impurity, luxury in clothing, and the use of precious stones in place of cultivating true beauty. In the Third Book he continues the same subject, censures the love of finery in women, as well as effeminacy in men and extravagance in the number of slaves, prescribes the proper use of the public baths, of wealth, of physical exercises, condemns the use of false hair, all forms of gambling, the visiting of racecourses and theatres. He exhibits the duty of the Christian in business, gives counsel as to his conduct on the way to church, in church, and out of it. He concludes with some suggestions, based on the words of Scripture, on prayer, civil government, and kindred matters. A prayer to the Tutor brings the work to a close. Two hymns are adjoined to the treatise. The first may have been written by Clement; the second certainly is not by him. The work was written before the *Stromateis*. The date is put by Zahn about 190, and by Bardenhewer soon after the *Protrepticus*;<sup>1</sup> by Harnack, in accordance with his hypothesis of the relative order of composition of the great writings, in the first decade of the second century.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Patrologie* <sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> See Analysis, Appendix B.

The third and highest stage of discipleship is set forth in the *Stromateis*, or 'Gnostic notes according to the true Philosophy,' as he designates its contents.<sup>1</sup> "A 'stromateus' was a long bag of striped canvas in which bedclothes were rolled up."<sup>2</sup> From a statement of his own we see that it was the custom to give fancy designations, such as 'Meadow,' 'Helicon,' 'Honeycomb,' 'Robe,' and the like, to works of a miscellaneous order.<sup>3</sup> As applied to a literary work, it was not invented by Clement,<sup>4</sup> though it was afterwards so associated with his name that he is often described as the *Stromatist*.<sup>5</sup> The title was meant to suggest freedom of movement and artful disorder. He speaks of it as if it were only the reproduction of the teaching which he had received from "blessed and truly memorable men"; and, if this is not to be taken literally, it may contain a larger measure of truth than is sometimes supposed.<sup>6</sup> He tells us that his writing is not to be compared to trim pleasure-grounds, but rather to a dense and umbrageous wood, where all kinds of trees, fruit-bearing and others, are intentionally mingled;<sup>7</sup> to a meadow, in which the flowers blossom promiscuously, where things are scattered advisedly without regard to order or style;<sup>8</sup> to the "herbage of all kinds," of which the Scripture speaks.<sup>9</sup> One reason for this disorder is the desire to stimulate the reader and encourage the earnest searcher after truth, by making it more precious in his eyes when hunted out instead of making it too easy of access; to indicate the path to the reader, instead of accompanying him the whole

<sup>1</sup> *Τῶν κατὰ τὴν ἀληθῆ φιλοσοφίαν γνωστικῶν ὑπομνημάτων στρωματεὺς* (Str., iii. 18<sup>101</sup>).

<sup>2</sup> Hort.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Aulus Gellius, *Præf.*, 6-8.

<sup>6</sup> Str., i. 1<sup>11</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 1<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., vi. 1<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Frag. 48, Stäh., vol. iii. p. 224.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 18<sup>111</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 2<sup>6</sup>; Job v. 25.

way.<sup>1</sup> Another reason adduced is the necessity of concealing truth or expressing it in obscure symbol.<sup>2</sup> This is hard to account for, unless it be the fruit of an unconscious apologetic impulse, or a concession to the Greek catechumens whom he has in view at every stage of his work. He has little interest in, and makes no appeal to, the Jews in Alexandria. To his desire to confirm his hold on the Greeks is due the display, often irrelevant, of his curious scientific, medical,<sup>3</sup> philosophical, philological, and religious lore, the digressions, the numerous quotations from, and allusions to, Greek poets and thinkers, and the superfluous fulness with which he enters into details even when the enumeration brings him into formal antagonism to his own standpoint.<sup>4</sup> The result of his method is that "readers of the present day are often puzzled to know what he is driving at."<sup>5</sup> And as with the lack of order, so with the style. He tells us that he does not make any special effort at writing pure Greek, as he who cares for truth will not study phraseology.<sup>6</sup> As the Christian must cultivate a simple way of living, so he must cultivate a style severely simple and artless, with more nourishment in it than sauce. Style is but the vesture of thought, and clothing should not take precedence of the body.<sup>7</sup>

Perhaps by way of reaction against the fashionable rhetoric of the day, to write well seemed to him a mark of frivolity.<sup>8</sup> As a consequence, he is sometimes at once

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 2<sup>21</sup>; iv. 2<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, v. 8<sup>54</sup>; vi. 1<sup>1-2</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Harnack, 'Medizinisches aus der ältesten Kirchengeschichte,' T. u. U., 1892.

<sup>4</sup> Cf., e.g., Pæd., ii. 8<sup>69</sup>, and Str., i. 16<sup>176</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Mayor, 'Clement of Alexandria' (Hort and Mayor), p. xiv.

<sup>6</sup> Str., ii. 1<sup>3</sup>. "His language swarms with grammatical errors: he lacks discrimination in the use of the negatives *οὐ* and *μή*, of the pronouns *ὅς* and *ὅστις*, and the different forms of hypothetical sentences" (W. Christ., Phil. Stud. zum C. A., p. 13).

<sup>7</sup> Str., i. 10<sup>48</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Cf. Croiset, 'Histoire de la Littérature grecque,' vol. v. p. 752.

both obscure and diffuse, and adds analogy to analogy and epithet to epithet without adding to the thought or sharpening its definiteness. At times it may be that the *Stromateis* may be compared to a "confused causerie";<sup>1</sup> but it is improperly described as "Miscellanies," if by that is meant a series of disconnected essays. For, while there is a lack of order in details, there is no confusion as to the principles which are fundamental in his thought, which are in no way affected by disorder or irregularity of form.

In its extant form the *Stromateis* contains Seven Books and a fragment of an Eighth.<sup>2</sup> The general aim of the First Book is to represent Christianity as the true and final philosophy, and to exhibit the place of Greek philosophy in this connection. He condemns those who attacked philosophy, exhibits its usefulness, and marks it off from the sophistry which has usurped the name. He sets forth the succession of philosophers among the Greeks, with the aim of showing that it was inferior to the Christian truth both in respect of antiquity and of its secondary origin. To a like end he extols the work of Moses, defends the principles of his legislation, and maintains that, as compared with the Christian philosophy, the Greeks were no better than children, and that their science had no claim to the veneration due to age.

The Second Book begins with a statement of the plan which he proposed to follow. It then enters on a discussion as to the knowledge of God, emphasising in this matter the function of faith. It proceeds to set aside erroneous views as to the nature of faith, and exhibits its true nature as the foundation of the highest knowledge and truth. It goes on to discuss the place of fear as a

<sup>1</sup> Croiset, *ib.* : "Causerie confuse, ou se mêlent tous les tons, ou manquent l'ordre, la lumière, le bon goût même."

<sup>2</sup> The first leaf of the MS. is lost.

motive to Christian duty, the relation of the virtues to one another, and, in particular, the nature of penitence. It touches on the anthropomorphic expressions in Scripture, claims a Mosaic origin for the Greek conceptions of virtue, and defends the beneficent character of the Mosaic economy. It then exhibits the attitude of the Christian to pleasure and the passions, discusses various theories as to the highest good, and some aspects of the question of marriage.

The Third Book continues the discussion on marriage, and is mainly taken up with the refutation of heretical doctrines on the subject. In particular, the teaching of the school of Carpocrates with its glorification of lust is condemned, and the teaching of Marcion with its false and impious conception of continence. The position of those who taught that all actions were morally indifferent is examined. The scriptural arguments, for the most part taken from the Epistles of St Paul, are adduced in support of his refutation of the false and his exhibition of the true teaching as to continence and marriage in relation to the Christian ideal of life.

In the Fourth Book, after a detailed statement of his proposed order of treatment, he proceeds to consider the distinctive excellence of man, the nature of true martyrdom, its motive and end, the attitude of the Christian to persecution, and the grounds on which this is permitted by God and held to be reconcilable with His power and righteousness. He represents the ideal of gnostic love and its reward as equally attainable by women and men, indicates the difference between legal and gnostic perfection, and exhibits the pre-eminence of the knowledge of God, which was only possible through the Son, by faith in whom our life is unified. The true nature of the body and its relation to the soul in the Christian economy is then set forth.

The Fifth Book opens with a discussion on the nature



of faith and its relation to knowledge, and touches on the nature of hope and its place among the Christian virtues. He proceeds to show that in expressing the deepest mysteries in symbolic guise the Scriptures had followed a method universal in religion as well as in poetry and philosophy. He then explains the anthropomorphic language of the Scriptures, points out some analogies between the grades in the mysteries, beginning with purification and ending in contemplation, and the Christian stages towards the knowledge of God; shows how logical demonstration is from the nature of the case impossible in the case of God, and that, accordingly, He can only be apprehended through grace by faith in the Son as revealed in Scripture. Whatever measure of truth the Greeks possessed had been taken from this source. Though men everywhere had a certain knowledge of God, even when this had reached its highest as among the Greeks, it was imperfect in its range and saving power.

The Sixth Book opens with a renewed statement of his plan of writing, touching on the relation of the Stromateis to the Pædagogus in this connection. He confirms his thesis of the theft of the Greeks from the Scriptures by seeking to prove that they stole from each other *en masse*. The Greeks had but a limited grasp of the truth; whereas the Jews required only the addition of faith, the Greeks had further to abandon idolatry. He then discusses the nature of true wisdom, and its pre-eminence as having been derived from the Wisdom of God. The gnostic is then delineated in his relation to philosophic culture, to his own body, to the world and its duties, to God and fellowship with Him, to his moral ideals and the method of their realisation, to his fellow-men, to the Scriptures and their interpretation. He gives an exposition of the Decalogue as a specimen of gnostic insight. He again



touches on the divine origin of philosophy, while showing that it lacked the divine signs that accredited Christianity, as well as its universality, and its power to rise above the forces that threatened to crush it.

To show that the gnostic is truly pious is declared to be the purpose of the Seventh Book. This piety is portrayed in manifold aspects, alike on the divine and the human sides, which are not to be separated. His devoutness is set forth in relation to God, in his knowledge of the things of God, in his worship free from superstition and all ignoble elements, in his prayer, in his goal of unending contemplation. God accepts service of men as service of Him. So the gnostic is characterised by teaching, by beneficence, by self-sacrifice, by forgiveness of wrong, by striving after Christian perfection in love. In the closing section of the book Clement examines at length the objection that the Christian faith should not be embraced because of its divisions, and demonstrates that such a position was untenable save on grounds which were not in harmony with the real facts as to Christian truth and its heretical caricature.<sup>1</sup>

The Eighth Book on the face of it does not seem to have any close connection with the previous discussions, and might be a fragment of a logical treatise. It touches on such topics as the necessity of exact definition, the nature and method of demonstrative proof, genera and species. It is a matter of controversy whether it was originally a part of the *Stromateis*.<sup>2</sup> It does not deal specifically with any of the questions suggested in his various programmes. But, on the other hand, he seems to indicate at the close of the Seventh Book that he was about to pass to another subject of inquiry.<sup>3</sup>

The whole work is unfinished; many topics which formed

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix C.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Zahn, *Supplem. Clem.*, p. 114 *et seq.*

<sup>3</sup> *Str.*, vii. 18<sup>111</sup>.

part of his plan were never touched upon: whether he abandoned his task, as Overbeck suggests, because he despaired of being able to finish a subject that had proved so unwieldy, or, as others think, died before he had completed his task, it is impossible to say. Zahn puts the work at 202-203; Bardenhewer substantially agrees; Harnack puts the earlier portion at a similar period, and the later books after his departure from Alexandria.<sup>1</sup>

The only other work of Clement that has survived is the tractate entitled "Who is the Rich Man that is being Saved?"<sup>2</sup> This is an exposition of the narrative in the Gospel of the rich young man,<sup>3</sup> with a discussion on the problem therein suggested—the possibility of salvation in the Christian sense for the rich. The solution of Clement is that wealth is in itself a thing neither good nor bad, that its moral character is determined by its use or misuse, and that it may be so used as to be a stepping-stone towards spiritual progress and final salvation. The question of date turns mainly on the meaning that is to be attached to a phrase in the Homily itself: "As to the mystery of the Saviour, you may learn from my Exposition concerning First Principles and Theology."<sup>4</sup> In the Stromateis reference is made to this treatise or section as in contemplation, but it is doubtful whether it was ever carried out. If, as is maintained by Zahn,<sup>5</sup> the reference suggests a work already written, then the "Quis Dives" must have been written after the Stromateis; if, as is held by others,<sup>6</sup> it only refers

<sup>1</sup> All the chronological data are brought down to the death of Commodus. Str., i. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Τίς ὁ Σφζόμενος Πλούσιος. (Quis Dives Salvetur.)

<sup>3</sup> Mark x. 17-31; Matt. xix. 16-30; Luke xviii. 18-30.

<sup>4</sup> "Ὅπερ ἐν τῇ περὶ ἀρχῶν καὶ θεολογίας ἐξηγήσει μυστήριον τοῦ Σωτῆρος ὑπάρχει μαθεῖν. Q. D., p. 26.

<sup>5</sup> Zahn, *op. cit.*, p. 39. Barnard agrees with Zahn. See Q. D., p. 44, 'Cambridge Texts and Studies,' 1897.

<sup>6</sup> v. Arnim, de Faye, Harnack.

to a work contemplated, it may have been written before the Stromateis. There is nothing distinctive in its teaching in its bearing on the question of date, and it may be well with Krüger and Ehrhard<sup>1</sup> to hold that the date of composition cannot be definitely determined.<sup>2</sup>

In the only manuscript in which the Stromateis have been preserved, after the fragment of the Eighth Book are found two series of extracts. The first has the title, "Summaries from Theodotus and the so-called Anatolic School in the Times of Valentinus."<sup>3</sup> These contain quotations from a Gnostic writer, with comments by Clement, and it is often difficult to tell whether we are reading the commentary or the original. Even a scholar like Zahn, who made an exhaustive study of this, as of all other Clementine problems, in his 'Supplementum Clementinum,' published in 1884, altered his opinion in regard to the apportioning of the fragments to their separate sources in a further study of the subject, published in 1892.<sup>4</sup> In view of this difficulty of severing the wheat from the tares, in an exposition of the teaching of Clement, they must be used with reserve, and are of no value as an independent source. They can only be used with confidence when they find complete or partial confirmation in the undoubted writings. Even when there is little doubt that the words are those of Clement, we have to be on our guard, for the simple reason that they are excerpts, and that we are ignorant of the context as well

<sup>1</sup> Krüger, 'Early Christian Literature,' p. 170; Ehrhard, 'Die altchristliche Litteratur,' p. 303.

<sup>2</sup> The main points in the Homily are noted in Lecture V.

<sup>3</sup> Ἐκ τῶν Θεοδοῦτου καὶ τῆς ἀνατολικῆς καλουμένης διδασκαλίας κατὰ τοὺς οὐαλεντίνου χρόνους Ἐπιτομαί.

<sup>4</sup> Clem. Supp., p. 126. Zahn assigned the Fragments to Clement thus: Sections 8-15 with certainty; 18-20, 27, 66-74, 81-86, with more or less definiteness; perhaps also 4, 5. In his 'Geschichte d. ntl. K.,' vol. ii. pp. 961-964, he regards as Clementine 4, 5, some sentences in 7, 8-15, 17<sup>b</sup>-20, 27; and regards the whole sections 66-86 as Valentinian.

as of the methods and grounds on which the epitomist proceeded.

The second series of Extracts bears the title "Selections from the Prophets."<sup>1</sup> The contents are varied in character, the most connected and complete section being a characteristic exposition of the nineteenth psalm. They were probably taken from the same source as the "Excerpts from Theodotus." But as to what that source was there is divergence of opinion. Westcott thinks that there "can be no reasonable doubt" that they were taken from the 'Hypotyposes.'<sup>2</sup> Zahn holds that, like the extant fragment, they were taken from the Eighth Book of the Stromateis.<sup>3</sup> This hypothesis was accepted by Harnack in the first volume of his 'History of Early Christian Literature,' published in 1893, but rejected as "highly improbable" in a later volume of the same work.<sup>4</sup> By v. Arnim the suggestion was made that both series of extracts were made by Clement from Gnostic writings, with comments added by himself, as preparatory sketches for a further treatise.<sup>5</sup> This conflict and fluctuation of opinion emphasise the lesson already noted as to the limitation to be exercised in the use of materials of such uncertain origin.

Of the lost writings of Clement, the most important is the 'Hypotyposes' or 'Outlines.' From the statements of Eusebius and Photius, as well as from the fragments that survive, it would seem that it contained a running commentary, with notes as to date and authorship, on the

<sup>1</sup> Ἐκ τῶν προφητῶν Ἐκλογαί.

<sup>2</sup> D. C. B., vol. i. p. 564.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 117-129.

<sup>4</sup> 'Geschichte der altchristlichen Litteratur,' vol. i. p. 181. So Preuschen, p. 315. In vol. ii. p. 18 (1904), he expresses approval of the hypothesis of v. Arnim: "Ich weiss nichts gegen sie einzuwenden" (p. 18, n. 3).

<sup>5</sup> 'De Octavo Clementis Stromateorum Libro,' 1894. Cf. Ehrhard, *op. cit.*, p. 311.

books of Scripture. Eusebius and Photius give conflicting statements as to its extent. Eusebius says that it embraced abridged explanations of all the Canonical Scripture, not passing by the disputed books—that is, Jude and the rest of the Catholic Epistles, and Barnabas, and the so-called Apocalypse of Peter.<sup>1</sup> Photius says that the 'Outlines' contained a brief explanation and interpretation of some passages of the Old and the New Scripture. After condemning the impious blasphemies with which, according to him, it abounded, he says that the whole aim was to give interpretations, as it were, of Genesis, Exodus, the Psalms, the Epistles of the divine Paul, the Catholic Epistles, and Ecclesiastes.<sup>2</sup> If the statement of Eusebius be accurate, Photius must have had an imperfect copy before him, as in his sweeping condemnation of the errors of Clement he would hardly have refrained from adding Clement's use of Apocryphal writings. A fragment of the section of the 'Outlines' dealing with the First Epistle of Peter, the Epistle of Jude, the First and Second Epistles of John, survives in a Latin version made by Cassiodorus, or at his instance.<sup>3</sup> Cassiodorus so far supports the statement of Photius as to its heretical contents, for he says that Clement spoke some things with rashness, and that in translating them into Latin he had purged the teaching from the offending matters.<sup>4</sup> The more weighty of the heresies charged against Clement—those touching the Person and nature of Christ—will be noted afterwards.<sup>5</sup> Here I only touch on the question of his heterodoxy in its bearing on the date of the work.

<sup>1</sup> Eus., vi. 14: . . . πάσης τῆς ἐνδιαθήκου γραφῆς ἐπιτετμημένας πεποιήται διηγήσεις, μηδὲ τὰς ἀντιλεγόμενας παρελθάν. . . .

<sup>2</sup> Phot., cod. 109: ὁ δὲ ὅλος σκοπὸς ὥσανεὶ ἐρμηνεῖαι τυγχάνουσι τῆς Γενέσεως, τῆς Ἐξόδου, τῶν Ψαλμῶν, τοῦ θείου Παύλου τῶν ἐπιστολῶν καὶ τῶν καθολικῶν καὶ τοῦ Ἐκκλησιαστοῦ.

<sup>3</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. pp. 203-215. <sup>4</sup> Quoted by Zahn, p. 134. <sup>5</sup> See Lecture IV.



According to Zahn, the 'Hypotyposes' was written after his flight from Alexandria, and is to be regarded as the latest of his important writings.<sup>1</sup> The same view is taken by Westcott and Chapman.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, v. Arnim,<sup>3</sup> de Faye,<sup>4</sup> and Harnack<sup>5</sup> criticise adversely this hypothesis, mainly on the ground that the incomplete form of the Stromateis shows that it was his latest work. On the assumption that the 'Outlines' were more heterodox in character than the Stromateis, Harnack makes the interesting suggestion that it is not probable that Clement grew more heterodox in course of time, and that, especially in view of the manner in which docetic and gnostic elements were gradually crushed out of the Church, it is not probable that Clement, who was a presbyter, should have so developed. The latter consideration is, perhaps, more weighty than the former. For, apart from the fact that in the sphere of doctrine and criticism—as in other spheres—a development from a more conservative to a more radical standpoint is not unknown, in the case of Clement, who was apt to be influenced by his temporary aim and mood, an argument on *a priori* grounds is precarious. But the latter consideration is weighty. It is altogether inconsistent with the esteem in which he was held by Alexander, and with the services which he rendered to the Church in his later years, to suppose that there was an increased divergence from the ecclesiastical norm, and not a progressive movement towards it. Harnack regards it as overwhelmingly probable that it was written considerably earlier than the earliest portion of the Stromateis.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 176.      <sup>2</sup> Rev. Bened., vol. xxi. p. 369. Cf. Mayor, *op. cit.*, p. xix.

<sup>3</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 14, 15.

<sup>4</sup> Clément d'Alexandrie, 1898, pp. 110, 111.

<sup>5</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 19, 20.

<sup>6</sup> Chapman regards the 'Muratorian Fragment' as taken from the 'Hypotyposes,' and supports the date of Zahn. He finds in the criticism passed there



The writings of Clement are characterised by an appearance of enormous and varied erudition. They were so regarded by Jerome, Eusebius, Cyril of Alexandria, and Theodoret in the early centuries.<sup>1</sup> They were so regarded by his editors and historians generally till a recent date. From this point of view one of his early editors speaks of him as a Christian Plutarch or Athenæus, and says that he quotes more than three hundred authors of whom otherwise we know not the names, and adds that for this reason he is a treasure-house not only for theologians but for grammarians, historians, and philosophers, even for jurists and physicians.<sup>2</sup> Within recent years, however, from a minute study of the sources, many endeavours have been made to reduce this erudition to very meagre dimensions. His show of learning, it is averred, is an illusion, if not a fraud. He belongs to the mosaic type of writers, and understands thoroughly how to simulate a profound learning while concealing the very trivial handbooks from which it is really derived.<sup>3</sup> He has borrowed many sections from Aristotle.<sup>4</sup> He has transcribed whole sections from Musonius, and though he has inserted words and phrases to give them a Christian

on the 'Pastor' of Hermas and the denial of its canonicity a retractation of the earlier view implied in the Stromateis.

The 'Hypotyposes' contained eight books. The contents, as suggested by Zahn, were as follows: I.-III., Genesis, Exodus, Psalms, Ecclesiastes (?), (Gospels); IV., (Romans), 1 and 2 Corinthians; V., Hebrews (?), Galatians, (1 and 2 Thessalonians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians); VI., (Gospels, see I.-III.); VII., James (?), 1 Peter, Jude, i., ii. (iii.), John, 1 and 2 Timothy, (Titus, Philemon); VIII., Barnabas (?), 2 Peter (?), Apocalypse of Peter (?), (Apocalypse of John). There is no clear evidence that the works in brackets were commented on in the 'Hypotyposes.' (Zahn, *op. cit.*, p. 156.)

<sup>1</sup> See "Testimonia Veterum" in Dindorf, vol. i. pp. lv-lxiv; Harnack, *op. cit.*, vol. i. p. 296.

<sup>2</sup> Sylburg in Potter, vol. ii. p. 1038.      <sup>3</sup> Wilamowitz, *Eur. Her.*, vol. i. p. 171.

<sup>4</sup> Bernays, 'zu Aristoteles et Clemens, Symbola. Philol. . . .,' 1864, vol. i. p. 301 *et seq.*

colouring, by the elimination of the Christian interpolations we can reproduce the original text.<sup>1</sup> Much in his writings — even that dealing with the literature and antiquities of Greece — is taken from Aristobulus<sup>2</sup> or from the Universal History of Favorinus.<sup>3</sup> He is indebted to Philo not only for his theory of Scripture but for the application of it to details, and often gives no indication of his indebtedness.<sup>4</sup> There are clear reminiscences of Plutarch.<sup>5</sup> His knowledge, especially of the later Greek thinkers, has been derived in part, if not wholly, from the works of the “doxographers,” whose compilations formed a store-house for many inquirers.<sup>6</sup> Now, that there is a large measure of truth in these statements has been proved beyond the possibility of doubt. His indebtedness to Musonius, or to some one dependent on Musonius, has been proved to a demonstration. The same may be said of his obligations to Philo. The sources of many of the sections that seem most erudite can be traced with confidence. But, from such admitted facts, an entirely erroneous conception of the genius, even of the knowledge, of Clement may be drawn. Even if it were true to the letter, if Clement were only a piecer together of the phrases and thoughts of others, he would be none the less important as a witness

<sup>1</sup> Wendland, ‘*Quæstiones Musonianæ*,’ p. 61. Cf. C. P. Parker, ‘*Harvard Studies*,’ vol. xii., 1901. The editor of the ‘*Reliquiæ Musonii*’ (O. Hense), 1895, attaches little value to this method of reconstructing the text of Musonius.

<sup>2</sup> Scheck, ‘*De Fontibus Cl. Al.*,’ 1889.

<sup>3</sup> Gabriëlsen, ‘*Über die quelle des Cl. Al.*,’ 1906, 1909. In vol. ii. pp. 441-482 he replies to his critics.

<sup>4</sup> Siegfried, ‘*Philo von Alexandria . . .*,’ p. 343; Wendland, *Hermes*, vol. xxxi. p. 435; Heinisch, ‘*Die Einfluss Philos auf die älteste christliche Exegese*,’ 1908.

<sup>5</sup> A mistake similar to that of Plutarch in a quotation from Heraclitus shows that Clement “had read his Plutarch” (Burnet, ‘*Early Greek Philosophy*,’ p. 139).

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Diels, ‘*Doxographi Gr.*,’ p. 129, &c.

to the development of Christian thought; for in that case he would represent the detailed views of a previous generation or generations, and his appropriation of ideas from without would be an indication of the assimilative force of Christianity. But a consideration of what he certainly did know tends to indicate that we must be on our guard against an exaggerated conclusion.<sup>1</sup> It is certain that he knew the Septuagint and the New Testament with astonishing width and accuracy. With regard to Philo, it is probable that the Philonic theory and methods of exegesis had become the common property of the Alexandrian School; and in the case of the Old Testament, the acceptance of the method involved the acceptance of much traditional exposition—for it was probably the results that in his eyes justified the method; at any rate, the two were indissolubly related. One thing is certain: the inexhaustible fertility with which he can suggest possible interpretations of passages in the New Testament shows conclusively that when he borrowed, it was not from intellectual or imaginative poverty. With regard to his knowledge of Greek philosophy one general consideration may be adduced. Clement attached great value to erudition as a charm to win Greek adherents to Christianity. Would a mere show or parade of learning, a use of a learned cyclopædia, have served his purpose, or the use of writings to which scholar and teacher alike had ready access? But, waiving that, it is certain that he had a first-hand knowledge of the works of Plato. This is proved not only by his detailed references to passages in various treatises, even by his erroneous references, paradoxical though it may seem, but by suggestions and reminiscences, constantly recurring, of Platonic metaphors, allusions, and individual words. “Such remin-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Harnack, *op. cit.*, vol. ii, p. 16.

iscences are characteristic rather of the lover of Plato, who has an intimate knowledge of his favourite author, than the skimmer of florilegia.”<sup>1</sup> His knowledge of Homer, Hesiod, and the great Greek dramatists could only have come from first-hand. It is hard to conceive of any hand-books which could have contained so many and so varied quotations as are adduced. But his free use of other materials is not thereby explained. No doubt it was the fashion of his age not to be rigorous in regard to the ownership of intellectual toil. As Clement borrowed from his predecessors, so he in turn formed a quarry for his successors.<sup>2</sup> But by his own criticism Clement has made it difficult to develop for him this line of defence or explanation. For a considerable section of his work is occupied with endeavouring to prove that the Greeks plagiarised wholesale from the Old Testament, and he even lays it down as a thesis that this was a universal and ingrained trait of Greek writers; and it is hardly consistent with the transparent sincerity that breaks through every page of his writings to suppose that his attack on plagiarism was itself a conscious plagiarism. Something may be due to the literary fashion of the age, something may be due to the unconscious reproduction of a tenacious memory,<sup>3</sup> something to his method of literary work, something to the hypothesis of theft, which might enable him to regard the abstraction of the writing of others as a mere restoration of stolen materials; but when all allowance has been made, there remains a psychological and ethical problem, which must be explained in a way consistent with the

<sup>1</sup> F. S. Clark, ‘American Philological Association,’ 1902, pp. xiii, xiv. See the notes in Stählin *passim*.

<sup>2</sup> Röhricht, ‘De Clemente Alex. Arnobii . . . Auctore,’ 1893.

<sup>3</sup> *E.g.*, he often quotes passages of Scripture with perfect accuracy, even when he reverses the order of the verses.

moral elevation of the man and the far-reaching conceptions of the writer. For the greatness and originality and richness of his central thoughts disprove the idea that he had been "at a great feast of languages and stolen the scraps," that he was a mere sewer together of shreds and patches. For if everything were eliminated that he can be proved to have borrowed, it might reduce to small compass his independent knowledge of some departments of Greek literature, but it would otherwise make little difference to his place in the history of Christian thought. After all, the method which he adopted was less important than his aim; the passages which he quoted or appropriated were not taken for the mere sake of quotation, but in order to give weight to his general design.

The problem which Clement raised and endeavoured to solve in his writings has been characterised by Overbeck<sup>1</sup> in a masterly study as perhaps the most daring literary undertaking in the history of the Church. Clement was well aware of the novelty of the task which he had undertaken, and of the suspicion which it was certain to create, apart altogether from the method of solution which he adopted. That he found it necessary to defend the composition of books at all, is a significant fact.<sup>2</sup> He makes no such apology in the *Protrepticus* or in the *Pædagogus*; and it could hardly be the reception of these works that inspired his defence. No one could take exception to the former work, for it was a powerful attack upon heathen polytheism; few could take exception to the practical ethics of the *Pædagogus*, at least on principle. Had he restricted himself to a refutation of the teaching of the heretics, his Christian contemporaries would have thanked him. But, without any external stimulus, to formulate and co-ordinate Christian truths in relation to each other as well as in

<sup>1</sup> *Hist. Zeitschrift N. F.*, vol. xii. (1882), pp. 417-472.

<sup>2</sup> *Str.*, i. 1.



relation to philosophy seemed to many a superfluous as well as a dangerous task, an imperilling of the unique dignity and claims of the Christian faith by bringing it into the light of common day. To substitute a Christian gnosis for a heretical gnosis might seem to some an indirect recognition of a movement with which there could be no compromise: the transformation of a heretical watchword, which had become an orthodox byword, into a designation for the highest Christian ideal, might seem a superfluous and confusing concession to the spirit of the age. In carrying out his task he does not lose sight of the controversies within the Church, but his aim in dealing with them is not mainly polemical, but rather to bring out the truth of which the controverted views were an exaggeration or a caricature. It is in accordance with his early training, as well with his desire to come into *rapprochement* with Greek converts, that, like Justin Martyr, his ruling thought is not that of a Christian theology but of a Christian philosophy. But it is only a philosophy in the sense of being a philosophy of life. The originality of Clement does not lie in the details or illustrations which he unhesitatingly borrowed, but in the formulating of the unifying conception which bound the scattered elements together, and in the width of outlook which enabled him to co-ordinate all the materials. That unifying principle he found in the doctrine of the Word by whom the universe was brought into order, whose inspiration was the key to a true philosophy of history, in whose Incarnation men could see the ideal of humanity, and who, by becoming incarnate, had not only revealed the close relation of the divine and the human, but had made possible the deifying of all humanity. The peculiar distinction of Clement, in a word, is not that he gave a final solution of the problem which he raised, but his clear recognition of the fact that there was a problem



to be solved, that in that place and at that stage in the development of Christianity it was imperative for the Church to realise the relation in which it stood to the intellectual and moral forces that had hitherto been the most powerful factors in moulding the intellectual life of nations and individuals, if it were to escape the certain danger of being stranded or submerged. It was, indeed, a proceeding not without danger; but not to recognise the necessity of it would have been a still greater danger; for it would have extinguished Christianity in Alexandria, or reduced it to a mere official ritual, neither influencing its environment nor being influenced by it, or would have left the gnostic misrepresentation of Christianity in undisputed possession of the field. Clement was the first to see the necessity of formulating a Christian theory of the universe, a Christian philosophy of history, a Christian code of ethics. It was, of course, inevitable that his attempt should be marred by the defects of his age; that he accepted the current critical theories and literary pre-suppositions of his time without scrutiny, and was satisfied with seeking only to illustrate them; that he was fettered both in the exposition of principles and details by the consciousness of discouragement, if not of opposition, in his enterprise; that from a scientific point of view his work was hampered by the nature of the instruments with which he had to work; that, generally, it bears the stamp of the pioneer who is groping in an untried and unexplored province. His principles are not always co-ordinated, but sometimes lie side by side without any attempt to bring them into harmony with one another, or even without any apparent consciousness of the necessity of such co-ordination. The conception was greater than the execution; "the artist fell short of the thinker;"<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. de Faye, p. 113.

but the greatness of the conception abides. Nothing can take from Clement the glory of having been the first Christian teacher to find a place in his system of thought for all forms of truth; of bringing Christianity into the line of historical development without surrendering its absolute uniqueness; of laying down principles which, when stripped of their temporary cerements, are not dead, but as vital to a true Christian philosophy and apologetic to-day as they were in the closing years of the second century. He neither ignored the rights of the past nor the claims of the future, but sought to assign to each its due place and proportion. "Large portions of his field of thought," says Hort, "remained for long ages unworked, or even remain unworked still. But what he at once humbly and bravely attempted under great disadvantages at the beginning of the third century will have to be attempted afresh with the added experience and knowledge of seventeen centuries more, if the Christian faith is to hold its ground among men; and when the attempt is made, not a few of his thoughts and words will shine out with new force, full of light for dealing with new problems."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ante-Nicene Lectures, pp. 90, 91.

## LECTURE II.

THE RELATION OF CHRISTIANITY TO HELLENIC CULTURE  
AND PHILOSOPHY.

EVERY advance of the kingdom of God, every victory of the Gospel, gave rise to new problems. When men of philosophic culture became adherents of the Christian faith, the Church had to decide what was to be its general attitude towards that new force with which it had hitherto for the most part been in conflict. All men of culture, Christian and non-Christian alike, found in philosophy a common ground. The immediate effect of the admission of the new ally was such as to create suspicion. It sought to be a master, not a servant, in the house of God, to assimilate Christianity to itself rather than to assimilate itself to Christianity, and thus created heresies that threatened to break up the unity of the Church. The natural consequence was that widely antagonistic views were adopted with regard to the relation of the Church to philosophic culture generally. The one view is represented by Tatian and Tertullian; the other by Justin Martyr and Clement. Tatian scoffs at Hellenic culture, recounts with almost savage glee the fables as to the life and death of the Greek philosophers, and abjures altogether any contact with the wisdom of the Greeks. "We have," he says, "bidden farewell to your wisdom."<sup>1</sup> In like manner Tertullian

<sup>1</sup> *Orat. ad Græc.*, c. I.

branded philosophy generally as the fountain of all heresies, and maintained that the Church had nothing to do with it save to disown all intercourse with it.<sup>1</sup> The influence which it had exercised on the Christian faith made this a natural attitude; and it required men of no ordinary courage and insight to rise above the temptation to attack or belittle a force with associations so sinister. Such were Justin and Clement. Justin, whose intellectual and spiritual life to a certain extent had proceeded on parallel lines to that of Clement, takes up substantially the same attitude as he did. In becoming a Christian, he did not cease to be a philosopher, for he regarded Christianity as the only true and useful philosophy. Like Clement, he supports the hypothesis of theft as a solution of the analogies between Christianity and the philosophy of the Greeks, reads Christian teaching into Plato, and claims all that was akin to Christianity in Greek philosophy as his own.<sup>2</sup> At the same time that Tertullian in Carthage was abjuring all contact with philosophy, Clement in Alexandria was exhibiting and defending Greek philosophy as virtually on a level with Judaism as a preliminary discipline for Christianity. It was not to be regarded merely as an unconscious negative preparation for the Gospel, testifying by its very failure to the necessity of something higher than itself; it had played a positive part, a divinely appointed part, in the history of humanity. What the Law of Moses was to the Jew, philosophy was to the Greek. It was a tutor to the Greeks, just as the law was to the Hebrews.<sup>3</sup> It was as a covenant peculiar to them, like a stepping-stone to the philosophy which is according to Christ.<sup>4</sup> As God gave prophets to

<sup>1</sup> Præsc. adv. Hæret., c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> ii. Apol., 13. ὅσα οὖν παρὰ πᾶσι καλῶς εἴρηται ἡμῶν τῶν χριστιανῶν ἐστι.

<sup>3</sup> Str., i. 5<sup>28</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>67</sup>. τήν δὲ φιλοσοφίαν καὶ μᾶλλον Ἑλληνισιν, οἷον διαθήκην οἰκείαν αὐτοῖς.

the Jews, so He raised up men of the highest repute among the Greeks, their own prophets in their own tongue, so far as they were able to receive the beneficence of God, and thus marked them off from the great mass of men.<sup>1</sup> The Mosaic Law and Greek philosophy alike had each its own place in the divine economy; each came like the Gospel in its own God-appointed time; each was designed to prepare men for the reception of the truth of Christ.<sup>2</sup>

Clement assigned this lofty function to philosophy on a variety of grounds. He based it on statements in Scripture, on the unity of truth, on the universality of inspiration, on the nature of philosophy itself, above all, on the nature of God, whose Providence was not to be regarded as local or national. According to the Scriptures, men among the Gentiles are sons in God's sight.<sup>3</sup> The statement of the Psalmist that "God had not dealt so with any nation" as with Israel, implies that though God's relation to the Gentiles was not so intimate as that which He occupied to the Jews, He had a certain relation.<sup>4</sup> The quaintness of the exegesis is at least convincing proof of the strength of his conviction on the matter. When David speaks of the Gentiles "forgetting God," he implies a former remembrance, and that there was a dim knowledge of God among the Gentiles.<sup>5</sup> The five barley loaves in the miracle are a figure of the law; the two fishes are a figure of the Greek philosophy which was begotten and carried about in the Gentile waves. The quotation from Aratus by St Paul shows that he approved of what was well said among the Greeks.<sup>6</sup> The way of truth is one, but into it as into an ever-flowing river various streams flow, some from this side, some from

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 5<sup>42</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 5<sup>28</sup>; vi. 6<sup>47</sup>; vi. 13<sup>106</sup>; vi. 17<sup>159</sup>; vii. 2<sup>11</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>14</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vi. 8<sup>63</sup>; Psa. 147. 20.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>64</sup>; Psa. 9. 17.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 19<sup>91</sup>.



that.<sup>1</sup> The law of nature and the law of the divine education are from God, and one.<sup>2</sup> Injunctions of righteousness pronounced by those who pursue the wisdom of the world are not to be despised. Sayings such as that of Hesiod were spoken by the God of all, even though they were spoken by way of conjecture, not by way of apprehension.<sup>3</sup> All apprehension of God is due to His inspiration.<sup>4</sup> Clement starts with the assumption, based on his own experience, that philosophy in itself was a good thing. The source from which it drew its inspiration was sufficiently proved by its results; it made men virtuous, and was accorded only to the best among the Greeks.<sup>5</sup> To suppose that so powerful a factor in thought and life had come into the world without a direct divine impulse was to put a limit and a dishonour on the omniscience, the beneficence, and the omnipotence of God. It is really a clear image of truth, a divine gift to the Greeks.<sup>6</sup> By a different process of advancement, He led both Greek and barbarian to the perfection which is through faith.<sup>7</sup> If the very hairs of our head are numbered, shall philosophy not be taken into account?<sup>8</sup> If philosophy were discovered by the Greeks by the mere exercise of human understanding, yet, according to the Scriptures, understanding is from God.<sup>9</sup> Many things the fruit of human reasoning derived from Him their primal spark.<sup>10</sup> He is even the source of every artistic device.<sup>11</sup> If, according to Solomon, it was wisdom as artificer that framed the ship, were it not irrational to regard philosophy as inferior to shipbuilding?<sup>12</sup> To deny that philosophy came from God was to run the risk of saying that it was impossible for Him to know all things

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 5<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Prot., vi. 71.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>11</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., vi. 17<sup>157</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 29<sup>182</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., vi. 17<sup>159</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 17<sup>153</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., i. 4<sup>25</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 29<sup>181</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 2<sup>20</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., vi. 11<sup>93, 94</sup>.

individually, and that He is not the cause of all good things.<sup>1</sup> To ascribe philosophy to the devil was to forget that evil had an evil nature, and never could be the source of anything good; nay, it was virtually to make the devil more beneficent than the Providence of God.<sup>2</sup> If the devil be "transformed into an angel of light," that can only be when he prophesies that which is true.<sup>3</sup> Even if the devil had stolen it, the gift was not an injurious one, and therefore not such as to call forth the intervention of God.<sup>4</sup> But what necessity, it might be objected, was there for assigning the introduction of philosophy to any divine intervention? Why not regard it simply as the fruit of human reasoning? Even so, it was from God, the source of reason. Nothing could have existed at all unless God had so willed. That philosophy did exist, shows that He willed it to exist, and that it existed for the sake of those who would not have abstained from evil save by its means. Did the thinkers of Greece utter some truth by accident? It was the accident due to the administration of God. Did they do so by mere coincidence? The coincidence had been divinely foreseen. Was it by a so-called natural conception? God, and not man, was the creator of that natural conception.<sup>5</sup>

To what philosophy or philosopher did Clement specially assign this work of preparation for Christianity? What did he mean by the word itself? "By philosophy," he says, "I do not mean the Stoic, nor the Platonic, nor the Epicurean, nor the Aristotelian, but whatsoever things have been spoken in each of these sects well, giving thorough instruction in righteousness along with a knowledge inspired by piety, all this eclectic matter I call philosophy. But whatsoever things of human reasonings they have appropriated and put

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 17 <sup>186</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 17 <sup>189</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 8 <sup>86</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 17 <sup>83</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 19 <sup>94</sup>.

a false stamp on, that I would never call divine.”<sup>1</sup> Again, “By philosophy we do not propose to discuss that way of life which obtains in each sect, but that which is really philosophy, strictly technical wisdom,<sup>2</sup>—which furnishes experience of the things that pertain to life. And we say that wisdom is the steadfast knowledge of things divine and human, an apprehension firm and unalterable, embracing the things which are, and the things which have been, and the things which shall be. . . . Philosophy, then, would be the uncontroverted dogmas in each of the sects—philosophical sects, I mean—gathered into one selection, and accompanied by a way of life correspondent.”<sup>3</sup> Philosophy, then, is the apprehension of truth,—in particular, the truth about God, and the attainment of a way of life correspondent to the truth apprehended. Its goal is rectitude of reason and purity of life.<sup>4</sup> This view of philosophy explains, on the one hand, his admiration for Plato,<sup>5</sup> and on the other, his detestation both of the theology and the moral teaching of Epicurus. He explains away the teaching of Plato in the Republic as to the community of women, and holds that Marcion found support for his heresies only by a misuse of the Platonic principles at once thankless and ignorant.<sup>6</sup> He is in sympathy with all that is best in Stoicism, and has transferred to his own way of thinking many of its technical terms and formulas; but he is so far from being blind to its defects that he describes its conception of the Divinity pervading all matter as a clumsy degradation of philosophy.<sup>7</sup> He can be fair even to Epicureanism. While he regards

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 7<sup>37</sup>. φιλοσοφίαν δὲ οὐ τὴν Στωικὴν λέγω οὐδὲ τὴν Πλατωνικὴν ἢ τὴν Ἐπικούρειον τε καὶ Ἀριστοτελικὴν, ἀλλ’ ὅσα εἴρηται παρ’ ἐκάστη τῶν αἱρέσεων τούτων καλῶς, δικαιοσύνην μετὰ εὐσεβοῦς ἐπιστήμης ἐκδιδάσκοντα, τοῦτο σύμπαν τὸ ἐκλεκτικὸν φιλοσοφίαν φημί.

<sup>2</sup> Stählin suspects a corruption in the text here.

<sup>3</sup> Str., vi. 7<sup>54</sup>, <sup>55</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>55</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 10<sup>66</sup>, &c.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iii. 2<sup>10</sup>; iii. 3<sup>21</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Prot., v. <sup>66</sup>; Str., i. 11<sup>51</sup>.

St Paul's condemnation of philosophy in the Epistle to the Colossians as a condemnation of the Epicureanism which abolishes Providence and deifies pleasure,<sup>1</sup> and compares it to tares sown in the Hellenic philosophy,<sup>2</sup> characterising its doctrines as doctrines of darkness,<sup>3</sup> he quotes with approval a letter of Epicurus himself,<sup>4</sup> and even does not hesitate to say, in harmony with his eclectic principles, that Metrodorus, Epicurean though he was, spoke some things under inspiration.<sup>5</sup> He lays down the sound principle that we are not to condemn what is said because of the speaker, but examine it to see whether it adheres to the truth.<sup>6</sup> An intellectual force which, in the judgment of Clement, had played so important a part as philosophy in the development of life and thought of the past, must still have a part assigned to it by God in the sphere of Christianity. In its past function was to be found the key to its present function. It purges the soul, and prepares it for the reception of the faith, on which foundation the truth builds up the edifice of knowledge.<sup>7</sup> It serves as a first or second stair to one going to the upper room, as grammar serves philosophy.<sup>8</sup> It is an intellectual gymnastic, necessary for the attainment of the highest degree of goodness.<sup>9</sup> As the husbandman waters the soil before casting in the seed, so he, as a teacher, waters, so to speak, the souls of his hearers with the discourses of the Greeks, that they may be fitted to receive the spiritual seed when it is cast down.<sup>10</sup> So far from dragging men away from the faith, philosophy provides a conjoint discipline which serves to demonstrate the truth of the faith.<sup>11</sup> It co-operates in discussions about the truth; it is a co-worker in the appre-

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 11<sup>50</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 8<sup>69</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>20</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>67</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>138</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 19<sup>99</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>144</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>66</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., vi. 11<sup>91</sup>; i. 3<sup>22</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., i. 2<sup>20</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., i. 1<sup>17</sup>.

hension of the truth.<sup>1</sup> With philosophy as a copestone, wisdom is unassailable by sophists.<sup>2</sup> By it we may buffet the heretical sects.<sup>3</sup> Hence in the Stromateis he does not hesitate to use what is best in philosophy and other preliminary discipline.<sup>4</sup> It is plain from many allusions in his writings that this sane and liberal attitude was received by many of his contemporaries with suspicion and antagonism. Some regarded philosophy as useless, some as a source of danger, some adduced the authority of Scripture against it.<sup>5</sup> He speaks of the chattering of some who, in their ignorance, were frightened at every noise, who said that we should restrict ourselves to things which were most essential and which contained the faith, and pass by things external and superfluous, which contributed nothing to the main end.<sup>6</sup> He alludes to the many who were frightened at the Hellenic philosophy like children at masks,<sup>7</sup> to some who in their conceit refused to touch philosophy or dialectics and insisted on bare faith alone,<sup>8</sup> who asked triumphantly what use there was in knowing the causes of the movements of the stars, or in meditating on the theories of geometry or other branches of learning, since such studies were of no service in the discharge of duty, and the Hellenic philosophy was only the fruit of human understanding, and was not taught by the truth?<sup>9</sup> Clement admits that there was a possibility of the faith of some being submerged by the perusal of Hellenic literature, unless the principles which he laid down were taken as a guide,<sup>10</sup> and even brings it as a charge against some that they preferred to remain ignorant lest, after giving their ears to Hellenic instruction, they might not be able to find their way back.<sup>11</sup> He denies the right of any one to condemn the philosophy of the Greeks who

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 11<sup>91</sup>; i. 20<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 17<sup>81</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib. vi. 11<sup>93</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 5<sup>28</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 1<sup>18</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>140</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 19<sup>95</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vi. 10<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., vi. 11<sup>89</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 1<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 9<sup>43</sup>.



knew nothing but the bare letter, and argues that we must philosophise even in order to decide that we should not; that even if philosophy were useless, it would be useful to demonstrate its own uselessness. He defends his procedure on the ground that the display of varied learning acts as an art of enchantment on scholars, and serves as a letter of commendation to the truth.<sup>1</sup> He claims to have in his method the support of the example and teaching of St Paul. It would appear that his opponents had adduced passages to the contrary.<sup>2</sup> In writing to Titus, St Paul had made a quotation from the Cretan Epimenides, and in the Epistle to the Corinthians he had quoted a line from some Greek poet,<sup>3</sup> and in that sense had become all things to all men. All things were God's—therefore, what belonged to the Greeks was ours; and the natural way to bring the Greeks to faith in the truth was, in the first place, to appeal to what was cognate, and to find a middle point of transition in their own intellectual possessions.<sup>4</sup> It was possible, no doubt, to live rightly in poverty; but it was also possible to do so in superfluity. Virtue was not unattainable without preliminary instruction, but it was attained more easily and quickly with it.<sup>5</sup> To insist on bare faith alone was, in contradiction to the teaching of the Lord, to expect at the very outset to take clusters of grapes without having taken any care of the vine. From every science, every branch of culture, something might be plucked that was helpful in making the truth unassailable. The study of ambiguous words and synonyms in the two Covenants was important. If the Lord by an ambiguous phrase eluded the devil at the temptation, could the devil be the author of philosophy and dialectic?<sup>6</sup> How can he be an “approved

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 2<sup>19</sup>, 20.

<sup>3</sup> Str., i. 14<sup>59</sup>; Tit. i. 12; 1 Cor. xv. 33.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Col. ii. 4, 8; 1 Cor. i. 19.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 3<sup>18</sup>; v. 4<sup>19</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 9<sup>48</sup>, 44.

money-changer," who is not able offhand to distinguish the pure coin from the spurious? <sup>1</sup> Do not the so-called orthodox apply themselves to good works not knowing what they do? <sup>2</sup> Clement had sympathy with the weak brother in ethical and practical matters, but not so much in intellectual matters; though only once does a touch of the arrogance of philosophical culture escape him. Irritated by the charge of dangerous methods that had obviously been brought against him, he breaks out: "But if this faith of theirs—for I cannot call it knowledge—be such that it can be dissolved by plausible speech, let it be by all means dissolved, and let them confess that they will not have the truth."<sup>3</sup> But this temporary outburst is altogether foreign to his usual mode of thought. In general he seeks rather to win adherents than to refute opponents.

Along with this lofty estimate of the function of philosophy Clement is inspired with a keen sense of the newness of Christianity, and the consequent limitations of philosophic culture. Christ is the "New Song" by which the Greek legends have been antiquated and fulfilled. Christians are a new people. So full is he of this idea of the newness of Christianity that he speaks of the manifestation of Christ as if it were a thing of yesterday.<sup>4</sup> The newness of humanity in Christ he finds revealed in unexpected phrases.<sup>5</sup> "I make things new," the Word says. "With a new eye, a new ear, a new heart, the disciples of the Lord speak, hear, and do in spiritual wise whatsoever things are seen and heard and apprehended through faith and understanding."<sup>6</sup> "In contradiction to the older people we are the new people, having learned the new blessings. To

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 10<sup>81</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 10<sup>81</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 5<sup>15</sup>. Cf. Zech. ix. 9.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 9<sup>45</sup>: οἱ ὀρθοδοξασταὶ καλούμενοι.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>20</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., ii. 4<sup>15</sup>.

us belongs the rich prime of our years, this youth which knows no age, in which we are always vigorous in thought, always young, and always gentle, and always new; for those who are partakers of the new Word should themselves be new. And that which partakes of eternity is wont to be assimilated to that which is incorruptible, so that the age of our boyhood may be named a spring-time of all our life, because old age never falls upon the truth in us and our way of life, which is saturated with the truth. For wisdom is ever-blooming, always the same and unchanging."<sup>1</sup> This conception of the newness of Christianity shows that the function of philosophy in the Christian economy is not absolute, but is to be restricted in a variety of ways. In no sense does Clement admit that Christianity depends on Greek philosophy. The teaching according to the Saviour is self-effective and in need of nothing; and Greek philosophy by coming over to its side does not add to the potency of the truth, but reduces to impotence the sophistical attacks against it. Though it were absent, no defect would take place in the absolute Word, nor would the truth be destroyed; just as the senses contribute to truth, but the intellect is the natural organ for knowing it.<sup>2</sup> Philosophy is a co-worker for the apprehension of the truth; but although a joint cause, it is not the efficient cause, as if apart from philosophy truth did not exist; for many without philosophy or any academic training, or even without knowledge of letters, have accepted the word about God through faith, instructed by self-working wisdom. Philosophy by itself is powerless to energise; it is only a cause when acting in unison with another.<sup>3</sup> Nor is it to be used indiscriminately. No time must be occupied with the discussion of useless and irrelevant matters, no heed paid to wrangling sophisms, or to the mere pursuit of the shadow of

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 5<sup>20</sup>.<sup>2</sup> *Str.*, i. 20<sup>99, 100</sup>.<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*

words.<sup>1</sup> All sophistical arts must be set aside, as making the worse appear the better reason.<sup>2</sup> Proficiency in philosophy and the curriculum of studies is not a principal but a secondary end, to be used incidentally. It is of the nature of an intellectual dessert, a relish not bread to the spirit.<sup>3</sup> It is not essential to the apprehension of truth by the individual. The Christian philosophy has no barriers save moral barriers at the entrance; it is open to the attainment of barbarian and Greek, slave and aged, child and woman.<sup>4</sup> If any of the Greeks, dispensing with the preliminary guidance of the Hellenic philosophy, proceeds straight to the true teaching, he outdistances others, though an unlettered man, by choosing the short cut to perfection—namely, that of salvation through faith.<sup>5</sup> So in his earliest writing he had held that for him who had come to the school of Christ, academic learning was a superfluity. "Since the Word has come to us from heaven, we need not go to the teaching of men in our search after learning, to Athens, or the rest of Greece, or Ionia. For if we have as our Teacher Him who filled the universe with His holy energies in creation, salvation, beneficence, legislation, prophecy, teaching, we have the Teacher from whom all instruction comes; and the whole world with Athens and Greece has come under the sway of the Word."<sup>6</sup> When St Paul describes Hellenic philosophy as "the rudiments of the world," he hints that it was essentially rudimentary, and that it was unworthy of the man who had attained to the height of the gnostic to run back to it.<sup>7</sup> Moreover, in respect of its origin, philosophy was inferior to Christianity; nay, all that was best in it was taken from the Hebrew Scriptures.<sup>8</sup> Before the advent of Christianity, Greek philosophers took fragments of truth

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 10<sup>82</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 8<sup>39</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 20<sup>100</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 8<sup>58</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>11</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Prot., xi. 11<sup>2</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Str., vi. 8<sup>62</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 17<sup>87</sup>; i. 20<sup>100</sup>.

from the Hebrew prophets, but not with the insight of knowledge, and appropriated them, falsifying some things and ignorantly explaining others in over-subtlety.<sup>1</sup> Clement endeavours to demonstrate that what he calls the philosophy according to the Hebrews—that is, the religious and moral conceptions in the books of Scripture, along with philosophic ideas read into the Pentateuch by allegorical exegesis—is the most ancient of all forms of wisdom;<sup>2</sup> that Moses flourished long before the date at which, according to Greek mythology, the race of men had sprung into being;<sup>3</sup> that philosophy and other arts flourished among the barbarians long before they appeared among the Greeks.<sup>4</sup> He finds in the higher aspects of the legislation of Numa a reflection of the teaching of Moses;<sup>5</sup> in the cosmogony of Homer, as set forth in the shield of Vulcan, an imitation of the Mosaic cosmogony, even in minute details;<sup>6</sup> thinks that, by a happy divination, Homer seems to speak of the Father and the Son;<sup>7</sup> and that Euripides unconsciously refers to the Saviour Himself.<sup>8</sup> Some of the distinctive tenets of the Stoics<sup>9</sup>—in some cases based on misinterpretations of passages in Scripture,—the esoteric principles of the Pythagoreans expressed in symbol and proverb,<sup>10</sup> the doctrines of the Peripatetic philosophy generally and even some minute points in it,<sup>11</sup> all the ethical commonplaces of the Greeks, come from the same source.<sup>12</sup> From the Hebrew Scriptures Greek generals, like Miltiades, derived their military stratagem;<sup>13</sup> Hellenic legends are based on the facts of Scripture;<sup>14</sup> the marvels of Greek mythology are imitations of the marvels recorded in Scripture.<sup>15</sup> In particular, the Greeks imitated the symbolic and enigmatic

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 17<sup>87</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 21<sup>101</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 21<sup>106</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 16<sup>74</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 15<sup>71</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>101</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>116</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 11<sup>70</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>97</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., v. 5<sup>80</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>90</sup>.<sup>12</sup> Ib., ii. 18<sup>78</sup>.<sup>13</sup> Ib., i. 24<sup>162</sup>.<sup>14</sup> Ib., vi. 3<sup>28</sup>.<sup>15</sup> Ib., i. 24<sup>170</sup>.



part of the barbarian philosophy, as that which was most essential to the knowledge of the truth.<sup>1</sup> The Hellenic philosophy is like the torch which men kindle, stealing the light artfully from the sun.<sup>2</sup> The influence of the Holy Scriptures is particularly conspicuous in Plato.<sup>3</sup> Clement quotes many analogies between Plato and the Scriptures—though in some cases the resemblance may only have been a coincidence, the happy conjecture of a great nature,<sup>4</sup>—maintains that Plato himself acknowledged his dependence,<sup>5</sup> that his doctrine of creation was taken from Moses,<sup>6</sup> that he exhibits the life of a Christian in the 'Theætetus,'<sup>7</sup> that he seems to have divined the Lord's day,<sup>8</sup> that he had a perception of the Holy Trinity,<sup>9</sup> that he all but prophesied the economy of salvation.<sup>10</sup> From a reference to diverse interpretations of a passage in the 'Republic,' it would seem that Christian exegesis had already been applied by several to Plato.<sup>11</sup> He quotes with approval the saying of Numenius the Pythagorean, "What is Plato but Moses atticising?"<sup>12</sup> and he himself apostrophises Plato thus: "Whence, O Plato, is that hint of thine of the truth? I know thy teachers, even if thou wouldst conceal them. For your laws that are consistent with truth, and your opinions concerning God, you are indebted to the Hebrews."<sup>13</sup> Clement speaks in wavering terms about the agency by which the Hebrew teaching came to the knowledge of the thinkers and poets of Greece. Sometimes it is represented as a case of pure theft; in one case he attributes it to the fallen angels, who revealed the secrets to the women after whom they lusted, instead of reserving the knowledge to the advent of Christ.<sup>14</sup> Elsewhere, in accordance with later Jewish thought, as

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 1<sup>1</sup>, 2.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 19<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>108</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., i. 22<sup>150</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 5<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 15<sup>69</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>106</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>98</sup>; Rep., iii. 415 A.

<sup>13</sup> Prot., vi. 70.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 1<sup>10</sup>; i. 25<sup>165</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>92</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>103</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Str., i. 17<sup>81</sup>; v. 1<sup>10</sup>.

based on a passage in Deuteronomy, he ascribes it to the inferior angels to whom the nations were assigned.<sup>1</sup> In confirmation of his theory of theft, he adduces the alleged fact that the Greek poets, philosophers, and historians stole from one another, and argues that those who stole from one another would hardly refrain from touching what belonged to Christians.<sup>2</sup> Of this hypothesis, which seems to have been started by Aristobulus, an Alexandrian Jew, in the third century before Christ in all probability from apologetic motives,<sup>3</sup> maintained by Tatian, Justin, and Theophilus, exhibited by Clement with great ingenuity and wealth of illustration, repeated by Eusebius in the fourth century, almost in the matter and form of Clement, and supported here and there by individual writers in subsequent ages, any discussion is superfluous, for it is entirely destitute of historical and literary foundation. From the elaborate treatment of it by Clement, it is plain that many before his time must have been at work in the search after analogies between the Scriptures and the literature of Greece; and it was probably part of the traditional apologetic and exegesis of the Alexandrian School. One is tempted for a moment to suppose that Clement's defence of it was a mere *tour de force*, or that it was a concession to his opponents. But on the latter supposition it would have been futile; for why should they concern themselves about what had been stolen when they had the original treasury? It was not at all necessary to his argument, but rather out of harmony with his higher view of the relation between the Christian faith and Hellenic philosophy; yet it occurs so frequently in an incidental way, and is, moreover, developed so elaborately, that there can be no doubt of his acceptance of it. From a passage

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 2<sup>6</sup>; Deut. xxxii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 2<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> For a criticism of some modern views regarding Aristobulus, see Schürer, 'Geschichte des Jüdischen Volkes,' vol. iii.<sup>3</sup> p. 388.

quoted by him, it would appear that the idea was held by heterodox and orthodox alike.<sup>1</sup> The only original contribution by Clement to it is that though the truth was stolen, it was none the less true, a real possession however acquired.<sup>2</sup> He did not invent the hypothesis, but he found in it a weapon at once to disarm the opposition of the narrower section in the Church, and a means of constructing a bridge between Greek thought and Christian truth. Apart from the fantastic theories noted above, he makes no attempt to show that direct historical contact between the Hebrew Scriptures and Greek thought can be demonstrated, or in what way the transition of analogous facts or conceptions from the one sphere into the other took place or was possible. But when we call to mind the manner in which the hypothesis of literary dependence has been exaggerated as a solvent for the problems of the New Testament by the extreme Dutch school, or even how the argument from analogy has been pushed by the more extravagant adherents of the school of Gunkel, we shall wonder less at the uncritical attitude of Clement in the second century. The main difference, so far as their attitude to Christianity is concerned, is that Clement, starting from the conception of the absolute originality of Christianity, regarded all other truth as secondary and derivative: the modern representatives of the theory of analogy regard Christian truth as derivative and secondary, without recognising any truth as absolute or uniquely divine.

Apart from this relation of dependence on the Hebrew Scriptures, the philosophy of the Greeks was in some important respects inferior to Christianity. Its relation was that of Hagar to Sarah, of a maid to a mistress.<sup>3</sup> It had not led to the abandonment of idolatry.<sup>4</sup> Many of

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 6<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 5<sup>32</sup>, from Philo.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 20<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>44</sup>.

its teachers had imperfect conceptions of God, and paid honour to the elements: at best, they knew Him as Creator, not as Father in the Christian sense.<sup>1</sup> Both philosophy and Christianity come from God, the one source of all good things; but the former had only come from Him in the way of natural sequence, not as a principal end, though to the Greeks before the Advent it may have been given as a principal end.<sup>2</sup> Like the good land, philosophy shares in the rain from heaven, but the result is not the same.<sup>3</sup> It may be compared to nuts, the whole of which is not eatable.<sup>4</sup> It is by no means to be regarded as a substitute for Christianity. On the contrary, philosophers are but children, unless they have become mature men through Christ.<sup>5</sup> Though men have studied the Greek philosophy, they must learn the truth of Christ in order to be saved.<sup>6</sup> To act or speak without the word of truth is as if a man tried to walk without feet.<sup>7</sup> Christian piety is a kind of science, and as such has distinctive principles of its own. As well try to become a rhetorician by taking up the principles of medicine, or a physician by taking up the principles of rhetoric, as try to become a Christian by other than Christian principles.<sup>8</sup> The difference between Christianity and philosophy is thorough-going and far-reaching. Philosophy at best contains but a fragment of the truth of which Christianity contains the whole.<sup>9</sup> "Like as the Bacchæ tore to pieces the limbs of Pentheus, so have the sects of philosophy, both barbarian and Greek, done with truth, each claiming as the whole the portion that has fallen to it."<sup>10</sup> The difference between philosophy and Christianity is a difference

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 11<sup>50</sup>; v. 14<sup>136</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 17.

<sup>7</sup> Prot., vii. 75.

<sup>9</sup> Prot., vii. 74; Str., vi. 17<sup>160</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>37</sup>; i. 5<sup>28</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 11<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 229, fr. 68.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>37</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>87</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Str., i. 13<sup>57</sup>.

between names and things, between the probable and the true,<sup>1</sup> between truth and guessing at truth,<sup>2</sup> between the particular and the universal;<sup>3</sup> for that which the chiefs of philosophy only guessed at, the disciples of Christ apprehend and proclaim.<sup>4</sup> Moreover, the truth in Greek philosophy is not only fragmentary but elementary. It is not concerned with such intellectual objects as are beyond the sphere of this world.<sup>5</sup> Like geometry or painting, it presents only one side of the truth which it delineates.<sup>6</sup> It does not embrace the majesty of the truth.<sup>7</sup> In the dark night of the pre-Christian era it was as the faint light of a wick whose light was taken from the sun. With the proclamation of the Word it is extinguished, as the lamp by the sun; the whole night is illumined.<sup>8</sup> "While truth is one, many things contribute to its investigation, but the discovery is only through the Son. . . . There is the truth of geometry and there is the truth of music, and in right philosophy there would be Hellenic truth. But the only authoritative truth is that in which we are taught by the Son of God. . . . The Greek truth has the same name as our truth, but it differs from it in respect of the grandeur of knowledge, and more authoritative process of demonstration, and divine grace, and the like."<sup>9</sup> It lacks the spiritual and moral force which Christianity imparts. It says that man was made for the vision of heaven, and yet worships the things that appear in the heavens.<sup>10</sup> Its lack of moral force is mainly due to the fact that while the self-control of the Greek philosopher is directed against ministering to lust in act, the self-control of the Christian is directed against the lusting itself.<sup>11</sup>

The primary ground of the inferiority of philosophy is

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 17<sup>149</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Prot., xi. 113.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., xi. 112.

<sup>5</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>117</sup>; vi. 8<sup>68</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>56</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., i. 16<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 5<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., i. 20<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Prot., iv. 63.

<sup>11</sup> Str., iii. 7<sup>57</sup>.



found in the uniquely divine origin of Christianity. His argument here, so far as it seeks to prove the truth of the Christian faith, is based mainly on a series of what he regards as necessary presuppositions. He assumes the necessity of revelation, and seeks to support it. We needed a Divine Teacher, because the soul was too feeble to apprehend things that are as they really are. Hence the Saviour was sent down.<sup>1</sup> Men speaking about God are not trustworthy, in so far as they are merely men. The feeble and mortal cannot speak worthily of Him who is unoriginated and incorruptible, nor can the work of Him who made it.<sup>2</sup> In refutation of the theory of Valentinus, that men were saved by natural constitution, he deems it sufficient to point to the fact that in that case the teaching both of the Old and the New Testament was a superfluity, and that the higher natures, apart from the advent of Christianity, would some time or another have come to the light. But if the Valentinians admitted that the sojourning of the Saviour was a necessity, then the peculiar prerogatives of nature were gone.<sup>3</sup> He assumes the divine origin of the Christian Scriptures. All other systems of thought depend on some teacher, who in turn depended on his predecessor, and so on in like manner in an ascending series; but Christianity is taught by Him who was taught of none, but is Himself the teacher of all created beings.<sup>4</sup> He adduces what he calls an unanswerable argument that it is God who speaks in detail of the matter under investigation and presents it in writing. "Who, then, is so atheistic as to disbelieve God, and to demand demonstration from God as from man?" If the followers of Pythagoras regard his *ipse dixit* as a matter of faith shall we demand from God the Saviour proof of

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>7</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>185</sup>. Cf. ib., i. 28<sup>178</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>57</sup>, 58.

what is said? <sup>1</sup> Theism involves Christianity. Admit the existence of Providence, and it would be impious to suppose that the whole of prophecy and the dispensation in relation to it did not take place in accordance with Providence.<sup>2</sup> A first principle must be assumed, for a first principle which required the support of anything else could not be regarded as a first principle.<sup>3</sup> The demonstration which is based on opinion is human, the demonstration of the Scripture is based on knowledge. Scripture itself, being derived from the First Principle, shares like characteristics. "With a view to the discovery of realities we use Scripture as a criterion. . . . That cannot be a first principle which needs to be judged. We, embracing by faith the first principle without demonstration, receive demonstration concerning the first principle from the first principle itself, and are instructed by the voice of the Lord with a view to the knowledge of the truth. Human testimony needs confirmation, but by the voice of the Lord we prove that which is under inquiry, and this is more trustworthy than any demonstration, rather is the only real demonstration."<sup>4</sup> If, in the ordinary sense of the word, demonstration of the truth of Christianity is unnecessary or impossible, nevertheless, in the judgment of Clement, it has a demonstration of its own. The organ of this demonstration is faith. "Faith is a grace which leads up from that which cannot be demonstrated to that which is universally simple, which is neither with matter, nor matter, nor under matter."<sup>5</sup> So far from being facile or vulgar, faith is something divine. It is the foundation of knowledge.<sup>6</sup> "Unless ye believe, ye will not understand." When the Scripture says that God is faithful, it implies that He is worthy of faith when making any assertion.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 5<sup>24</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>7</sup>. Cf. ib. ii. 2<sup>9</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>95</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib.<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>14</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 6<sup>30</sup>, &c.<sup>7</sup> Ib., ii. 6<sup>27</sup>.

From the person of the Teacher it follows that, in respect of substance, our teaching is perfect. He who suffered out of love to us would not have kept back anything with a view to our instruction in knowledge.<sup>1</sup> In defence of the Christian faith Clement presents some grounds of a more definite character. "They say that a proof is either the antecedent, or the coincident, or the consequent. The discovery of what is sought concerning God is the teaching through His Son; and the proof of our Saviour being the Son of God is the prophecies announcing Him which preceded His coming, and the testimony regarding Him which coincided with His birth in the world; and, in addition, His powers proclaimed and openly shown after His ascension."<sup>2</sup> "Undoubtedly of the coming of the Lord, who was our teacher, to men there were myriad indicators, proclaimers, precursors from the beginning, from the foundation of the world, intimating beforehand by words and deeds, prophesying that He would come, and when, and where, and what should be the signs."<sup>3</sup> Thus, apparently, the argument from prophecy is the most weighty argument, but it must be taken along with the evidence of the working of a living Christ. The miraculous in the sphere of knowledge impressed him more than the miraculous in the sphere of action. He speaks of the latter as a concession to men in a lower stage of spiritual development. "God spake by the burning bush, for the men of that day needed signs and wonders."<sup>4</sup> He admits it as one of the methods by which God saves men.<sup>5</sup> This attitude of Clement is to be explained, on the one hand, by his faith in the power of truth, and on the other by his insistence on the liberty of the individual. In no case is the freedom of the individual to be forced or touched.

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 8<sup>70</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>122</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>166</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Prot., i. 8.<sup>5</sup> Str., vi. 3<sup>28</sup>.

In a striking fragment he says: "I regard it as a form of necessity to astonish and compel the faith of a man by that which is miraculous, seeing that God wishes a man to be saved of himself, taking only the impulse from the commandment. God does not deal in compulsion, nor would it be right that the self-determined soul should, after the fashion of lifeless images, be influenced by an external cause."<sup>1</sup> In view of the fact that we know nothing of the context of this passage, it may be unwise to push it too far or to its logical issue; but it is in harmony with Clement's views on human freedom,<sup>2</sup> as well as with the absence in his writings of specific and definite arguments for the truth of Christianity based on the miraculous, and with his very scanty allusions to the miracles of Jesus.

As a testimony to the divinity of the Christian faith, Clement points to its universality. It is not limited as a philosophical coterie is in the character or number of its adherents. Neither poverty nor lack of reputation can stand in the way of him who is eagerly intent on the knowledge of God.<sup>3</sup> And as it is independent of individual limitations, so it transcends all national or racial boundaries. "The word of our teacher remained not in Judæa alone, as philosophy did in Greece, but was scattered throughout the whole world, winning whole households of Greek and barbarians at once, in nation, village, and city, and individual hearers also, and bringing to the truth not a few of the philosophers themselves."<sup>4</sup> The reality of Christian faith and truth was evinced by the fact of martyrdom. No doubt, there had been isolated cases of martyrdom for truth before the coming of Christianity. "But we see the spectacle every day of innu-

<sup>1</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 217.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Pæd.*, i. 6<sup>33</sup>, &c.

<sup>3</sup> *Prot.*, x. 106.

<sup>4</sup> *Str.*, vi. 18<sup>167</sup>.

merable crowds of martyrs roasted, impaled, beheaded.”<sup>1</sup> The whole Church was filled with those who throughout their whole life “had made a study of death.”<sup>2</sup> This wholesale martyrdom had failed in its aim, and had only proved the impossibility of crushing Christianity by force. Persecution by the State would cause any system of Greek philosophy to disappear forthwith; but it is futile as a check to the progress of Christianity. “Our teaching from the very moment of its first proclamation was prohibited by kings and tyrants together, as well as by rulers and governors in turn, with all their mercenaries, and in addition by countless men warring against us, and endeavouring to the utmost of their power to cut it down. But it flourishes the more. For it dies not as the teaching of men, nor fades away as a gift without strength, for no gift of God is without strength. It remains unhindered, though it is predicted of it that it is destined to be persecuted to the end.”<sup>3</sup> The rapidity of its victorious march was all the more noteworthy. With unsurpassable celerity the divine power had shone over the earth, and filled the universe with the seed of salvation.<sup>4</sup> The divinity of Christ had been attested by the moral and intellectual influence which it had exercised both socially and individually. It had transfigured and ennobled all social relations. “Those who have betaken themselves to the Father for the sake of wisdom have proved good fathers to their children, and those who have known the Son have proved good parents to their sons; and those who remember the Bridegroom good husbands to their wives; and those who have themselves been redeemed from the lowest slavery good masters to their servants.”<sup>5</sup> To the individual it contributes the greatest of blessings, “the

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 20<sup>125</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 8<sup>88</sup>; Plato, Phædo, 67 E.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>167</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Prot., x. 110.<sup>5</sup> Ib., x. 107.



origin of faith, eagerness for heavenly citizenship, the impulse towards truth, a spirit of inquiry, a trace of knowledge,—in brief, the means of procuring salvation. Those who have been really nourished on the words of truth receive a viaticum for eternal life, and are prepared for flight heavenwards.”<sup>1</sup> In the double *rôle* which Clement had to discharge, on the one hand, to maintain the quasi-divine character of Greek philosophy against those in the Church who were jealous of any contact with it, and, on the other hand, to maintain against the Greeks its inferiority to Christianity, while recognising the divine element in it, he wavers a little in his language while he exaggerates now this, now that, side of his polemic; but his central principles do not vary.

This lofty claim on the part of Christianity did not pass unchallenged. Greek and Jew alike pointed scornfully to the divisions in the Church and said, “We ought not to believe because of the dissonance of the sects; truth is strained, when some put forth one opinion and some another.”<sup>2</sup> The careful discussion which Clement gives of the objection is an index of the importance which was attached to it alike by objector and adherent. Clement begins by showing that the application of this principle to other departments of work or study would lead to paralysis of action. Because there were various schools of philosophy, should all study of philosophy be summarily abandoned? So far from being unexpected, heresies were predicted by the Lord Himself. The beautiful is always followed by its caricature. Because some have let the truth go, shall we not believe those who have kept a firm hold of it? To stand aloof from the Christian faith on the ground of such divisions was illogical. Because there

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 1<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 15<sup>89</sup>.

were conflicting theories of disease in the science of medicine, would the sick man refuse to go to a physician? Why, then, should the sick of soul put forth divisions as a pretext for indifference or unbelief? If fruit ripe and real is put before us, and fruit made of wax, shall we refrain from both? Because there are many byroads, some of which may lead to a precipice, shall we hesitate to travel by the one royal highway?<sup>1</sup> Because grass grows among the garden produce, does the farmer give up gardening? Such divisions of opinion were the inevitable result of endeavours to investigate the meaning of the truth, and from that point of view were a stimulus to the search after truth, and a tribute to Christianity. The attitude of aloofness would only be justifiable if the truth were not to be found anywhere, if demonstration were impossible, and if there were no criterion of truth and error. But truth does exist; and he who does not seek to distinguish the incongruous and unseemly and contrary to nature and false from their opposites, stands self-condemned.<sup>2</sup> And for this there is a criterion. That criterion is the Scripture itself; and the true, because the traditional, interpretation of Scripture is to be found in the ancient Catholic Church. The sophists tear away some fragments of truth with a view to the injury of men and bury them in human systems of their own devising, and pride themselves on being the head of a school rather than a church.<sup>3</sup> They dare to use the Prophetic Scriptures; but they do not use them in their entirety, or mutilate what they use, and do not deal with them in accordance with the analogy of Scripture, as the body and tissue of Prophecy demand. They pick out ambiguous sayings, glean a few words here and there, and consider the bare letter, not

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 15<sup>89</sup>, 90.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 15<sup>91</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 15<sup>92</sup>.

the meaning. To find the truth we must consider what is perfectly fitting and becoming to the Lord and the Almighty God, and must confirm each point that is demonstrated by the analogy of Scripture. When the heretics are proved to be in antagonism to the Scriptures, they either make light of the logical consistency of their own dogmas or of prophecy itself. They disclaim the authority of Scripture, and prefer their own conceptions to that which was spoken by the Lord through the prophets, and attested and confirmed by the Gospels and also by the Apostles. They lack understanding for the majesty of the truth.<sup>1</sup> As mischievous boys bar out their tutor, they shut out the prophecies from their own church.<sup>2</sup> They quibble at the things handed down by the blessed apostles and teachers which are naturally attached to the inspired words, and oppose human teaching to divine tradition. Marcion and Prodicus were not wiser than the men before them, and might well have been contented with learning the previous traditions.<sup>3</sup> The heretics have only a false key. We open the main door and enter in through the tradition of the Lord; they cut down a side-door and secretly dig through the wall of the Church. Outstepping the truth, they initiate into the mysteries the souls of the impious. The Catholic Church existed prior to the gatherings of the heretics; all heresy is innovation. The heretics try to break up the unity of the Church; the true, the ancient Church is one. This oneness it shares with God. The pre-eminence of the Catholic Church, like the First Principle of its constitution, is in accordance with the Monad, surpassing all other things, and having nothing or like equal to itself.<sup>4</sup> Even when all allowance has been made for

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>93,97</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>103,105</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>99</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 17<sup>106, 107</sup>.

the polemical note in his criticism, there remains enough to show that while Clement claimed for himself an independent position on some matters held by some of his contemporaries to be vital, and may be considered as a representative of a liberal attitude in respect of doctrine, he regarded himself as loyal to the tradition of the Church. A traditionalist of the type of Irenæus, Clement was not; questions of ecclesiastical organisation or ritual had little interest for him; no emphasis is put on the office of the bishop in relation to the Church or to the truth; but in his conflict with heresy, the main weapon in his armoury with which he confronts his opponents is the authoritative standard, the ecclesiastical rule, which he regards as of apostolic origin. At the same time, it is none the less significant that in the *Protrepticus* the word Church is not mentioned save in an allusion to a passage in the Epistle to the Hebrews,<sup>1</sup> that he invites the Greeks to enter not into the fold of the Church but into the domain of truth, that his appeal is to the Scriptures, that often as the word "salvation" occurs, it is nowhere associated with the Church or its ordinances. No doubt, it may be urged that such an appeal would not have been relevant to his immediate aim, that he sought to bring them to the threshold of the truth, in the assurance that they would thereafter enter within the sanctuary; and that in emphasising the unity and catholicity of the Church in conflict with heresy, he emphasises it precisely at the point where it was most natural to do so.<sup>2</sup>

From this survey it is plain that Clement held with great firmness that Christianity, though divine in a unique sense,

<sup>1</sup> Prot., ix. 82; Heb. xii. 23.

<sup>2</sup> For a temperate statement of the position of the Roman Catholic Church, as against Harnack and Bigg, see Batiffol, '*L'Eglise Naissante et le Catholicisme*,' pp. 295-315.

was not to be regarded as an isolated fact in the history of the world, and that with regard to other forms of truth, it stood not in the relation of antagonism or complete independence, but rather as the absolute stands to that which is incomplete and undeveloped. Starting from the principle that the Providence of God had been at work in universal history, and that all truth was from Him, he did not regard any aspect of it with jealousy, but welcomed it so far as it was true. To Clement a religion that appealed to the general heart of humanity and claimed for itself universal homage, and at the same time was unrelated to other manifestations of the spirit of man, was an absurdity; for it would find nothing in man to appeal to, nothing to receive the seed. The possession of partial truth was the best preparation for the attainment of fuller truth. Clement transferred to the world of intellect what St Paul had affirmed of the world of nature, that God never left Himself without witness.<sup>1</sup> He represents Christianity as the true mystery of which the Greek mysteries were only a shadow, and calls on the Greeks to embrace Christianity in the very language of the mysteries which he urged them to abandon;<sup>2</sup> but there is no evidence that he wished to modify Christian institutions in harmony with heathen forms of worship.<sup>3</sup> The ascription to theft of what was cognate to Christianity in the great thinkers of Greece was a grotesque recognition of the unity of truth; but it was surely wiser and more reverent than to deny any relationship whatsoever. It has, indeed, been averred that in seeking to bring Hellenic thought and culture into fellowship with the Christian faith, Clement was endeavouring to carry out an impossible, if not a treasonable task, and that he only seemed to succeed because he abandoned that which was most distinctive of

<sup>1</sup> Acts xiv. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Prot., xii. 118, 119.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Kattenbusch, 'Das apostolische Symbol,' vol. ii. p. 109.



primitive Christianity. It is said that in his conception of Christianity as having for its aim the individual perfection of man, in his presentation of the facts of salvation, in his view of Christian life as an ascent to God, in his exaggeration of the human factors of salvation in relation to the divine, Clement is more in harmony with the current of thought in our time than in accord with the early teaching of the Church.<sup>1</sup> That such a charge should have been made, now on the conservative, now on the liberal side, in the eighteenth century, is intelligible,<sup>2</sup> but it is somewhat of an anachronism to-day. It is plain that our view of such objections to the aim as well as to the results of his method will depend very largely on what our view of primitive Christianity is. Unless it be illegitimate or treasonable to put things in a different perspective, unless it be held that to emphasise certain truths involves disloyalty to others, Clement is not to be blamed for bringing Christianity into the moulds of his early life and training. What teacher, in his discrimination of what is relatively important or unimportant, is not influenced by his own intellectual or spiritual history? To have created a new terminology would have divorced Christianity from all relation to the past—the very thing which Clement was determined to avoid.

Platonic, Stoic, Aristotelian terms, definitions, and phrases repeatedly occur. But this power to assimilate is surely a symptom of life, the characteristic of every healthy organism. It is only when it is a question of the introduction of a foreign body, of something actually hostile to that which has assimilated it, of something in the present case that is inconsistent alike with the primitive form of the Gospel or

<sup>1</sup> Kutter, 'Schweizer Theolog. Zeit.' 1899.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Walch, 'Miscell. Sacr.,' vol. ii. p. 516. 'De Erroribus C. A. eorumque causis.' Semler, 'Gesch. d. christ. Glaubens,' vol. ii. p. 133.

its natural inner development, that foreign influence can be established. The elements in the theology and ethics of Clement that may be assigned to the undue influence of Hellenic bias or culture will be noted in the course of the exposition. This at least is certain, that Clement was himself unconscious of any disloyalty to the teaching of the Church; and while he faced the situation of the time with intellectual courage, he did not dream of making any concession to the Hellenic culture around him that either transformed or deformed the Christian faith. On the contrary, he maintained that his teaching derived breath and life from the Scriptures of the Lord;<sup>1</sup> and he believed that he was loyal to the Church when he sought to bring all truth under its shadow. If all truth were from God, a conflict in truth was impossible. The problem of the Church in Alexandria was to adjust itself to the intellectual impulse from which philosophy in all its schools derived its being; and Clement held that to make the Church and its doctrine a non-intellectual preserve was fatal to its usefulness, as well as to its claims to master and permeate the world. It has often been observed that he lived in an age of transition. It was so in regard to doctrine, the authority of the Church, and the Canon of the New Testament. In Alexandria, in particular, it was so in regard to the relation of the Church to intellectual culture. In such an age the attitude of a thinker is sometimes of more importance than the results which he achieves. And the attitude of Clement was that of one who believed that a Christianity which could claim for itself all that was highest in the thought of the past could alone face the future with confidence. The problem of the Church to-day is, in loyalty to the past, to adjust itself to the new forces in the thought of our time. And,

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 1<sup>1</sup>.

surely, there can be little doubt that it will act wisely if it adopts the principles that underlie the attitude of Clement. Intellectual monasticism is as bad for the Church as moral monasticism was for the individual, and can only end in lopsidedness of development or impoverishment. In regard to other forms of religion, for example, there can be no doubt that the wise procedure is that of Clement, to recognise what in them is cognate to Christianity and work from that as relatively true; for Christianity does not call upon us to postulate the absolute falsity of other religions, but its own absolute truth. And of a like nature will be our attitude to all the intellectual forces and movements of the present. The Christian thinker who adopts the position of Clement need not regard these with any hostile or even unsympathetic eye; he can recognise in each of them a manifestation of the one Word who is "the sleepless guard of humanity,"<sup>1</sup> and will only be hostile when they claim to represent not one but the only aspect of truth. In this way the pre-eminence of Christianity is maintained: it is not dishonoured, though other gifts of God are honoured; for all science, all art, all philosophy, regarded in their ideal function, are the inspiration of the one God who speaks to-day as He spoke to the fathers of old, "by diverse portions and in divers manners."

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, iii, 8<sup>44</sup>.

## LECTURE III.

## THE NATURE AND ATTRIBUTES OF GOD.

To have a right conception of God in Himself, and in His relation to the universe and to man, is the essential basis not only of Christian thought but of all thought whatsoever. The ethical ideal of Clement was an ever-growing likeness to God, but this was inseparably related to intellectual cognition of Him. That this knowledge was hard to realise Clement well knew. But the difficulty of the investigation furnished no ground for abandoning the inquiry, as some suggested, but rather the contrary. We must continue to inquire in order that we may say what ought to be said, and hear what ought to be heard, concerning Him. Only one limitation is necessary. All inquiry must be conditioned by the faith.<sup>1</sup> Here, as elsewhere, Clement remains faithful to his eclectic principles. We find in his doctrine of God clear evidence of the influence of Plato, still clearer of the influence of Philo. This eclecticism leads him into paradoxes and apparent contradictions. At times the conception of God seems to be purely philosophical, and the Christian element a mere graft, or even an accretion. At other times his presentation seems to be fundamentally Christian; and in this case a main interest of his doctrine of God does not

<sup>1</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 228, fr. 67.

lie in what he has appropriated or assimilated, but in his own point of view which made that appropriation possible.

No thinker of the early Church realised with more earnestness the necessity and the dignity of the knowledge of God. It has even been brought as a charge against him that to him Christianity is essentially a knowledge of God. "The knowledge of the truly existent God," he says, "is the immutable beginning and foundation of life: to be ignorant of Him is death, but to have full knowledge of Him and become like unto Him is the only life."<sup>1</sup> If it were possible to distinguish between the knowledge of God and eternal salvation, and such alternative choice were put before the ideal Christian, he would without any hesitation whatsoever choose the knowledge of God.<sup>2</sup> But to know Him we must first be assured of His existence. "He that cometh to God must believe that He is." This need not be demonstrated. To demand demonstration of the existence of God is to raise a question, the very putting of which deserves punishment.<sup>3</sup> Christianity confirms the doctrine of a Providence and presupposes it. With the abolition of theism Christianity becomes a myth.<sup>4</sup> But though such demonstration is superfluous, we may appeal to the testimony borne by the order of the universe, by the spirit of man, and by the universal consciousness of mankind. The Providence of God is manifest from the vision of all things that are seen, the works of skill and wisdom, both of things that come into existence in due order and of those which are made manifest in due order.<sup>5</sup> The voice of God—as even the philosophers have noted—may be heard by all who give earnest contemplation to the constitution of the universe, which owes its being and its unceasing subsistence to Him.<sup>6</sup> The wisest of the Greeks have ascribed the pre-eminence to

<sup>1</sup> Q. D., 7.

<sup>2</sup> Str., iv. 22<sup>136</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. I<sup>6</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. II<sup>52</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. I<sup>6</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. I4<sup>99</sup>; v. I<sup>6</sup>.



“the invisible, sole, most powerful, most skilful, and principal cause of all that is fairest.”<sup>1</sup> God gave to the Gentiles the stars for worship, that through the worship of the stars they might rise to the Maker of them.<sup>2</sup> And to this conviction, which is borne in upon us by the wisdom and order manifest in the world without, the inner voice of the spirit of man is responsive. “Into all men whatsoever a certain divine effluence has been instilled; wherefore, though unwillingly, they confess that God is one, indestructible, and unoriginated.”<sup>3</sup> A divine power is at work in the Providence which is exercised in relation to us. Such a Providence is inconsistent with the hypothesis of many gods. There is, then, only one God who truly is and subsists.<sup>4</sup> This belief in the existence of God is universal, and is essential to true life. “No race of men anywhere, tillers of the soil, or nomads, or even dwellers in cities, can live unless it has previously received faith in One who is better. Every nation alike in the east and the west, the north and the south, has one and the same conception regarding Him who has established the hegemony.”<sup>5</sup> In like manner the common consciousness of mankind bears witness by its ordinary forms of speech to the existence of One who is Almighty.<sup>6</sup> If the conception of God be thus innate and universal, how comes it that belief in Him is not universal, that His existence is ignored or denied by many? Such unbelief is moral rather than intellectual in its origin, and arises in part from the apparent victory of unrighteousness in the world and misconception as to the true ground of that apparent victory, and in part from the moral disorders of men themselves. Some men looking at the existence of injustice which passes unchastened think

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>134</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>110, 111</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Prot., vi. 68. Cf. xii. 120.<sup>4</sup> Ib., x. 103; Str., v. 13<sup>87</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>133</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>135</sup>.

that there is no God. They do not observe, says Clement, the self-determination of the soul, and that it cannot be enslaved. Like these in opinion are those who from incontinence in pleasures fall into pains out of the common course and unlooked-for accidents, and sinking under their calamities say that there is no God, or that, if He exists, He does not oversee all things.<sup>1</sup> This universal conviction, however, did not carry with it oneness of conception. That the conceptions of God varied with the moral character of men and were determined thereby, and that this in turn reacted on their moral life, is again and again emphasised.<sup>2</sup> A mere belief in God, unless accompanied by a right apprehension of the God in whom we ought to believe, was accordingly of no value.

Apart from the numerous passages where his conception of God comes out incidentally, there are at least three occasions on which he gives a formal definition; and though the second is professedly based on a saying of the Lord, and there is a scriptural phrase in the third, they are all purely philosophical. "In the case of God," he says, "being is God. The Divine being is something eternal and without beginning and which cannot be circumscribed, and is the cause of things that exist."<sup>3</sup> Again—"What is God? God is spirit, as also the Lord says. Now spirit is truly essence, bodiless, and that which cannot be circumscribed. And that is bodiless which is not completed by means of a body, whose existence is not in breadth, length, and depth. And that cannot be circumscribed of which there is no place, which is altogether in all things, and is in each whole and independently the same."<sup>4</sup> Again—"No one can form any conception of God according to His worth; but to form a conception of Him as far as it is possible, let him conceive

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 3<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 219.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. ib., vii. 3<sup>14</sup>; vii. 4<sup>22</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., p. 220.

of 'light inaccessible,' great, incomprehensible, and most fair—of light, which has embraced within itself every power that is good, every gracious excellence, which cares for all, is pitiful, passionless, good, knows all things, foreknows all things, is pure, sweet, bright, unmixed."<sup>1</sup> The first two definitions are concerned solely with the essence—the essential nature—of God; in the third an ethical element enters into the conception. It is important to keep the first two definitions especially in mind, when we find descriptions that have caused some to claim Clement, if not as an agnostic, at least as a precursor of Hamilton and Mansel.

Clement repeatedly emphasises the transcendence of God. "The God of the universe," he says, "is above all speech, all perception, all thought."<sup>2</sup> "The discourse concerning God is most difficult to deal with."<sup>3</sup> "The subject of God embraces not one thing but ten thousand things. There is a difference between seeking God and seeking things about God. In this, as in everything else, the accidents are to be distinguished from the essence."<sup>4</sup> "The Governor of the universe is a Being hard to comprehend and apprehend, always receding and withdrawing from him who pursues. . . . God is not in darkness or in place, but above place and time and the property of things that have come into being. Wherefore He is never in a part, neither containing nor contained, either by way of definition, limitation, or of section."<sup>5</sup> A kindred thought is developed elsewhere. "How can that be expressed," he asks, "which is neither genus, nor species, nor individual, nor number,—nay more, is neither an accident nor that to which an accident happens? One cannot rightly call Him whole. For on account of His greatness He is ranked as the whole, and

<sup>1</sup> Ec. Pr., 21. Cf. Adum. in 1 Joan., p. 210. "Quia deus," inquit, "lumen est: non essentiam divinam exprimit, sed declarare volens majestatem dei."

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 10<sup>65</sup>. <sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 12<sup>81</sup>. <sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 17<sup>150</sup>. <sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>5</sup>, 6.

is the Father of the universe. Nor are any parts to be predicated of Him. For the One is indivisible, wherefore, also, He is infinite, not so much because conceived as impossible to be embraced, but with reference to His being without dimensions and not having a limit. And, therefore, He is without form and name. And if we name Him, we do not do so, properly speaking, calling him either the One, or the Good, or Mind, or the Absolute, or Father, or God, or Creator, or Lord.<sup>1</sup> We do not speak of declaring His name; but by reason of our perplexity we use good names, so that the mind may not go astray about other names, but may be able to lean upon those. For each name by itself does not express God; but all collectively are indicative of the power of the Omnipotent. For things may be described by their attributes or mutual relations; but none of these qualities can be applied to God. Nor, again, can He be apprehended by the science of demonstration. For demonstration depends on what is anterior to, and better known than, that which is demonstrated. But nothing existed prior to the Unbegotten."<sup>2</sup> "Everything that falls under a name is begotten."<sup>3</sup> "Human speech is by nature feeble and incapable of declaring God. I do not mean declaring His name,—for to name Him is common not to philosophy only but to all poets—nor declaring His essence, for that is impossible, but declaring the power and the works of God."<sup>4</sup> If this be so, how is any conception of God, still less any knowledge of Him, possible? The method is that of analysis or the elimination of attributes that imply definition or limitation. "By analysis we advance to Him who is the first conception. Start-

<sup>1</sup> καλοῦντες ἦτοι ξὺν, ἢ τάγαθόν, ἢ νοῦν, ἢ αὐτὸ τὸ ὄν, ἢ πατέρα, ἢ θεόν, ἢ δημιουργόν, ἢ κύριον. Str., v. 12<sup>82</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 12<sup>81, 82</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>83</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>166</sup>.

ing with things which are subordinate to it, we begin by abstracting from body its natural properties. Then we cut off the three dimensions, length, breadth, and depth. That which is left is a point, a unit having position, so to speak. Take away position, and you have the conception of the unit, If, then, abstracting all that belongs to bodies and the properties of things called incorporeal, we cast ourselves into the greatness of Christ, and thence go forward through holiness into immensity, we may attain somehow to the conception of the Almighty, not knowing what He is, but what He is not. And form, or motion, or standing, or a throne, or place, or right hand, or left, are not at all to be conceived as belonging to the Father of the universe, though these things are written of Him. . . . The First Cause is not, then, in a place, but above both place, and time, and name, and conception.”<sup>1</sup> “God is one, and beyond the one, and above the monad itself.”<sup>2</sup>

All this description of the Divine Being seems absolutely fatal to the thought to which he has given emphatic expression, that the knowledge of God was life. What possible knowledge of, or fellowship can there be with, One who cannot be scientifically known, because He cannot be logically demonstrated, who is a mere metaphysical abstraction, of whom we can predicate nothing but negations, who seems only “the deification of zero,”<sup>3</sup> and whose transcendence seems to put Him out of all possible relation to us? “A God out of all relations,” says Professor Flint, “is no God at all.”<sup>4</sup>

There is a sense, however, in which these sayings of Clement are in harmony with Scripture and express a

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. II<sup>71</sup>. οὐκ οὐκ ἐν τόπῳ τὸ πρῶτον αἴτιον, ἀλλ’ ὑπεράνω καὶ τόπου καὶ χρόνου καὶ ὀνόματος καὶ νοήσεως.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>71</sup>. ἐν δὲ ὁ θεὸς καὶ ἐπέκεινα τοῦ ἐνὸς καὶ ὑπὲρ αὐτὴν μονάδα.

<sup>3</sup> Mayor, p. xxxix.

<sup>4</sup> ‘Agnosticism,’ p. 521.



profound truth. That man cannot by searching find out God, that no man hath seen God at any time, that He alone hath immortality, dwelling in light inaccessible, whom no man hath seen or can see, is but the expression in simple language of what Clement sought to express in the language of the schools. And if, like him, we try to define the essence rather than the nature of God as manifested in that which is external to Him, to express what God is in Himself, apart from any relation to the universe or to man, can we conceive of Him or name Him in any other way than by denying to Him any attributes that imply anything that is distinctive of the finite? This is but an amplification of the thought that God cannot be described in terms of Deductive Logic or subsumed under its categories. It implies that God, the absolutely First Principle, need not, and cannot, be demonstrated, because He is a necessary postulate of human thought. What God is in Himself only God Himself can fully know. "God only knows the love of God." We can only guess at what He is in Himself by what He is to us. It is true that no category which implies limitation can be ascribed to God, that no name of man can describe His essence, and that our names are only points of support by which we may give definiteness to our conception of Him. The language of Clement expresses a truth which has been recognised by the highest teachers of all ages, and which forms an essential element in all true theism—viz., that the essence of God must ever escape our analysis, that we may apprehend but cannot comprehend the nature of Deity, that He may be known to be infinite though not known as infinite. This method of conceiving God is due in part to the influence of Plato on his early training, in part to the influence of Philo. But though the language is similar, Clement's motive of ascribing such

transcendence to God is different from theirs. The aim of the transcendence in Plato was to keep the Deity from contact with the world. The aim of Clement is rather, in harmony with his view of a universal providence, to maintain the unconditional freedom of God and to emphasise the necessity of revelation. We can only understand the Unknown by divine grace, and by the Word that came from Him.<sup>1</sup> "The same One who is very far off has come very near—an unspeakable wonder. I am a God near at hand, says the Lord. He is far off in respect of essence—for how can that which is created apprehend the Uncreated—but He is very near by His power in which all things have been embraced. Yea, the power of God is always present, laying hold of us by that power which sees, and is beneficent and disciplinary."<sup>2</sup> Thus the transcendence of God, in the thought of Clement, is consistent with His immanence; rather the immanence is an essential factor in his conception.

On the ground of a saying preserved by Maximus the Confessor, it has been affirmed that "Clement expressly denied to God any consciousness of the external world."<sup>3</sup> After having stated that Dionysius the Areopagite says that we are called "divine volitions" by the Scripture, Maximus quotes in confirmation or illustration a reply that had been given by some of the adherents of Pantænus or Clement to a question concerning the nature of the divine knowledge. Stählin assigns the saying to Clement.<sup>4</sup> Some who were vain of their secular culture wished to know in what way the Christians represented God's knowledge of existent things (the real). They supposed that He knew the things of sense by sensation and the things of intellect by intellection. The answer ascribed to Clement is as follows: "God does not know the things of sense by sensation, nor

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 12<sup>82</sup>.    <sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>5</sup>.    <sup>3</sup> Bigg, p. 64.    <sup>4</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 224.

the things of intellect by intellection. For it is not possible that He who is above existent things should apprehend existent things after the manner of existent things. We say that He knows existent things as His own volitions—a reasonable argument to adduce. For if He has made the totality of things by volition—which reason will not gain-say—and if it is always right and pious to say that He knows His own volitions, and He by volition has made each of the things that have come into being, then God knows existent things as His own volitions, seeing that also by volition He has made existent things.”

The aim of Clement in this answer is not to deny the divine knowledge, but rather to emphasise its nature and method in contrast with human knowledge, and so to deny anthropomorphism both in a grosser and a subtler form. Man, who is himself a part of existent things, can only know them by sense-perception, or by a process of intellection, mediate and partial, bit by bit, as it were. God, who is not a part of existent things but above them, cannot know them as such, not only because He is above them, but because of His immediate relation to them as acts of His will. His argument is: God made all things by volition. He knows His own volition. Therefore, He knows existent things as His own volitions. And His volition, in the thought of Clement, is no barren volition, but a realised volition; for His volition is work.<sup>1</sup> Can that be called a denial of God’s consciousness of the external world? If we may judge from human analogy, there is nothing of which we have such immediate knowledge as we have of our own volitions and their realisation or embodiment. Does an artist not know that which he has willed to delineate? In a real sense does any one else know it, or does he know anything else? If any-

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>27</sup>: τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ ἔργον ἐστί.

thing be denied of God's relation to the external world in this saying, would it not be more correct to say that Clement denied to God any consciousness of *an* external world, of the external world, as external?<sup>1</sup>

The universe, according to Clement, owes its continual subsistence as well as its origin to God. He is as essential to the continuance of the universe as He was to its creation. The husbandman who casts in the seed is only an agent. It is God who brings about the growth and perfection of all things, and carries forward things that come into being to their natural end. To attribute growth and changes to the stars as the principal cause is to deprive the Father of the universe, so far as in them lies, of His unwearied power.<sup>2</sup> Things created have no power of themselves. "An axe does not operate without some one to use it. Things do not energise of themselves, but possess certain natural qualities which accomplish their distinctive work through the energy of the craftsman. So by the universal Providence of God, through the medium of proximate causes, the power to act is transmitted in succession to individual objects."<sup>3</sup>

From this it would seem that Clement avoided on the one hand the danger of thinking of the transcendence of God in such a way as to place Him entirely out of relation to the universe which He had formed, and on the other hand that of conceiving Him in pantheistic fashion as merged and lost in His own world. The relation of the world to God is not like that of a machine which has been set agoing and endowed with certain qualities that make it independent of the Creator. The axe of a workman has no power to act of itself, and can only realise its end when put into action by the will of man; so no force in the universe has an independent energy,

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 'Church Quarterly Review,' 1904.

<sup>2</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>148</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib.

but has only a potentiality of energy which would cease to develop into actuality were it not for the continuous operation of the Almighty. The same thought is enforced by the illustration drawn from the tillage of the ground. The husbandman can only use the seed with the potencies with which God has endowed it, and take advantage of the laws of growth which God has ordained for its development. But every stage of that growth is not only controlled but directed by God; and were His energy to be withdrawn, these laws which are not only derived from God but administered by Him would cease to be operative. To attribute an independent energy to anything in itself, or to attribute it to any force external to the world, or to anything whatever but God Himself, is to dishonour the untiring power of the Almighty. He Himself created, sustains, and administers the universe. Is this conception of the absolute sovereignty of God in the ceaseless administration of the universe reconcilable with a dualism of original principles? If unfettered in administration, must He not have been unfettered in creation? Matter may be conceived as formless; can it be conceived as existing uncreated before God imparted to it the quality of receiving form? If it can be so conceived, must we not ascribe to matter a certain independence of God, and therewith a certain limitation of the divine power in creating and administering? But that the creative and administrative activity of God was absolutely unconditioned, Clement again and again asserts. "There is nothing which God cannot do."<sup>1</sup> "The universe sprang into existence at a mere act of His will."<sup>2</sup> "Nothing at all exists unless He had willed it to exist."<sup>3</sup> If, then, even essentially chaotic matter existed before God fashioned it, He must have been its Creator. In itself

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 3<sup>7</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Prot., iv. 63.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>62</sup>.



the doctrine of intermediaries might seem opposed to the doctrine of immanence. But that would only be the case if the underlying conception were that in no other way could the gulf between matter and the transcendent God be bridged. But this conception of immanence being denied, the use of proximate causes is not inconsistent with immanence: it is only a method by which the immanence of God is effected. The employment of men as agents, for example, is in accordance with the divine method. But this does not mean that God can do some things but not other things, nor that some things take place with His will and some things against His will.<sup>1</sup> It is important to keep in mind the unconditioned activity assigned to God, as we turn to the controverted question as to the view of Clement on the eternity of matter.

On this subject widely different views are, and have been, held. In accordance with a statement of Photius, some have maintained that he held a dualistic theory of the origin of the universe. One of the heresies which Photius found in the 'Hypotyposes' was the eternity or timelessness of matter.<sup>2</sup> Some maintain that Photius was right; some that he was in error, and in any case, that "timeless" was not synonymous with "uncreated." Some have held that in view of the conflicting statements no conclusion can be drawn, and that the conceptions of Clement remained in a fluid or chaotic form.

Take first the positive statements which he makes as to his position. He avers that the Greek philosophers took from Moses the doctrine that the world was created.<sup>3</sup> He represents the conception of the creation of the world as the teaching of Scripture. He adduces the "prophecy" in Genesis<sup>4</sup> as evidence that "we may be taught that the

<sup>1</sup> Ec. Pr., 16.

<sup>3</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>92</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Photius, Cod., 109.

<sup>4</sup> Gen. ii. 4.

world was created, and that God did not make it in time.”<sup>1</sup> Still more definitely, in an altogether fantastic exegesis of the sixth commandment—which, as being read into the commandment, all the more certainly expresses his thought—does he make his position clear. It is true that the text of the conclusion of the passage is uncertain, but there is no corruption in the part of the passage to be adduced. He holds that to maintain that the world was uncreated was a transgression of the sixth commandment, to be put on a level with a denial of the providential administration of the universe. Both opinions alike are the introduction of false and pernicious views regarding God and His eternity.<sup>2</sup> Now when it is kept in mind, as we have seen, that the denial of Providence was in his judgment not a matter for discussion or argument, but rather only for the punishment of the denier, there would seem to be little doubt as to what his opinion was. So, elsewhere, he says that the earth could not make itself, so that it could not be the cause of itself.<sup>3</sup> It may at least be claimed that the other evidence should be read in the light of these positive statements. With regard to the creation of man, he says incidentally that God may have formed man either of that which was absolutely non-existent or out of matter.<sup>4</sup> As he expresses no preference for either opinion, all that can be urged from the passage is that the conception—so far as man was concerned—of a creation from the non-existent was not altogether foreign to his thought. The terms applied to God Himself are opposed to a dualistic view of original principles. He is the absolutely First Principle, and He alone is unbegotten.<sup>5</sup> Himself without beginning, He is the perfect beginning of the universe, the maker of the beginning.<sup>6</sup> Can there be more than one Unbegotten?

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>145</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>147</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., viii. 9<sup>28</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 16<sup>74</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 12<sup>81</sup>; vi. 7<sup>58</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., iv. 25<sup>162</sup>.

Can there be two first principles? If matter were a first principle, it, too, would be unbegotten; and the only difference between it and God would be the difference between an unconscious and a conscious first principle. But, on the contrary, Clement maintains, in spite of the maintenance of the opposite by some philosophers, that matter was not to be regarded as among first principles, as this would imply that there was more than one first principle. And he interprets a passage in the 'Timæus' as implying that the truly existent first principle was one. Even making allowance for the polemical element, if he did not accept the hypothesis of only one first principle, why should he thus have done violence to the interpretation of Plato?<sup>1</sup>

In speaking of the Marcionites, he says that they taught that evil was derived from matter, which was evil.<sup>2</sup> Matter, in the conception of Marcion, was thus a limit to the power of the God whom he called the Creator. Clement puts off the discussion of the question until he took up the question of the First Principles. This proposed section he never reached. But elsewhere he protests against the idea that the body as such, as being formed of matter, was evil by nature;<sup>3</sup> and he nowhere indicates that he regarded matter as being independent of God, as from its evil nature it must have been, since God is in no way the cause of evil. It is true that he nowhere says, in opposition to Marcion, that matter was created by God, and therefore good in itself; but he denies that it had anything to do with evil. It in no way fettered the action of the Almighty; it was absolutely under His control. This does not prove that in the opinion of Clement matter owed its origin to God; but it is more in harmony with the view that matter was not eternal, and, as far as it goes, confirms the statements already adduced.

One passage, in particular, creates a difficulty, and seems

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>89</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 3<sup>12</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 25<sup>164</sup>.

to support the affirmation of Photius. In speaking of the "rest" of God, he says that does not mean that God ceased from doing, for that were to cease to be God. In the case of God, "rest" means that He has ordained that the order of things which have come into being should be preserved inviolably, and that each of the things created should "rest" from the ancient disorder.<sup>1</sup> He says that all things came into being together from one essence by one Power. And then he asks, How could creation take place in time, seeing that time also came into being along with things that exist?<sup>2</sup> On the face of it, this might seem to reduce the work of the Creator to the Platonic rôle of bringing order out of disorder, to that of organising, not of creating, the universe. But it is quite consistent with the narrative in Genesis, which speaks first of a creation of the universe, and then of its ordering. And the "rest" of God refers to the end of the ordering. Nor does the reference to time coming into existence along with existent things involve dualism. No one argues more powerfully against the eternity of matter than Augustine. And yet in the very chapter in which he affirms that those who say that the world was eternal were raving in their impiety, he says almost in the language of Clement, that assuredly the world was not made in time but simultaneously with time.<sup>3</sup> So, by a timeless creation Clement did not mean that matter was eternal, but that creation, however he conceived it, was eternal. And his ground is that God must be conceived as having been eternally at work. From the context it is plain that it was not the question of the relation of matter

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Plato, Tim. 30 A. : *εἰς τάξιν αὐτὸ ἤγαγεν ἐκ τῆς ἀταξίας.*

<sup>2</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>142</sup> : *πῶς δ' ἂν ἐν χρόνῳ γένοιτο κτίσις, συγγενομένου τοῖς οὖσι καὶ τοῦ χρόνου;* Cf. vi. 16<sup>145</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> De Civit., xi. 4, 6 : "Procul dubio non est mundus factus in tempore, sed cum tempore."

to God, nor of God's relation to matter, that was in his thought, but the nature of the Divine working; and that he declares to be eternal. The essential thing is that matter, whether conceived as created in time or not, should not have come into existence independently of God; and of his view on that point Clement leaves us in no doubt. Taking into account, then, his own positive statements, his conception of God and His relation to the world, the method of creation presented, his attitude towards the teaching of Plato and Marcion, I am of opinion that Clement did not hold a dualistic theory of the origin of the universe.

The transcendence ascribed to God by Clement was in part due to his antagonism to pantheism. It is true that in his writings there are passages which, if they stood alone, might reasonably be held to imply a pantheistic conception of the universe. "The same Being is just and good, the true God, He who is Himself all things and the same in all things, because He is Himself God, the only God."<sup>1</sup> But from the context it is plain that he simply meant to emphasise the fact that God was the one reality, that He was at once the origin and the goal of all things, and that nothing was unrelated to, nor independent of, Him. So the phrases in the formal definitions already quoted<sup>2</sup> express the same thought, and at most are but another way of putting the scriptural conception of the divine omnipresence. Quite explicitly he says that it is not as a part of God that the Spirit is in each of us.<sup>3</sup> That such is the force of the apparently pantheistic passage is proved by his repeated repudiation of the doctrine of the Stoics that the divine nature permeated all matter, even the vilest. "How," he asks, "can any one who has known God endure the saying that we are a part of God, and the same in essence with Him, when he has come to know his own life and the evils

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> See pp. 68, 69.

<sup>3</sup> Str., v. 13<sup>88</sup>.



by which we are defiled? For, in that case—which it is not lawful to say,—God would sin in part, if the parts are parts of the whole; and if they are not complementary, they could not be parts.”<sup>1</sup> To pantheism, then, in this crude material form, Clement is opposed alike on metaphysical and ethical grounds.

The same applies to his criticism of anthropomorphism. It is partly in antagonism to the gross anthropomorphism of Greek mythology that he strips God of all attributes that suggest His kinship by nature with man. “Most men entertain the same opinion of the blessed and incorruptible God as of themselves.”<sup>2</sup> The Greeks represent their gods as human in passions as well as human in form. Each nation paints the shapes of its gods after its own likeness—“the Ethiopian, as Xenophanes says, black and snub-nosed; the Thracians, with red hair and blue eyes.”<sup>3</sup> But if the divine nature were human in form, it would need like man food and covering and a house and all things belonging to these.<sup>4</sup> But God is not like any created thing in form, and does not hunger so as to desire food.<sup>5</sup> The Greek satirists themselves represent the worshippers as supposing that they could cheat the gods whom they professed to worship, or make them connive at their guilt.<sup>6</sup> To seek to localise in a shrine the Divine Being who cannot be circumscribed by place is an absurdity.<sup>7</sup> It is superfluous to set up any statue of Him as an object of worship,<sup>8</sup> still more, to offer to Him any material sacrifice. We honour God by prayer.<sup>9</sup> The only recompense that we can offer is a thankful and submissive heart as a kind of house-rent for our dwelling here below.<sup>10</sup> Not only must all gross

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 16<sup>74</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 11<sup>68</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 4<sup>22</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 5<sup>29</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 6<sup>30</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>15</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 5<sup>29</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 11<sup>74</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., vii. 6<sup>31</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Prot., xi. 11<sup>5</sup>.

anthropomorphism be set aside, but no passion or affection of any kind must be ascribed to Him. "God is passionless, and without anger, and without desire. He is not fearless in the sense that He does not turn aside from things terrible, nor temperate in the sense that He rules over desire; for the nature of God could not fall into anything terrible; nor does He shun timidity, just as He will not even desire that He may rule over desire."<sup>1</sup> To desire to rule over desire would imply the possibility of being conquered by it, and such possibility would be a moral imperfection in God. For a kindred reason the forgiveness of God must not be limited by any conception of human forgiveness.<sup>2</sup> In his eagerness to avoid any appearance of anthropomorphism, Clement uses language which on the face of it ascribes to God an ethical transcendence parallel to the metaphysical transcendence. In formal antagonism to his own ideal of ethical assimilation to God, he energetically condemns the thesis of the Stoics, that the virtue of God and man is identical.<sup>3</sup> But he nowhere denies that they were related; on the contrary, he says that the mercy of God alone fulfils the ideal of mercy.<sup>4</sup> To this conception of a passionless God it was objected that joy and mercy are ascribed in the Scriptures to God, and that they are passions of the soul.<sup>5</sup> God, rejoins Clement, only rejoices in the sense in which Christ could say, "I was hungry," making the joy of men His own. But surely, we may ask, whence came the impulse to such identification, to such oneness? The language of Clement is due to his desire to keep his idea of God free from any human element—in particular, from such passions as were an essential constituent of

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 23<sup>151</sup>: *θεὸς δὲ ἀπαθὴς, ἄθυμός τε καὶ ἀνεπιθύμητος.*

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 24<sup>153</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>114</sup>; vii. 14<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 16<sup>73</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 16<sup>72</sup>.

human nature, and to represent Him as "alone in and unto Himself, not standing in need of any creatures which He hath made."<sup>1</sup> But do we not read in Scripture of the hand and feet and mouth and eyes of God, of His going out and His coming in, of His anger and threatening?<sup>2</sup> Such expressions, he answers, are to be interpreted allegorically, or to be regarded as a concession to human weakness. It was not possible for the Divine nature to be described as it is, but only in so far as it was possible for men fettered by sense to hear.<sup>3</sup> In brief, God spake to men as they were able to hear it; alike in form and substance His revelation of Himself was affected by the material embodiment; the measure of His power to unveil Himself was determined by the capacity of man to receive.

God is omniscient. He does not, like man, judge the soul from external movement nor from the result.<sup>4</sup> He hears not only the voice but the thought. He is "all ear, all eye," if we may use such an expression.<sup>5</sup> He knows all things,—not merely the things which are but those which shall be, and how they shall be. He sees the soul naked within. As in an amphitheatre He sees the whole and each thing at a glance.<sup>6</sup> The Pythagorean saying, "Pray with the voice," did not mean that God did not hear those who speak in silence; but that our prayer should be such as no one would be ashamed to offer, though many were to hear it.<sup>7</sup> The power of God, like light, instantly sees through the whole soul.<sup>8</sup>

God is omnipotent. He is the universal King and Almighty Father, the Creator of all things.<sup>9</sup> There is nothing which God cannot do.<sup>10</sup> That God is "consuming fire" is to be interpreted of His power. As fire is

<sup>1</sup> Westminster Confession, c. ii. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 11<sup>68</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., ii. 16<sup>72</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>101</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>37</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 17<sup>156</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iv. 26<sup>171</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>37</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>18</sup>.

Pæd., i. 3<sup>7</sup>.

the most powerful of the elements, and gains mastery of all things, so also God is all-powerful. As fire is superior to the elements, so is the Almighty to the gods, and powers, and principalities. He is a power strong and irresistible, to which nothing is impossible.<sup>1</sup>

Clement exhibits with great emphasis the absolute goodness of God. This goodness is based by him on the nature of God Himself, on the nature of the Good, with which God is identified, and on the teaching of Scripture. God does good, He does all good, and that voluntarily and designedly. He did not begin at some period to be Lord and good, being always what He is. His goodness is an essential constituent of His nature. Hence He will never cease to do good.<sup>2</sup> If he were to cease to do good, He would cease to be good.<sup>3</sup> For what is the use of Good that does not operate?<sup>4</sup> All benefits belonging to life in its highest sense proceed from the sovereign God. He does good in a manner peculiarly His own. He is occupied with unceasing acts of beneficence, and remains unalterably in the same condition of goodness.<sup>5</sup> But this goodness is not to be conceived as akin to any physical attribute; it is no mechanical goodness, but the goodness of a loving personality. Goodness, no doubt, is as natural to God as warmth to fire—but with an important difference. Unlike the fire, He is not involuntarily good.<sup>6</sup> He does not do good by necessity, but of His free choice He benefits those who of themselves turn to Him.<sup>7</sup> He is the adversary of no one, and the enemy of no one.<sup>8</sup> His goodness is seen in His providential care, which is at once supreme and good, universal and individual.<sup>9</sup> It is ever at work, and is like the care of a shepherd for

<sup>1</sup> Ec. Pr., 26.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>104</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>141</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vii. 12<sup>69</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>141</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>42</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., i. 27<sup>178</sup>; i. 11<sup>52</sup>.

his sheep or a king for his subjects.<sup>1</sup> All things are arranged by the Lord of the universe, both generally and particularly, with a view to the safety of the universe.<sup>2</sup> The goal of the ineffable Goodness is always as far as possible to bring the nature of existing things up to that which is better.<sup>3</sup> He loves everything that exists; in particular does He love man, the noblest of created objects.<sup>4</sup> The argument from the nature of the good is to the following effect. That which does service to another is better than that which does not do service. But nothing is better than the good; therefore, the good does service. God, therefore, as the Good, does all possible service to man. Now, that which does service of set purpose is better than that which does not do service of set purpose. But nothing is better than God. Therefore, God does service of set purpose to man,—that is, He is concerned for him, has a care of him. He has proved it by giving to him as Tutor the Word, the fellow-worker of the love of God to man.<sup>5</sup> That the God and Father of our Lord Jesus is good, is expressly declared by the Word. “He is kind to the unthankful and the evil.” “Be merciful, as your Father is merciful.” “None is good but my Father in heaven.” “My Father makes His sun to shine upon all.” “My Father sends rain on the just and on the unjust.”<sup>6</sup> In view of his conception of the goodness of God, Clement held that no one could be condemned for disobedience to the Gospel who had not had an opportunity of hearing the call of the Gospel; that, if this were not so, the goodness of God was impugned; and that the will of God, which was disciplinary and operative, would save all, whether they lived before the advent or not, who turned to Him.<sup>7</sup> The world, then, is the

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 17<sup>157</sup>, 158.<sup>2</sup> Ib. vii. 2<sup>12</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 17<sup>154</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>63</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 8<sup>62</sup>, 63.<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 8<sup>72</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Str., vi. 6<sup>51</sup>, 52.



best of all possible worlds. "There could not be any better government of man, nor one more in harmony with the nature of God, than that which has been ordained."<sup>1</sup> To the obstacles that stood in the way of the acceptance of this conception of the absolute goodness of God, Clement was not blind. Two problems were thrust upon him. How explain the existence of evil in a world governed by absolute goodness associated with unlimited power, where nothing takes place without the will of the Lord of the universe?<sup>2</sup> How explain the seeming indifference of God to the practical working of evil as exhibited in the temptations to which Christians are exposed, and, above all, in the apparent triumph of unrighteousness in the persecution and death of the followers of Christ?

To begin with, in its essential nature evil has no relation to God. It has no independent existence or reality apart from the activity of some doer of evil; it has no objective basis in matter.<sup>3</sup> "But, by not preventing it, does He not cause it?" No, argues Clement, that is a mistaken conception of the nature of causality. Causality is not a negative but a positive concept—it implies activity. Accordingly, that which prevents is a cause, but that which does not prevent is not a cause. A cause is only a cause when conceived in relation to an effect. Where there is no effect there is no cause at work. That which does not prevent produces no effect, therefore it is not a cause. To these logical principles, laid down in the last book of the *Stromateis*,<sup>4</sup> he has given application in an earlier discussion of the relation of God to evil. To those who kept declaring that that which does not prevent is a cause,—that, for example, he who did not quench a fire at the outset was responsible for the subsequent conflagration, and was

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 2<sup>8</sup>.    <sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 12<sup>86</sup>.    <sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 13<sup>98, 94</sup>.    <sup>4</sup> Ib., viii. 9<sup>27, 92</sup>.

punished by the law accordingly.—Clement replies in accordance with the above principles that the notion of causality is in doing, enacting, and acting; that that which does not prevent is imperative and stands in no logical relation to that which comes into being. As well say that the wound was not caused by the dart but by the shield which did not prevent its entrance. To prevent is a causal relation; not to prevent is not a causal conception.<sup>1</sup> "The responsibility lies with him who makes choice; God is not responsible." This saying of Plato,<sup>2</sup> repeated more than once by Clement,<sup>3</sup> had already been applied by Justin in elucidation of the same problem, and had virtually become a watchword in early Apologetics. In a like spirit Basilides had declared, "I will affirm anything rather than affirm that Providence is evil." So far Clement would have agreed with him. But his solution that individual punishment must always be held to imply individual sin, and that men were punished here for sins which they had committed in a previous state of existence, is set aside by Clement as no solution. It only pushes the question of the relation of Providence to evil a stage backwards, and is entirely opposed to the fact that it is wholly within our power to say whether we shall confess by martyrdom or not; and on such a hypothesis there is no place for faith in God or love to man, nor for moral praise or censure.<sup>4</sup> The question was forced on Clement, not in a theoretical but in a practical form, partly in its bearing on the inner life of the individual Christian, partly in its bearing on the question of persecution. When it is said in Scripture that "God tried them," all that is meant is that, in order to test them and to put the tempter to shame, He permitted them to be tried. He permits temptation, because we must be saved

<sup>1</sup> *Str.*, i. 17<sup>22, 23</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Str.*, i. 1<sup>4</sup>; *ib.* 23<sup>20</sup>, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Plato, *Rep.*, x. 617 E.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, *ib.* 12<sup>22, 23</sup>.

of ourselves, in order to put to confusion him who has tempted and failed, to confirm those within the Church, and to have regard to the conscience of those who admire our endurance.<sup>1</sup> "If God cares for you," was the retort of the heathen persecutors, "why are you persecuted and slain?" This was a problem that was not new in a sense, but was specially insistent, when the Christian conception of an Almighty and All-holy God was promulgated and maintained. Hence its recurrence in Psalmist and Prophet.<sup>2</sup> It was no problem to polytheism or pantheism or to a monotheism which was not rooted in Christian ground. To the Christian consciousness, is the virtual reply of Clement, there is nothing arbitrary in the persecution, so far as God is concerned. It is in accordance with the prediction of the Lord Himself, who by such prediction trained us to fortitude. To say that evil-doers justly undergo punishment is an involuntary tribute to Christians who are punished for the sake of righteousness. Moreover, it is no hardship for us to be set free by death and go to the Lord, always provided that our witness by martyrdom is grounded on love.<sup>3</sup> As for the injustice of the judge, that in no way touches the Providence of God. There must be no interference with his freedom of action. He must not be reduced to a mere puppet, like a lifeless instrument, receiving impulses from an external cause.<sup>4</sup> In harmony with his views on causality, Clement solves this problem in the same way as the general question. Such persecution takes place without the prevention of God. For the fact of non-prevention, thus interpreted, saves both His providence and His goodness.<sup>5</sup> We may not say that the activity of God produces afflictions, but we may fitly

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 12<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 11<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 12<sup>86</sup>. τοῦτο γὰρ μόνον σφίζει καὶ τὴν πρόνοιαν καὶ τὴν ἀγαθότητα τοῦ θεοῦ.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. 76, &c.; Mal. iii.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 11<sup>78, 79</sup>.

be persuaded that He does not prevent those who cause afflictions, and that He transforms the daring deeds of His enemies into good.<sup>1</sup> In brief, the force of the reply of Clement may be put thus: Postulate freedom on the part of man, and the possibility of the misuse of freedom, and therefore the possibility of evil, at once emerges. Freedom to disobey is the necessary correlate of freedom to obey; and the choice lies between a mechanical goodness without freedom and freedom with the possibility of disobedience. The latter alternative is alone worthy of God and man. By bestowing freedom on man, God voluntarily, so far as man is concerned, put a limit on His own omnipotence; and He can only show that evil is not independent of Him nor indifferent to Him, by transforming it into good.

With this essential goodness of God all the other attributes and actions of God are in harmony. The controversy raised by Marcion led Clement to touch specially on the relation of the Divine justice to the Divine goodness. Marcion had sought to explain the difference between the representation of God in the Old Testament and that in the New Testament by ascribing the origin of the Old Testament to a subordinate God whose essential nature was justice, and the New Testament to the Supreme God whose essential nature was goodness. He assumed, therefore, that justice and goodness were irreconcilable attributes. "The economy of God," says Clement, "is just."<sup>2</sup> Punishment by God does not arise from anger. Its goal is justice. It is not expedient that justice should be ignored for our sake.<sup>3</sup> The same Lord who in the Gospel speaks of His Father as alone good, addresses Him in prayer as the "just Father."<sup>4</sup> He who is truly God is just and good. The justice of God in His censure of evil does not create the transgression, any more than the physician is the cause

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 12<sup>87</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>71</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> John xvii. 25.

of the fever which he points out; it only acts like a mirror which reveals to an ugly man the fact and the measure of his ugliness. God is good for His own sake, and just also for our sakes, and that because He is good.<sup>1</sup> The justice of God is good, and His goodness is just.<sup>2</sup> The Incarnation, which is the measure of the love of God to man, is at the same time an exhibition of His justice.<sup>3</sup>

From the fact that Clement regards justice as indissolubly related to goodness, it follows that he regards all punishment of men by God as disciplinary and remedial. God corrects men as a teacher or parent corrects his children. In His punishment of disobedience there is no element of vengeance, for vengeance is retaliation for evil, sent for the advantage of him who takes the revenge; but He corrects for the public and private good of those who are corrected.<sup>4</sup> Nor is He eager to execute His threatenings. He is not like a serpent which bites its prey as soon as it fastens upon it.<sup>5</sup> He chastens for three causes, all of which have a disciplinary end. He chastens for the sake of the man who is chastened, that he may rise superior to his former self; he chastens by way of example to others, that by such admonition they may be driven back from sin before sinning; and in the case of the man who has suffered wrong, He chastens the wrong-doer that the wronged person may not become an object of contempt and a fit subject for being wronged.<sup>6</sup> All punishment is medicine. If a physician who removes some disease is a benefactor, is he not more so who removes some injustice from the soul? If he who cuts or cauterises a diseased part of the body is called saviour and healer, why not the Physician of the souls of men? Whether God em-

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 9<sup>88</sup>; *Str.*, vii. 12<sup>73</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 8<sup>62</sup>; i. 9<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 8<sup>68</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Str.*, vi. 14<sup>109</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> *Str.*, vii. 16<sup>102</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> *Str.*, iv. 24<sup>154</sup>.



plays mercy or reproof, His aim is the salvation of the reproved.<sup>1</sup> In God the affection of anger, if it be right to call admonition by such a name, is inspired by love to man. He condescends to emotion for the sake of man.<sup>2</sup> Herein is the legitimate function of fear and threatening. It is but the application of spiritual medicine to the varying temperament of His children. The true, the ideal, motive of Christian life is love; but there are some who will turn to Him from fear, while they would spurn His love.<sup>3</sup>

His conception of the absolute goodness of God seems to be inconsistent, however, with the manner in which he represents God's relation to man. In opposition to the teaching of the Gnostics, Clement lays down that "God has no natural relation to man,<sup>4</sup> as the founders of heresy will have it. . . . God, who is by nature rich in pity because of His goodness, takes care of us who are neither parts of Him nor by nature His children. What is more—this is the greatest index of the goodness of God, that though our relation to Him be such, and though we are by nature entirely estranged, He nevertheless cares for us. Animals have a natural affection for their offspring, and persons who are like-minded from intercourse become friends. But rich is the mercy of God to us who are not related to Him in anything—neither in our essence, I mean, nor in nature, nor in the specific part of our essence, but only in this that we are the work of His will; and the man who by discipline has won the knowledge of the truth He calls to the adoption of sons, which is the greatest advance of all."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i., 8<sup>72</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 8<sup>74</sup>: ἀλλὰ καὶ τὸ ἐμπαθὲς τῆς ὀργῆς, εἰ δὴ ὀργὴν τὴν νοουθεσίαν αὐτοῦ χρὴ καλεῖν, φιλανθρωπὸν ἐστὶν εἰς πάθη καταβαίνοντος τοῦ θεοῦ διὰ τὸν ἄνθρωπον.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>86</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> ὁ θεὸς δὲ οὐδεμίαν ἔχει πρὸς ἡμᾶς φυσικὴν σχέσιν. Cf. Adum. in 1 John (Stäh., vol. iii. p. 213).  
Str., ii. 16<sup>74</sup>, <sup>75</sup>.

The apparent harshness of this passage is due in part to its polemical tendency, in part to his desire to free his conception of God from anything akin to pantheism, but mainly to his purpose of emphasising the unconditional freedom of the divine mercy. But, surely, the fact that man is in a special sense the work of absolute goodness creates a certain relationship. Is not he who is a son *in posse* internally related *in esse*? This he affirms elsewhere.<sup>1</sup> "All other things were made by the word of command alone, but man was formed by God Himself, and He breathed into him that which was peculiar to Himself."<sup>2</sup> The creation of man, of something capable of knowledge of God, seems to be represented in a sense as essential to the complete goodness of the Creator.<sup>3</sup> If the pity of God is unconditional, it is exhibited as the only true pity, and in a way that softens if it does not contradict His own thesis. Properly speaking, the greater pities the less; and man, as he is by nature man, cannot be greater than a man. But God is greater than a man in all things. If, then, the greater pities the less, God alone will pity us.<sup>4</sup> "O surpassing love to man!" he cries; "not as a teacher speaking to his scholars, not as a master to his servants, but as a gentle father, the Lord admonishes his sons."<sup>5</sup> "God of His great love to man lays hold of him to help him, as the mother-bird flies to one of her young when it falls out of the nest. And if a serpent open its mouth to swallow the little one, 'the mother flutters around, uttering cries of grief for her little ones';<sup>6</sup> and God the Father seeks His creature, and heals his transgression, and pursues the reptile, and takes up again the young one and urges it to fly up to the nest."<sup>7</sup> "His love to man is unspeakable, and His

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Str., v. 13<sup>87</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 27.<sup>3</sup> Ib.<sup>4</sup> Str., ii. 16<sup>78</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Prot., ix. 82.<sup>6</sup> Homer, Il., ii. 315.<sup>7</sup> Prot., x. 91.

hatred of evil is immeasurable.”<sup>1</sup> The Christian heart in Clement gained the victory over his metaphysical abstractions.

God is conceived as a Trinity. Clement not only uses the word, but again and again implies the doctrine, though it is not definitely formulated by him in a developed form. Referring to a passage in the ‘*Timæus*’ of Plato he says, “I understand nothing other than the Holy Trinity to be indicated.”<sup>2</sup> “Our treasure in an earthen vessel is guarded by the power of God the Father, and the blood of God the Son, and the dew of the Holy Spirit.”<sup>3</sup> At the close of the *Pædagogus* he prays “that all may praise with thanksgiving the alone Father and Son, the Son who is Tutor and Teacher, together with the Holy Ghost also.”<sup>4</sup> Of the work of the Spirit in the Church and in the individual believer, as the inspirer of Holy Scripture, as the source of the higher life, Clement often speaks; but of the Spirit in Himself, and in relation to the Father and the Son, he says little. In the lost or unfinished treatises on Prophecy and the Soul he intended to discuss the question of the method in which the Holy Spirit was distributed and His nature. But though the doctrine of the Trinity is in the background of his thought, he nowhere, like his contemporary Tertullian, discusses the relation of the Persons in the Trinity to one another. Though in most cases the comparative absence of incidental allusions to a doctrine cannot be pressed, in the case of a writer so discursive as Clement it is a feature that cannot be treated as without significance; and the conclusion would seem to be that the question in itself was of little interest to him, and was only of importance on its speculative and practical

<sup>1</sup> Prot., x. 104.

<sup>3</sup> Q. D., 34. Cf. *Pæd.*, i. 6<sup>42</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>103</sup>; Tim., 41 A.

<sup>4</sup> *Pæd.*, iii. 12<sup>101</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 13, 29.

side in its bearing on the fact and the doctrine of the Incarnation of the Word.

What is of permanent value in this doctrine of God presented by Clement with the view of winning over to the Christian faith the cultivated Greeks of Alexandria? It contains many noble elements. In representing the knowledge of God as the true life of man and the possibility of its attainment as the goal of all lofty aspiration, he lays down the basis that underlies all positive religious life. At the same time, he begets a sense of reverence within us by reminding us that, apart from the manifold revelations of the Word, the Father of the universe is an unknown God, and that even with His revelation we can but touch the hem of His garment. It gives a place to the manifestation of God in nature as well as in the universal consciousness of mankind. If in setting aside all possibility of a pantheistic conception of God, he ascribes to Him a transcendence which seems to remove Him absolutely from the range of our vision, and out of all relation to us, he at the same time represents Him as immanent, as eternally operative in His own world. Though some phrases in his writings may be interpreted as favouring a dualistic origin of the universe, the general direction of his thought is distinctly anti-dualistic; and it is possible to interpret such phrases in a way that is reconcilable with his otherwise emphatically reiterated teaching that the universe owes its existence and its continued existence to the One, Unbegotten, Almighty God. If partly under the influence of Plato, partly from a polemical interest in opposition to Gnosticism, he sometimes exaggerates the unrelatedness between the Creator and man, and seems to make the relation an external rather than an internal and moral relation, he establishes anew the natural relationship which he had seemed to disown by ascribing

to man a unique dignity among created things as alone "made in His image," and therefore capable of apprehending Him. In some other aspects this theology is of a type that we are wont to consider as primarily modern, whereas the modern and loftier conception of the nature and purposes of God may be said to be but a return to an earlier position which the Church ignored, superseded, or abandoned. In making not the sovereignty of God but His goodness—and that a goodness that had always been at work—as the central principle of his thought, in leading us to think of the justice of One who is good rather than of the goodness of One who is just, and thus bringing the punishment of sin in immediate relation to the goodness rather than to the sovereignty of God, Clement is in harmony with a strong current of thought in our own time. It may be that he is not free from the imperfect grasp of the sin of man in relation to the holiness of God that is sometimes associated with that mode of thought; but what his theology loses thereby in stately symmetry it gains in warmth and life.



## LECTURE IV.

## THE PERSON AND WORK OF CHRIST.

"IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him, and without Him was not anything made.<sup>1</sup> That which hath been made in Him was life; and the life was the light of men. . . . And the Word became flesh and tabernacled among us (and we beheld His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth." "No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten God<sup>2</sup> who is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him." "Even as Thou, Father, art in me and I in Thee." "He is the image of the invisible God, the First-born of all creation; for in Him were all things created. . . . All things have been created through Him and unto Him; and He is before all things, and in Him all things consist." "No man knoweth the Son but the Father, and no one knoweth the Father save the Son, and He to whom the Son shall have revealed Him." "God having of old time spoken to the fathers in the prophets by diverse portions and in divers manners, hath at the end of these days spoken unto us in His Son, whom

<sup>1</sup> So, like the Ante-Nicene fathers generally, Clement divides the sentence.

<sup>2</sup> So Clement reads in John i. 18.

He appointed heir of all things, through Whom also He made the worlds: Who being the effulgence of His glory and the impress of His substance, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had made purification of sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high." "That which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we beheld, and our hands handled, concerning the Word of Life—and the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and declare unto you the eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us."<sup>1</sup> The Christology of Clement is an endeavour to make explicit the conceptions that underlie these statements. A keen and restless spirit to whom the truth was no external possession, but a part of his very being, to whom the injunction, "Seek and ye shall find," came with special insistence, could not be satisfied without speculation on the meaning of the words and seeking to elaborate their contents. And that that elaboration should have been cast in the mould of his earlier teaching, and to that extent have been modified thereby, is merely what might have been expected. He was not called upon to discard the positions of his pre-Christian days, unless so far as they were inconsistent with the Christian standpoint. A change of attitude involved no breach of intellectual continuity. The only question is, Was the Christian teaching so modified in the process that it became inconsistent with the primary source or with a legitimate development of it? To seek to bring his thought into perfect conformity with the formulas of a later age, or to expect that he should have anticipated such formulas, would be an absurd anachronism. Keeping in view his liberal attitude towards the pre-Christian

<sup>1</sup> John i. 1-4, 14, 18; xvii. 21. Col. i. 15, 16, 17. Luke x. 22. Heb. i. 1-3, 1 John i. 1, 2.

history of mankind, the width as well as the limitations of his individuality, all that we can expect is, that he shall witness in general outlines to the teaching of the Church of his time. In view, further, of the measure in which individual expressions may have been determined in part by his polemical aim, in part by his strong bias towards eclecticism, and in view of "the mystic and turgid rhetoric"<sup>1</sup> to which he at times gives way, it may not be possible to obtain a presentation of his doctrine in all respects consistent and harmonious.

Clement has himself distinctly set forth the essential points in the teaching of the Church with reference to Christ and the main questions which arise in connection with it. "The whole economy which prophesied concerning the Lord appears a parable to those who have not known the truth: when one says and the rest hear, that the Son of God, the Son of Him who made the universe, assumed flesh and was conceived in the womb of the Virgin, in so far as His sensible flesh was made; and subsequently, as was the case, suffered and rose again, being to the Jews a stumbling-block and the Greeks foolishness."<sup>2</sup> "It has escaped their notice that we must truly believe in the Son that He is the Son, and that He came, and how, and for what, and concerning His passion; and we must know who is the Son of God."<sup>3</sup> The points here detailed suggest order of treatment.

Who, then, is the Son of God? What is the teaching of Clement as to the Pre-Incarnate Word?

According to him, fatherhood is an inalienable attribute of the Divine Being. The Son must therefore have been eternally begotten, for fatherhood and sonship are correlative conceptions. "Along with the fact that God is Father, He

<sup>1</sup> Ritter, 'Geschichte der christlichen Philosophie,' vol. i. p. 424.

<sup>2</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>127</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>1</sup>.

is the Father of the Son."<sup>1</sup> The one thing which is unoriginated is the almighty God; and there is only one First-begotten.<sup>2</sup> The beginning of generation is not separated from the beginning of the Creator. When it is said, "That which was from the beginning," the reference is to the generation, without beginning, of the Son who co-existed with the Father. The word "was" is indicative of His eternity which had no beginning. So also the Word, that is the Son, who, according to equality of substance, consists one with the Father, is eternal and uncreate.<sup>3</sup> The Son is in the Father, and the Father in the Son.<sup>4</sup> The creation of the world is assigned indifferently to the Father and the Son.<sup>5</sup> The essential attributes of deity are assigned to both. As God is almighty, so is the Word.<sup>6</sup> As God inspects all things, so does the Word.<sup>7</sup> As God is love, that which He begat was love.<sup>8</sup> As the Father is perfect, so is the Son.<sup>9</sup> As God is good, so of necessity the Word must be.<sup>10</sup> He is a genuine Son of God.<sup>11</sup> Others are but sons by adoption, and cannot be equal in point of subsistence to that which is by nature.<sup>12</sup> He is the true, only-begotten, the express image of the glory of the universal king and Almighty Father.<sup>13</sup> He is timeless and without beginning, the beginning and first-fruits of existing things.<sup>14</sup> Before the foundation of the World He was the Counsellor of the Father, the Wisdom in which the Almighty God rejoiced.<sup>15</sup> This Son is the Word of the Father, nay, one with the Father.<sup>16</sup> He was before the morning-star.<sup>17</sup> He

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>1</sup>. Cf. Adum. in 1 Joan.; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 210: "Patris appellatione significat, quoniam et filius semper erat sine initio."

<sup>2</sup> Str., vi. 7<sup>58</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Adum. in 1 Joan i. 1; Stäh., vol. iii. pp. 209, 210.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 7<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 8<sup>73</sup>, &c.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iii. 7<sup>39</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., iii. 10<sup>69</sup>; Pæd., iii. 12<sup>101</sup>, 8<sup>44</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Q. D., c. 37.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>25</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Str., i. 18<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., ii. 17<sup>77</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>18</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Ib., vii. 1<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>15</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>7</sup>; Prov. viii. 30.

<sup>16</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Prot., i. 6.

was in the beginning and before the beginning.<sup>1</sup> He is the image of God.<sup>2</sup> He is the first principle of the universe, and fashioned all things that came into existence after Himself.<sup>3</sup> He was the Creator of the world and man, is the leader of the universe, and the guide of all mankind.<sup>4</sup> He is the face of God, the Word by whom God is manifested and made known.<sup>5</sup> "The best thing on earth is the most devout man; and the best thing in heaven is the angel who is nearest in place to God, the partaker already in a purer way of the eternal and blessed life. But the nature of the Son who is nearest to Him, who alone is the Almighty One, is the most perfect, and most holy, and most sovereign, and most princely, and most kingly, and most beneficent. This is the highest supremacy which orders all things in accordance with the Father's will and holds the helm of the universe in the best possible way, performing all things with unwearied and tireless power, beholding the secret thoughts of God through His operations. For from His own watch-tower the Son of God never departs, is never divided nor severed, changes not from place to place; existing everywhere at all times, and being circumscribed nowhere; 'all mind, all eye,' all light of the Father, seeing all things, hearing all things, knowing all things, with power scrutinising the powers."<sup>6</sup> His pre-incarnate activity was universal in its range. The progressive education of humanity was His distinctive work. It was He who gave philosophy to the Greeks.<sup>7</sup> It was He who acted as Tutor to the people of Israel, who appeared to Abraham and Jacob. It was He who by signs and wonders in Egypt and in the desert incited the people to salvation. It was He who spoke by Moses and all the prophets.<sup>8</sup> So

<sup>1</sup> Prot., i. 7<sup>1</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., x. 98.<sup>3</sup> Str., v. 6<sup>38</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>100</sup>; i. 7<sup>55</sup>; i. 7<sup>56</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>57</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Str., vii. 2<sup>5</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>11</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Pæd., i. 7<sup>56, 58</sup>.



far, the teaching of Clement may claim to have scriptural authority for its content and form, or to be a legitimate deduction from it. But there are other elements that seem irreconcilable either with Scripture or with his own fundamental positions. In some cases he speaks of the Word in terms that suggest an attribute of God rather than a distinct personality.<sup>1</sup> There are passages in which the distinction of persons in the Godhead is so minimised that he can be charged with Sabellianism.<sup>2</sup> There are passages in which the equality of the persons is so lost sight of that he seems to favour subordinationism.<sup>3</sup>

These apparent waverings and inconsistencies are minor offences compared with the "altogether impious and fabulous statements" that Photius found in the 'Hypotyposes,' among which were the degradation of the Son of God to the rank of a thing created, and the hypothesis that it was not the Word of the Father but a subordinate Word that became incarnate.<sup>4</sup> The supposition, suggested by Photius himself and supported by some expositors of the teaching of Clement, that the writings of Clement had been interpolated in a heretical sense, may be set aside; and there can be little doubt that Photius found in the 'Hypotyposes' statements which could be interpreted in harmony with this charge. He had no bias against Clement, and speaks of his errors more in sorrow than in anger. The question is, therefore, whether Photius was right in his interpretation; and in our ignorance of all the passages but one on which he based his charge, that question must be determined by the extent to which they find complete or partial confirmation in the extant writings. The presumption that he may have erred is strengthened by the fact that he certainly misunderstood the meaning of the one passage which he quotes in sup-

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 87.

<sup>3</sup> Str., vii. 27.

<sup>4</sup> Cod. 109.

port of his thesis. As to the first point. Zahn, who on this, as on the other criticisms made by Photius, supports his accuracy, calls attention to a few passages in the writings of Clement that may be adduced in support of the contention of Photius.<sup>1</sup> Clement repeatedly identifies the Word with the Wisdom of God, and yet he refers to Wisdom as the first-created of God;<sup>2</sup> while in one passage he attaches the epithet "First-created,"<sup>3</sup> and in another "First-begotten," to the Word.<sup>4</sup> But this seems to be rather a question of language than a question of doctrine. At a later date a sharp distinction was drawn between "first-created" and "first-born" or "first-begotten";<sup>5</sup> but no such distinction was drawn in the time of Clement, who with the Septuagint rendering of a passage in Proverbs before him could have had no misgiving as to the use of these terms.<sup>6</sup> "We find nothing in Clement," says Dorner, "about the subordination or creation of the Son."<sup>7</sup> That is, perhaps, putting the matter too strongly. But it may be confidently said that the evidence adduced in support of the statement of Photius is far from cogent, and in no way counterbalances the evidence of the positive statements in the writings of Clement to the opposite effect.

As to the second point. According to Photius, Clement taught that there were two "Words," the less of whom appeared to men, or rather not even He. In proof he quotes the following: "The Son is called the Word, being of the same name with the Word of the Father, but it is not

<sup>1</sup> Supplementum Clementinum, pp. 141-147.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>89</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ex. Theod., c. 20.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vi. 7<sup>58</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> See Suicer's Thesaurus on πρωτόκτιστος.

<sup>6</sup> κύριος ἐκτίσέν με ἀρχὴν ὁδῶν αὐτοῦ. Prov. viii. 22. Cf. Ex. Theod., 20. τὸ γὰρ πρὸ ἐωσφόρου ἐγέννησά σε, οὕτως ἐξακούομεν ἐπὶ τοῦ πρωτοκτίστου θεοῦ λόγου.

<sup>7</sup> Person of Christ, vol. i. p. 287.

this that became incarnate. Nor, indeed, is it the Word of the Father, but a certain power of God, an emanation, as it were, of His Word, that has become 'nous,' and pervaded the hearts of men."<sup>1</sup> If this be the correct way of dividing the sentence,<sup>2</sup> there is no reference in the second part to the Incarnation, but only to the indwelling of "nous," conceived as an emanation of the Word, in the hearts of men. Both statements seem to be in answer to the same objection, which appears to have been urged by some one against the Incarnation of the Word, that this would imply that God was in that case separated from, or without, His Word (Reason). The reply of Clement is to the effect that a distinction must be drawn between the reason that was immanent in God and the Word which was a Person—the Son. Zahn thinks that Photius was wrong in supposing that Clement denied the manifestation even of the inferior Word, but seeks to show by passages taken from the undoubted writings that he was right in affirming that it was not the Word of the Father, but the Son-Word, that became incarnate. He points to the fact that Clement makes a sharp distinction between the Son and Word who was begotten or created before the rest of creation and the alone Unbegotten God and Father, that he names this not rarely a divine power, that he says that the Word who appeared incarnate in Christ was not only the mediator of the Old Testament Revelation but the source of all reason and morals, the one true Teacher of all humanity. But are such characteristics irreconcilable with the conception that it was the one Word that became incarnate? "The Word of the Father of the universe," says Clement, "is not the 'uttered word,'<sup>3</sup> but the wisdom and most manifest kindness of God, and His power, too, which is almighty and

<sup>1</sup> Photius, Cod. 109.

<sup>2</sup> Zahn puts a , after "incarnate."

<sup>3</sup> λόγος προφορικός, St. v. 1<sup>6</sup>.

truly divine, and His almighty will." But surely Bethune-Baker is right when he says, "Clement seems to me to be certainly objecting to the term λόγος προφορικός as applied to the Son on the ground that it depreciates His dignity, and not, as Harnack and Zahn take it, himself sanctioning a distinction between the higher λόγος ἐνδιάθετος and the lower λόγοι προφορικοί."<sup>1</sup> "There lies here a polemic," says Dorner, "against the opinion that He is simply the spoken, empty word, and not rather intelligence, real, creative power."<sup>2</sup>

Another passage has to be examined in this connection. "An image of God is His Word, the genuine Son of 'nous,' the divine Word, the archetypal light of light; and an image of the Word is the true man, the 'nous' which is in man, who is therefore said to have been made in the 'image and likeness' of God."<sup>3</sup> This means, according to Zahn, that Clement teaches that the Word who became incarnate was not the Son of God the Father but the Son of the "nous" of the Father, and, therefore, clearly to be distinguished from the Word (reason) of God Himself; that the Son-Word was only the Son of the higher Word. But it seems to me that Clement uses "nous" not for the reason that was eternally immanent in God, but for God Himself. In the Stromateis he quotes from Plato to the effect that he who contemplates the ideas will live as a god among men, and he adds that "nous" is the place of ideas, and God is "nous."<sup>4</sup> On the whole, therefore, it is much more natural to suppose that Photius misinterpreted, not a part, but the whole of the passage which he cited from the 'Hypotyposes.' "The only safe canon of criticism is that which bids us inter-

<sup>1</sup> Bethune-Baker, 'History of Early Christian Doctrine,' p. 129.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. i. p. 289.

<sup>3</sup> Prot., x. <sup>98</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Plato, Soph., 216 B; Str., iv. 25<sup>155</sup>. Cf. Str., iv. 25<sup>162</sup>.

pret the less known in a sense in keeping with the more known.”<sup>1</sup>

So far in his teaching as to the Word we move in a Christian atmosphere. But there are passages which take us out of the sphere of Christian thought. When we read that the Platonic idea is a thought of God, and that the barbarians call this the Word of God, we see the perilous side of his eclecticism.<sup>2</sup> When we read that the Son is the “circle of all the powers rolled into one and formed into a unity,”<sup>3</sup> we are reminded of Neo-Platonic ways of thinking. Most important of all is the relation to Philo. In estimating the relation of the doctrine of the Word in Clement to that of Philo, two points have specially to be kept in view. On the one hand, as there is no doubt as to the dependence of Clement on Philo in some weighty matters of doctrine and criticism, other than his doctrine of the Word, the presumption is in favour of his dependence here. On the other hand, there are many points of affinity between the New Testament and Philo; and as Clement is saturated not only with the thoughts but with the words of the Scriptures, where Philo and the New Testament and Clement have common expressions, it is as probable that the New Testament was the primary source. “Image” (εἰκὼν), “impress” (χαρακτήρ), “high-priest” (ἀρχιερεύς), are found

<sup>1</sup> Bethune-Baker, p. 134. The passage from Photius is examined by Ziegler, ‘Die Logoschristologie des Cl. Al.,’ pp. 87-90. He puts the words ἀλλ’ οὐχ οὗτος ἐστὶν ὁ σὰρξ γενόμενος before λέγεται, and translates: “But it is not this” (that is, the “nous,” who is in the hearts of men) “that is the Incarnate Word, nor the Word of the Father, but a certain power of God, as it were an emanation of His reason, became ‘nous’ and pervaded the hearts of men.” All, therefore, that Clement here meant to explain was the relation of the human reason to the primal reason of God—namely, to affirm that “a certain power of God, an emanation of His reason, became ‘nous’ and pervaded the hearts of men.”

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 3<sup>16</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 25<sup>156</sup>. Cf. Aal. ‘Geschichte der Logosidee in der christlichen Literatur,’ pp. 393-429.



in all as designations of the Word; but from the context it would seem that it was the language of Scripture that floated before the mind of Clement.<sup>1</sup> There are numerous expressions common to both which are not found in the New Testament, such as τὸ ὄργανον τοῦ θεοῦ, ὁ πρωτόγονος θεοῦ υἱός;<sup>2</sup> and there are kindred expressions, such as ὁ δεύτερος θεός, in Philo, and τὸ δεύτερον αἴτιον in Clement, ὁ πρεσβύτατος θεοῦ υἱός in Philo, and τὸ πρεσβύτερον ἐν γενέσει in Clement.<sup>3</sup> In such cases the dependence is manifest, as the expressions are not only not in Scripture but unscriptural. On the other hand, there are many characteristic designations of the Word in Philo which are not employed by Clement, and in some cases he has substituted a New Testament term for the Philonic word. Thus, neither "shadow" (σκία) nor "divider" (τομεύς) is found in Clement; and the absence of the latter is all the more noteworthy as he loves to support his views by sayings of Heraclitus, from whom Philo borrowed the expression. Though he speculates much, like many others, in part in dependence on Philo, on the mystic meaning of the number "seven," he does not, as the latter, relate it to the Word. When Philo employs ἐρμηνεύς for the interpretative function of the Word, Clement, in accordance with New Testament usage, prefers ἐξηγητής.<sup>4</sup> The key-word παιδαγωγός is not found in Philo, nor is Clement's favourite designation of the Word as Σωτήρ. The matter, therefore, is not so simple as it seems, and it is surely an exaggeration to say that the foundation is not scriptural but Philonic, as if Clement accepted only the epithets and teaching applied in the Scriptures to the Word, in so far as they were in harmony with kindred epithets and teaching in Philo. The opposite

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 6<sup>38</sup>; vii. 3<sup>16</sup>; Prot. xii. 120. Cf. Col. i. 15; Heb. i. 1, iv. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Prot., i. 6; Str., vi. 7<sup>58</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., vii. 3<sup>16</sup>; vii. i. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 26<sup>169</sup>. Cf. John i. 18.

may with more reason be maintained. To the mind of Clement there was no contradiction or irreconcilability between the purely philosophical and the purely Christian elements in his conception of the Word. If so, the question is, What was the primary or assimilative principle? That Philonic conceptions had permeated Christian circles even in the first century, we see from the New Testament itself; but is there any evidence that thinkers of any school outside of Alexandria had become so imbued with the system of Philo, apart from its infiltration into Christian thought, that it occupied a prominent place in their teaching? Or, if such teachers existed, is there any evidence that Clement had sat at their feet? The fact that his eager spirit had no rest until he found Pantænus is against the supposition. A common use of the allegorical method of exegesis proves nothing, for such was common and inevitable, while as yet the Old Testament was the only authoritative collection of sacred books, if they were to be interpreted in a Christian sense. If, then, there be no evidence of the influence of this distinctive feature in the teaching of Philo in any teacher with whom it is probable that Clement had associated before his arrival in Alexandria, he would only learn to know the writings of Philo after his religious thought had been moulded on a definitely Christian basis, and he would read the works of Philo with Christian eyes rather than read Philonic conceptions into his Christian thought. No doubt this is largely a matter of hypothesis, but it is a hypothesis which finds powerful confirmation in the fact that to Clement the Incarnation of the Word—an impossible conception with Philo—was a fundamental fact and truth.

*"That He came, and how."* The Word who was with God, the Word by whom all things were made, "He who is in Him who truly is," has appeared. He, who as

Creator bestowed life upon us at first when He formed us, has appeared as a teacher, and taught us to live well, that as God he might afterwards bestow upon us eternal life.<sup>1</sup> Though despised in outward form, He was in reality adored. He truly is most manifest God. He was made equal to the Lord of the universe, because He was His son.<sup>2</sup> "If thou dost not believe the prophets, the Lord Himself will speak to thee," "who being in the form of God counted it not a prize to be on an equality with God, but emptied Himself," He, the compassionate God, eagerly longing to save man.<sup>3</sup> John, the herald of the Word, exhorted men to be ready for the advent of God the Christ.<sup>4</sup> The Son of God was conceived in the womb of the virgin.<sup>5</sup> The Lord Christ was the fruit of the virgin.<sup>6</sup> By this all generation has been sanctified.<sup>7</sup> The very Word has appeared as man. He alone is both—God and man.<sup>8</sup> A manifest mystery, God in man, and man God. The Mediator accomplishes the will of the Father. For He is the Word common to both, Son of God, but Saviour of men, His minister, our teacher.<sup>9</sup> He that ate from a homely bowl and washed the feet of the disciples was the unpresuming God and Lord of the universe.<sup>10</sup> He was God in the form of man.<sup>11</sup> So closely are the divine and the human interpenetrated that Clement assigns names and functions and attributes to the human side, that, strictly speaking, can only be applied to the divine side, and *vice versâ*. He applies the epithet "eternal" to Jesus.<sup>12</sup> Our Tutor is the holy God, Jesus, the Word who is the guide of all humanity, the philanthropic God Himself.<sup>13</sup> The Word poured forth His own blood for us.<sup>14</sup> "Believe,

<sup>1</sup> Prot., i. 7.<sup>2</sup> Ib., x. 110.<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 8.<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 10.<sup>5</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>127</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>41</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Str., iii. 17<sup>102</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Prot., i. 7.<sup>9</sup> Pæd., iii. 1<sup>2</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., ii. 3<sup>38</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., i. 2<sup>4</sup>.<sup>12</sup> Prot., xii. 120.<sup>13</sup> Pæd., i. 7<sup>85</sup>.<sup>14</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>43</sup>.

O man, Him who is man and God. Believe, O man, in Him who suffered and is adored. Believe, ye slaves, in the living God who was dead. Believe, all ye of human kind, the only God of all. Believe, and receive salvation as a reward.”<sup>1</sup> The Word alone is sinless.<sup>2</sup> The Saviour surpassed all human nature.<sup>3</sup> He alone who for us assumed humanity is perfect in all things at once.<sup>4</sup> The relation of this perfection to His baptism had been a matter of controversy with the Gnostics in Alexandria. As God, He had nothing in addition to learn; yet, when “begotten in baptism” He received the illumination that is given in baptism. “If He were perfect, why was He, the Perfect One, baptised? It was necessary, they say, to fulfil the condition of His assumption of humanity. Most excellent. Coincidentally, then, with His baptism by John, He became perfect? Manifestly. He did not, then, learn anything from him? Certainly not. But He is perfected by the washing of baptism alone, and is sanctified by the descent of the Spirit? Such is the case.”<sup>5</sup> Clement, therefore, seems to solve the problem by distinguishing between the divine consciousness in Him to which nothing was unknown, and the human consciousness which received enlightenment in the act of baptism.<sup>6</sup>

In consequence of his interest being limited mainly to the teaching of the Lord, Clement takes little notice of the events in the life other than those of His birth, death, and resurrection. Incidents such as the crowning with thorns<sup>7</sup> or the anointing in Bethany<sup>8</sup> are only introduced for the teaching which they are held to symbolise. Though he professes to have little sympathy with such

<sup>1</sup> Prot., x. 106. Cf. Pæd., ii. 8<sup>73</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., iv. 12<sup>85</sup>; Pæd., i. 2<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., ii. 5<sup>21</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 21<sup>130</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>25</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Gore, ‘Dissertations on the Incarnation,’ p. 114.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>73</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>62</sup>.

investigations, he fixes the date of the birth of the Lord as having taken place on 18th November 2 B.C.<sup>1</sup> On account of the prophetic saying, adopted by Jesus, "He hath sent me to preach the acceptable year of the Lord," he concluded that the ministry of Jesus lasted only one year.<sup>2</sup>

On the ground of the rendering in the Septuagint,<sup>3</sup> he inferred that the Lord was unseemly in appearance. "He had no form nor beauty, but His form was without honour, defective as compared with other men." But this only brought out by way of contrast the spiritual beauty. "For who was better than the Lord? But it was not the beauty of the flesh visible to the eye that He exhibited, but the beauty of both soul and body, the beneficence of the soul, the immortality of the body."<sup>4</sup> This choice of a mean form of body was not without a purpose. Its aim was that no one in his admiration of the material beauty should lose sight of the spiritual teaching.<sup>5</sup> Was this body a real body or only an appearance? Among the charges that Photius brings against Clement is the averment that the Word did not really assume flesh, but only seemed to do so;<sup>6</sup> and in this charge he has been followed by others. Now, Clement himself refers to docetism as a heresy which, along with other heresies, must be rejected as out of harmony with the doctrine of the Church.<sup>7</sup> In quoting, in order to condemn, the opinions of Cassianus, he refers to him as the founder of the docetic heresy, and attributes his false teaching to the slandering of generation.<sup>8</sup> Could Clement,

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>145</sup>. "One hundred and ninety-four years, one month, and thirteen days before the death of Commodus." See Herzog, R.E. <sup>3</sup>, vol. xxi., p. 149.

<sup>2</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>145</sup>; Isa. lxi. <sup>2</sup>; Luke iv. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Isa. liii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., iii. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., vi. 6<sup>151</sup>. Cf. ib., iii. 17<sup>103</sup>. αἰδῆς δὲ ἐλήλυθεν καὶ ἄμορφος εἰς τὸ αἰδὲς καὶ ἀσώματον τῆς θείας αἰτίας ἀποβλέπειν ἡμᾶς διδάσκων.

<sup>6</sup> Cod. 109.

<sup>7</sup> Str., vii. 17<sup>108</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iii. 13<sup>91</sup>; iii. 17<sup>102</sup>.



then, have been guilty of teaching which was thus opposed to the rule of faith, and repugnant to him on moral grounds? *Prima facie*, it should be impossible; and it is certain that he could not have been so consciously. But in Clement we must always be prepared for apparent contradictions. Take the positive evidence. God, he says, proclaimed the good tidings in a body.<sup>1</sup> He showed His power in a body of flesh.<sup>2</sup> From His exceeding love to men the Saviour did not despise the susceptibility of the flesh of men, but invested Himself with it, and came for the common salvation of men.<sup>3</sup> For our sakes He took upon Him our flesh which is liable to suffering.<sup>4</sup> Having assumed flesh which by nature is susceptible of suffering, He trained it to the condition of passionlessness.<sup>5</sup> He assumed flesh that He might speak with the mouth of a man.<sup>6</sup> He is introduced in the Gospel as weary with toil.<sup>7</sup> When the prophet says, "Remember us, for we are dust,"<sup>8</sup> he is praying to the Lord—"Sympathise with us, for Thou hast known from Thine own experience of suffering the weakness of the flesh."<sup>9</sup> The evidence in favour of the real human nature of Christ might seem irresistible. But there is another side. One passage on which undue stress has been laid may be set aside. He speaks of the Word of God taking upon Him the mask of a man, and fashioning Himself in flesh, and acting the drama of human salvation: for He was a true champion and fellow-champion with the creature.<sup>10</sup> Does this mean that His earthly life was only of the nature of a dramatic performance? The second clause is against this contention. To begin with, the word rendered "mask" may also be rendered "person." The word "drama" does not involve unreality, for it is used

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 8<sup>66</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>140</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>6</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>7</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vii. 11<sup>61</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>85</sup>; John iv. 6.

<sup>8</sup> Ps. ciii. 14.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Prot., x. 110.

elsewhere of the gnostic who plays irreproachably the drama of life.<sup>1</sup> It might as well be urged because he speaks of captivating the Father with the spell of prayers,<sup>2</sup> that he looked upon prayer as a magical incantation, in spite of the singularly spiritual view of prayer that he sets forth.<sup>3</sup> But there are other passages which present greater difficulty. "In the case of the Saviour," he says, "it were ludicrous to suppose that the body as a body demanded the necessary aids in order to its continuance in life. For He ate not for the sake of the body which was held together by a holy energy, but in order that it might not enter into the minds of those who associated with Him to think otherwise about Him; as, of a truth, some afterwards supposed that He was manifested in appearance. But He was entirely passionless, inaccessible to any movement of emotion, whether of pleasure or pain."<sup>4</sup> "It is reported in the 'Traditions,'" he says elsewhere, "that John touching the external body of Christ sent his hand into the depths of it, and that the hardness of the flesh offered no resistance, but gave way to the hand of His disciple."<sup>5</sup> Unless this be interpreted of the resurrection-body of Christ, it is language which might well have been used by any adherent of docetism. As to the first passage. Little weight can be attached to the word "passionless" as a denial of true humanity, as to be passionless represents the ideal condition of the highest Christian type. On the face of it the passage seems to mean that Christ only ate and drank to prevent the disciples from giving way to docetic misunderstandings. Does not this indicate a humanity that was

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 11<sup>65</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Q. D., 41. *Λιτανείαις συνήθεσι μαγεύων τὸν πατέρα.*

<sup>3</sup> Cf. vii. 7<sup>39</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vi. 9<sup>71</sup>. Cf. Str., iii. 6<sup>51</sup>, where he quotes without disapproval a saying of Valentinus of an undoubted docetic type.

<sup>5</sup> Adum. in 1 Joan, vol. iii, p. 210 (Stäh.).

shadowy and unreal, a humanity that transcended earthly conditions, a manifestation akin to the theophanies of the Old Testament rather than a true incarnation? It has been suggested that the solution of the apparent conflict in the statements of Clement is to be found, not in denying the reality of the body of Christ, but by denying that He had a human soul, the place of which in Him was taken by the Word, and thus regarding Clement as a precursor of Apollinarianism.<sup>1</sup> But in view of his representation of the relation of soul and body, to deny the reality of the human soul of Christ was surely a graver form of docetism—if that be an appropriate word—than to deny the reality of His body. Moreover, Clement refers to the soul of Christ, and assumes its identity with the soul of man. “Our Tutor was irreproachable and passionless in soul. . . . He is to us a spotless image: to Him we must strive with all our strength to assimilate our soul.”<sup>2</sup> Must not the archetype be as the type? “By the precious blood with which the Lord bought us is meant the soul, pure through righteousness, which is offered to God.”<sup>3</sup> Further, it is a general principle with Clement that there is the closest possible relation between the person and mission of Christ and the nature of man; that what was to be saved by Him had to be assumed by Him and sanctified in His own person; and to this end He must have assumed a human soul as well as a body.<sup>4</sup> The wavering language is rather due to the fact that Clement approached the question of the person of Christ from the divine side, from that of the Word, and was think-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Gieseler, ‘*Commentatio qua Clementis Alexandrini et Origenis doctrinae de corpore Christi exponuntur*’ (1837). The passage (Paed., i. 5<sup>23</sup>) to which Dahne appeals as favouring docetism, and Gieseler as proving the contrary, is corrupt. Cf. Stäh.

<sup>2</sup> Paed., i. 2<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Adum. in 1 Pet., Stäh., vol. iii. p. 204.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Schwane, ‘*Dogmengeschichte*,’ p. 240. Cf. Ec. Pr., 23. τὸ γὰρ ὁμοιον τῷ ὁμοίῳ ἐξηπηρετεῖν κατάλληλον πρὸς τὴν ὁμοίαν σωτηρίαν.

ing not so much of the influence of the human on the divine as of the influence of the divine on the human; and, accordingly, he does not ask what limitations the human embodiment put on the divine, but what prerogatives the divine imparted to the human. His interest lay mainly in securing that there should be no imperfection in the work of Christ as a teacher of absolute truth concerning God; to that end the body of Christ was mainly important to Him as a fitting instrument for carrying out the will and the mission of the Word; and from this point of view a tendency in the direction of docetism was inevitable. It is true that passages can be quoted from later ecclesiastical writers closely akin to docetic passages in Clement,<sup>1</sup> but a statement of a docetic cast made at a time when docetism was dead occupies a different position from a statement made when docetism was a dangerous force. In his doctrine of the human nature of Christ, more plainly than anywhere else, Clement has been wounded by the weapons which he captured from his opponents.

*"And for what?"* What was the primary end of the Incarnation? In accordance with His pre-incarnate function and ministry, it was essentially a work of revelation and tuition. It was a continuation of, and an advance on, that ministry. From the Word came the gift of life; from the Word Incarnate came the gift of living well. Clement takes illustrations of His method of working indifferently from the sayings of the prophets whom He inspired and from His own sayings on earth. The only difference is that in the one case the Lord speaks by the mouth of others, in the other case by His own. The revelation which He brought was in part a revelation of God to man, in part a revelation through a man of his highest self and of the

<sup>1</sup> Basil, quoted by le Nourry, p. 175 (Migne, vol. ix. p. 1132).

method of realising it. "No man knoweth the Son but the Father, and no one knoweth the Father save the Son, and he to whom the Son shall have revealed Him."<sup>1</sup> If the importance of a doctrine is to be measured by the frequency with which it is repeated, this is vital in Clement's view of the purpose of the Incarnation. Because the soul of man was too feeble to apprehend things as they are, we needed a divine teacher. Accordingly, the Saviour was sent down, the ineffable and holy manifestation of the great Providence.<sup>2</sup> God was inaccessible to the senses. Hence the Son is said to be the Father's face, because by the Incarnation He became accessible to the senses. He is the Word, the revealer of the distinctive nature of the Father.<sup>3</sup> By the Incarnation he was seen in more immediate relation to the world.<sup>4</sup> The only-begotten Son of God has taught us the divine mysteries.<sup>5</sup> He who was not of the world came as one who was of this world to men. He sought to lead men through knowledge to sovereign truth, from this world to another.<sup>6</sup> He assumed flesh in order to show what was possible to man in the way of obedience to the commandments.<sup>7</sup> From love He willingly assumed the lot of man, that, having been brought to the measure of the weakness of us whom He loved, He might in turn bring us to the measure of His own power.<sup>8</sup> "The Word of God became man, that, in truth, thou also mayst learn from man how man may become God."<sup>9</sup> He seeks to transform man the earth-born into a holy and heavenly man. He alone has completely realised the divine purpose in the creation of man. "Let us listen to the Word and take on the impress of the truly saving life of our Saviour, henceforward cultivating the heavenly citizenship in accordance with which we are being deified."<sup>10</sup> He is the creator of types of which

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 22.<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 17.<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 6<sup>34</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 6<sup>39</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 14.<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>128</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 28.<sup>8</sup> Q. D., 37.<sup>9</sup> Prot., i. 8.<sup>10</sup> Pæd., i. 12<sup>98</sup>.



He Himself is the archetype.<sup>1</sup> Having described the Word as the New Song, Clement asks, "What, then, does this instrument, the Word of God, the Lord, the New Song will?" "To open the eyes of the blind, to unstop the ears of the deaf, and to lead by the hand unto righteousness those that were lame in their feet or who had wandered, to manifest God to feeble men, to put an end to corruption, to conquer death, to reconcile disobedient sons to their Father. The instrument of God is a lover of men. The Lord pities, instructs, exhorts, admonishes, saves, guards, and abundantly promises the kingdom of heaven as a reward for our instruction; and the only harvest that He reaps is that we are saved. For wickedness feeds on the destruction of men; but truth, like the bee, injuring nothing that exists, delights only in the salvation of men."<sup>2</sup> He showed to men the height of salvation that they might repent and be saved, or disobey and be judged.<sup>3</sup>

"*And concerning His passion.*" If it were a mere matter of names and general phrases, there can be no doubt that Clement taught the doctrine of a vicarious atonement. He applies to Christ the epithets — "Mediator," "Truce-bringer," "reconciler," "great high-priest." He applies a saying of Plato about a "great and unprocurable sacrifice" being offered by the seeker after God to Christ, a truly unprocurable sacrifice, the Son of God consecrated for us.<sup>4</sup> In like manner he applied a saying of Euripides about "a sacrifice without fire" to Christ, a whole burnt-offering, without fire, for us.<sup>5</sup> He uses the word "ransom" with reference to the death of Christ, and likewise "propitiation," though only in a quotation in the latter case;<sup>6</sup> and he explains it as meaning that Jesus heals both soul and body. Isaac was a type of the Lord, for he was a "victim" as the Lord was.

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 3<sup>16</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Prot., i. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., xi. 11<sup>6</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., v. 10<sup>66</sup>; Plato, Rep., ii. 378 A.

<sup>5</sup> Str., v. 11<sup>70</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>98</sup>; 1 John ii. 2.

But he was not offered in sacrifice as the Lord; only as the Lord bore the wood of the cross, so he bore the wood of the sacrifice.<sup>1</sup> We have been brought into kinship with Christ through His blood by which we are ransomed.<sup>2</sup> Christ willed to suffer that by His suffering we might live.<sup>3</sup> Our life was hung upon the wood with a view to our faith.<sup>4</sup> He drank the cup for the cleansing of those who plotted against Him and of the unbelievers.<sup>5</sup> When He might have been Lord, He willed to be a brother, and so good was He that He died for us.<sup>6</sup> For the sake of each of us He laid down His life—a life that was equal in worth to the universe.<sup>7</sup> Still more plainly is it set forth in the appeal which he puts into the mouth of the Saviour. “I begot thee again, when miserably begotten by the world with a view to death. I set thee free, I healed thee, I ransomed thee. I will procure for thee life unceasing, eternal, a life above this world. I will show to thee the face of the good Father. . . . I will lead thee into the rest and enjoyment of good things, unspeakable and untold. . . . I am thy nurse, giving myself as bread, of which no man having tasted again has experience of death: I give thee daily to drink immortality. I am teacher of super-celestial instruction. For thee I fought against death, and paid in full thy penalty of death, which thou didst owe because of the former sins and thy faithlessness towards God.”<sup>8</sup> “When about to be offered and giving Himself as a ransom, He leaves a new covenant: My love I give unto you.”<sup>9</sup> No doubt, the most striking of these passages are in the form of a rhetorical appeal, but the appeal could have had no force unless based on admitted truths. On the other hand, he puts an interpretation on some passages of Scripture that seems to indicate an uncertain grasp of the sacrificial import of the work of Christ.

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>23</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 11<sup>72</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Q. D., 37.<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>49</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 9<sup>75</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., 23.<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 7<sup>43</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>85</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., 37.

He interprets the saying, "The Lord delivered Him for our sins," as meaning that He was to be the amender and corrector of our sins.<sup>1</sup> By the "lamb of God" he does not think of the "lamb that had been slain," or "that taketh away the sins of the world," but regards it as equivalent to the "child of God," the Son of the Father.<sup>2</sup> By "the blood of Christ that cleanseth us" he understands the teaching of Christ, which is very powerful.<sup>3</sup> "He laid down His life for us" means for the Apostles.<sup>4</sup> Yet these passages cannot be allowed to outweigh the general force of others, as well as the definite statements to the effect that Christ died for our sins. In consequence of his view of sin as that which was irrational and the fruit of ignorance, he did not give the doctrine of the atonement any prominent place in his teaching, nor did he find it necessary to formulate any theory of the atonement, nor to speculate on the meaning of ransom. He is not thinking so much of sin from the divine standpoint as of its effect on the nature of man. The work of Christ as mediator is not clearly related to His death. Clement himself had passed through no spiritual crisis; enlightenment rather than the need of forgiveness, intellectual unrest rather than an accusing conscience, drove him to the Christian faith.

Sin is defined as anything that is contrary to right reason. Disobedience in relation to reason is the generator of sin. To sin against reason is to be likened to the beasts.<sup>5</sup> Sin is slavery. It is eternal death. It is the death of the soul—not the death which dissolves the union between soul and body, but that which dissolves the union between the soul and the truth.<sup>6</sup> Hence to be instructed and disciplined by the Lord is to be set free from death.<sup>7</sup> All sins are due

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>67</sup>; Isa. liii. 6, LXX.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>24</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Adum. in 1 Joan i. 7; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 211.

<sup>4</sup> Adum. in Jud., 16, vol. iii. p. 214.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., i. 13<sup>101</sup>; Ps. xlix. 20.

<sup>6</sup> Prot., xi. 115; Str., iii. 9<sup>64</sup>; ii. 7<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., i. 7<sup>61</sup>.

to choice and inclination.<sup>1</sup> The only sins which are not "imputed" are those which are not the result of choice.<sup>2</sup> Though the actions of men are infinite in number, the causes of all sin may be reduced to two—ignorance and weakness.<sup>3</sup> One falls into a ditch, for example, either from ignorance of its existence, or from inability to leap across it.<sup>4</sup> No one chooses evil as evil, but, beguiled by the pleasures attaching to it, he supposes it to be good, and considers it a thing to be desired. But we are responsible for such misconceptions. For to be set free from ignorance and to refuse assent to deceptive phantasies rests with ourselves.<sup>5</sup> This emphasising of individual sin seems to leave no place for inherited sin, still less for inherited guilt. The introduction of sin into the world is in some sense associated with the fall of Adam, and this in turn with the victory of Christ over death; but of the relation of that sin to us and our sins there are no clear indications. The first man sported in Paradise in freedom, for he was a child of God; but when he fell under the power of pleasure—the serpent means pleasure—he was carried away by his desires and fettered to sins. The Lord Himself in the fetters of flesh enslaved the tyrant death. He stooped down and man rose up.<sup>6</sup> Adam was not perfect in the sense that he could not transgress, but in the sense that he was adapted by nature to receive virtue,<sup>7</sup> and that he lacked none of the distinctive characteristics of "the idea and the form" of a man.<sup>8</sup> By his deliberate choice of evil he exchanged an immortal for a mortal life, but not for ever.<sup>9</sup> Man by nature has a tendency towards giving assent to falsehood, though he possesses helps for faith in the truth.<sup>10</sup> But we only lie under the sin of Adam in respect of likeness of sin.<sup>11</sup> When Job said,

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 17<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 15<sup>66</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>101</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 15<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., i. 17<sup>84</sup>. Cf. vii. 16<sup>101</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Prot., xi. 111.

<sup>7</sup> Str., vi. 12<sup>96</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. 23<sup>150</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., ii. 19<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Str., ii. 12<sup>85</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Adam. in Jud., Stäh., vol. iii. p. 208. "Sic etiam peccato Adae subjacemus secundum peccati similitudinem." Clement, like Origen and Ambrosiaster, seems

"Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return hither," he did not mean naked of possessions—that were a small and common matter—but naked of wickedness and sin.<sup>1</sup> If the entrance into life is to correspond to the return, the child must be conceived as naked of sin. When David said, "In sin did my mother conceive me," he referred to Eve the mother of the living; and in any case, if he were conceived in sin, yet he himself was not in sin, nor was he himself sin.<sup>2</sup> "By sin, death has passed to all men,"—that is, by a natural necessity of the divine economy death follows on birth, and the dissolution of soul and body necessarily follows their union.<sup>3</sup> But this necessary relationship involves no participation on our part in the sin of Adam. "There is no entailed necessity between his sin and ours."<sup>4</sup>

No name is more frequently given to Jesus than that of the Saviour; no word is employed so frequently to denote the goal and work of Christ as salvation. His soul glows with the fire of love to Christ as Saviour; repeatedly in the course of his discussions he breaks forth in prayer to Him; and whenever he mentions His name, he loves to shower upon it a series of descriptive epithets, as if striving to express the fulness of his devotion. But we must not read into the words "Saviour" or "salvation," as used by him, the ordinary connotation of the words.<sup>5</sup> For his conception of sin determines in large measure the conception of salvation. If sin be slavery, salvation is freedom; if sin be moral disorder or disease, salvation is moral health; if sin be ignorance, salvation is knowledge; if sin be death, salvation is life. A preliminary, but fundamental, element in

to have omitted the  $\mu\eta$  in Rom. v. 14. See Souter, 'A Study of Ambrosiaster,' p. 198.

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 25<sup>160</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 16<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. v. 12; Str., iii. 9<sup>64</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Bigg, p. 81.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Ec. Pr., 16, where he speaks of the prophets and apostles as saviours of men.



salvation is the forgiveness of sins. "The Lord ministers all help, both as man and God; as God, forgiving our sins; as man, training us not to sin."<sup>1</sup> Forgiveness of sins precedes the training. It is associated with Baptism, which is a washing by which our sins are thoroughly cleansed, and a grace by which the penalties of our sins are remitted.<sup>2</sup> The Lord buys us with His precious blood, setting us free from our former harsh masters—that is, the sins because of which the "spiritual forces of wickedness" lorded it over us.<sup>3</sup> Of all good things salvation is the greatest.<sup>4</sup> To save men is the eternal purpose of God. For this reason the good God sent the good Shepherd. The Word unfolded the truth and showed to men the height of salvation.<sup>5</sup> The salvation of men is His only work.<sup>6</sup> As sin is disease, a moral disease due to ignorance, the work of the Saviour is pre-eminently that of a physician, and His medicine is tuition or discipline. Passions are diseases of the soul.<sup>7</sup> The Word is the all-healing physician of human infirmities and the holy charmer of the sick soul.<sup>8</sup> "The Word has been called the Saviour, as He has found out for man those rational drugs which tend to quickness of perception and salvation—watching for the favourable opportunity, reprov- ing moral injury, laying bare the causes of passions, and cutting out the roots of irrational desires, pointing out from what we ought to abstain, bringing all the antidotes of salvation to the sick; for this is the greatest and most kingly work of God—the salvation of mankind."<sup>9</sup> As a good physician uses all methods—fomentation, cautery, amputation—to heal the bodies of the sick, so the Saviour has a voice of many tones and varied methods in the salvation of men.<sup>10</sup> His aim is to create true health in the soul.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 3<sup>7</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>26</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ec. Prop., 20.<sup>4</sup> Prot., xii. 123.<sup>5</sup> Ib., xi. 116.<sup>6</sup> Ib., x. 87.<sup>7</sup> Ib., xi. 115.<sup>8</sup> Pæd., i. 2<sup>6</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Pæd., i. 12<sup>100</sup>. Cf. Q. D., 29; Pæd., i. 1<sup>1</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Prot., i. 8.<sup>11</sup> Pæd., i. 11<sup>96</sup>.

As all are sick in respect of passions and evil desires, all need a Saviour. "Sick, we truly stand in need of the Saviour; having gone astray, we need one to guide us; blind, we need one to lead us by His light; thirsty, we need the fountain of life, of which those who partake shall no longer thirst; dead, we need life; sheep, we need a shepherd; we who are children need a tutor; nay, all mankind stands in need of Jesus, so that we may not as intractable men and sinners fall at the end into condemnation, but may be separated from the chaff and stored up in the garner of the Father."<sup>1</sup> The Sun of righteousness has changed sunset into sunrise, He has crucified death so that life may be won.<sup>2</sup> Sometimes this salvation is represented as one with knowledge of God, and only to be attained by such knowledge. Sometimes it is represented as the guerdon of faith. It is so precious that if it were for sale, the whole wealth of Pactolus would not buy it, yet it can be bought with faith and love.<sup>3</sup> The fundamental conception of salvation in Clement is that of spiritual health.

The manner in which Clement exhibits the unity and catholicity of the Church, and its authority in relation to heretical schools and teaching, has already been noticed.<sup>4</sup> Here is only to be noted the relation of the Church to those within her fold. The Church is of divine origin, and is closely identified with salvation. "Only to believe and to be born again is perfection in life. For God is never weak. For as His volition is work, and this is called the world, so also His counsel is the salvation of men, and this has been called the Church."<sup>5</sup> "It is a holy temple,—not the place but the congregation; not built by mechanical art, nor adorned by the hand of angel, but formed by the will of God into a sanctuary."<sup>6</sup> The Church on earth is an image of the Church in heaven.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>88</sup>.    <sup>2</sup> Prot., xi. 114.    <sup>3</sup> Ib., ix. 85, 86.    <sup>4</sup> See Lecture II., p. 60.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>27</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vii. 5<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iv. 8<sup>86</sup>.

The grades of bishops, presbyters, and deacons are an imitation of the angelic glory and of different degrees of felicity among the perfected.<sup>1</sup> Of the whole Church Christ is the crown, the head.<sup>2</sup> She is administered by the Word.<sup>3</sup> She is the mother who nurses her children with holy milk.<sup>4</sup> Her sacrifice is speech rising as incense from holy souls, while every thought is unveiled to God along with the sacrifice.<sup>5</sup> The Church is the "holy mountain" on which our Tutor feeds His flock.<sup>6</sup> In this pasturing, what place is to be assigned to the sacraments of Baptism and the Eucharist?

The many baptisms of Moses are embraced in the one Baptism. Baptism is represented as the first stage in a process that ends in immortality, and as that which gives impulse to the process. "Being baptised, we are enlightened; being enlightened, we are made sons; being made sons, we are perfected; being perfected, we are made immortal. The work is variously called a gift of grace, and enlightenment, and perfection, and washing. It is a washing by which we thoroughly cleanse our sins; grace by which the penalty of our sins is remitted; enlightenment by which the holy light of salvation is beheld—that is, by which we have a keen vision of God; and perfection which wants nothing."<sup>7</sup> It is the removing a film from the eye of the spirit, so that it may have a clear vision of God, the Holy Spirit flowing down to us from above. The perfection, it is true, is only a potential perfection, for the goal is reserved for the resurrection of believers; but the attainment is one with the promise.<sup>8</sup> The Gnostic phrase "filtration" may be applied to Baptism. As filtration, as described by them, is the separation from what is worse, derived from the reminiscence of what is better, and as he who remembers the better must repent of

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 13<sup>107</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>71</sup>; i. 5<sup>18</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 20<sup>172</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>42</sup>. Cf. iii. 12<sup>99</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., vii. 6<sup>82</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>26</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>28, 29</sup>.

the worse, so we who have repented of our sins are "filtered" by Baptism.<sup>1</sup> The Baptism of the Word is the one all-healing medicine by which transgressions are taken away. The character is not the same as before our washing.<sup>2</sup> It is a washing unto the forgiveness of sins, and by it forgiveness for previous sins is obtained once for all.<sup>3</sup> We are born again through water, which is a different kind of sowing from that in the creation.<sup>4</sup> As we came naked of sin from the womb, so from the womb—water—God hath begotten us naked of sin.<sup>5</sup> As a spiritual bath, it has a natural relationship to spiritual nourishment.<sup>6</sup> The water of baptism receives consecration.<sup>7</sup> The Saviour was baptised, though He had no need Himself to be so, that He might sanctify the whole water for those who are being regenerated.<sup>8</sup> Though Clement does not use the word Baptism any more than the word Eucharist in his "Exhortation to the Greeks," he uses language which shows that that ordinance and its purpose and result were before his mind. "Take the water of the Word; wash yourselves, ye who have been defiled; cleanse yourselves from custom by the drops of truth."<sup>9</sup> Heretical baptism was the passing through "alien water"; it was not native and genuine water.<sup>10</sup> Sins committed before baptism are remitted; those wrought afterwards are cleansed by discipline. In one passage he speaks as if there were a gnostic baptism in contrast with common baptism. "Ye washed yourselves"—not simply as the rest, but with knowledge ye cast off the passions of the soul.<sup>11</sup> As illumination was not only an essential constituent of baptism but synonymous with it, this cannot mean that it was a different baptism, but is only an illustration of his tendency to exalt knowledge which marks

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>32</sup>.      <sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>30</sup>.      <sup>3</sup> Str., ii. 13<sup>58</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 25<sup>160</sup>. Cf. Pæd., ii. 12<sup>118</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>50, 51</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ex. Theod., 82—probably from Theodotus, not Clement.

<sup>8</sup> Ec. Pr., 7.

<sup>9</sup> Prot., x. 99.

<sup>10</sup> Str., i. 19<sup>96</sup>; Prov. ix. 18, LXX.

<sup>11</sup> Str., vii. 14<sup>86</sup>; 1 Cor. vi. 11.

especially his later writings. Even when all allowance has been made for the rhetorical element in his phrases and imagery, it is plain that Clement associated the working of baptism with the forgiveness of sin, regarded it as the implanting of the germ of a new life, and ascribed to it a spiritual force as an essential stage in the progress towards salvation. It is equally plain that throughout he is thinking only of the baptism of those of riper years.<sup>1</sup>

The uncertain character of the teaching of Clement as to the Eucharist in itself and its place in the spiritual life is indicated by the contradictory conclusions that have been drawn from the same data. It has been argued that he taught the doctrine of the Real Presence in the Roman Catholic sense of the word;<sup>2</sup> it has been maintained that his teaching is closely akin to that of Zwingli,<sup>3</sup> or even might be expressed in the language of the apologist of Quakerism.<sup>4</sup> The obscurity arises in part from the fact that most of the allusions are quite incidental, in part from the cloudy rhetoric and symbolism that here in an unusual degree conceal rather than illustrate the thought.

Clement refers to its institution by Christ. "The Saviour," he says, "took the bread and first spoke and blessed. Then having broken the bread He set it forth, that we might eat it according to reason."<sup>5</sup> He blessed the wine, saying, "Take, drink, this is My blood." The blood of the vine, the Word who was poured forth unto the remission of sins, He figuratively calls a holy stream of gladness.<sup>6</sup> Clement designates it the Eucharist. He applies the passage about the "secret bread and stolen water" to the heretics who celebrate the Eucharist with water contrary to the rule of the

<sup>1</sup> See Bigg, p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> Döllinger; Probst. 'Liturgie der drei ersten christlichen Jahrhunderte,' p. 130 *et seq.* More recently, A. Struckmann, 'Die Gegenwart Christi nach den schriftlichen Quellen der vornizänischen Zeit,' 1905, pp. 115 *et seq.*

<sup>3</sup> Höfling. See Bigg, p. 106, who agrees with Höfling.

<sup>4</sup> Mayor, *op. cit.*, p. 383.

<sup>5</sup> Str., i. 10<sup>46</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., ii. 2<sup>32</sup>.



Church, and speaks of the whole ordinance under the name of the "offering."<sup>1</sup> By way of enforcing the mutual duties of scholar and teacher, he refers to some who in distributing the Eucharist permit each one of the people to take the portion himself.<sup>2</sup> In condemning extravagance in eating and drinking, he makes allusion to the abuse of the agape. To give this name to luxurious suppers was to insult the fair and saving work of the Lord—the consecrated love-feast. Nor was the name to be given to ordinary social gatherings,<sup>3</sup> still less to the immoral suppers of the followers of Carpocrates.<sup>4</sup> From the comment of Clement that those who indulged in delicate and costly feastings were mistaken in supposing that the promise of God was to be bought with such suppers, it would appear that in Alexandria the Eucharist was still associated with the agape. In support of the contention that Clement held the doctrine of the Real Presence, the following passages are adduced. "The Word is all things to the child, both father and mother and tutor and nurse. 'Eat My flesh,' He says, 'and drink My blood.' This appropriate nourishment the Lord provides, and holds out flesh and pours forth blood, and nothing is wanting to the growth of His children."<sup>5</sup> But elsewhere he says that the knowledge of the divine essence is the eating and drinking of the divine Word.<sup>6</sup> He bound, it is said, "the colt to the vine."<sup>7</sup> This means, says Clement, that He bound the simple and child-like people to the Word who is a vine. For the vine produces wine as the Word produces blood, and both produce drink to the saving health of men, the one, wine for the body, the other, blood for the spirit.<sup>8</sup> The bread and wine set forth by Melchisedek was consecrated food—a type of the Eucharist.<sup>9</sup> The good Samaritan is Christ who pours the wine, the blood of the wine of David,

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 19<sup>96</sup>; Prov. ix. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Str., i. 1<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iii. 2<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>42</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., v. 10<sup>66</sup>.

Cf. Pæd., i. 6<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Gen. xlix. 11.

<sup>8</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Str., iv. 25<sup>161</sup>.

upon our wounded souls.<sup>1</sup> "The bread and the oil are consecrated by the power of the name of God, being in appearance the same as when they were received, but transformed by the power into a spiritual power."<sup>2</sup> This might mean that the bread had been altered in substance, or simply that it had become the vehicle or medium of a spiritual power. But it cannot be pressed into the argument, for in all probability it belongs to Theodotus, not to Clement. In one passage the literal and the symbolic seem intermingled. "The blood of the Lord is twofold. The one is fleshly, by which we have been redeemed from corruption; the other is spiritual, by which we have been anointed. To drink the blood of Jesus is to share in the incorruption of the Lord. The Spirit is the force of the Word, as the blood is of the flesh. Analogously, therefore, the wine is mingled with water and the Spirit with man. The mixture furnishes a banquet for faith, the Spirit conducts to immortality. The mixture of both—of that which is drunk and the Word—is called Eucharist, a grace renowned and fair. Those who, according to faith, participate in it are sanctified in body and soul, the will of the Father mingling in mystical fashion the divine mixture—the man—with the Spirit and the Word."<sup>3</sup> So further he speaks of heavenly food,<sup>4</sup> of divine and spiritual food,<sup>5</sup> of the eating of Christ, of the nourishment—the Lord Jesus—sanctified human flesh.<sup>6</sup> On the strength of these passages it has been argued that in the Eucharist the body and blood of Christ are received, the Lord Himself in His humanity and His Godhead, and that the effects of this participation are union with Christ, holiness in body and soul, the conquest of the passions and the immortality of the body.<sup>7</sup> On the face of it, the contention has apparent

<sup>1</sup> Q. D., 29.<sup>2</sup> Ex. Theod., 82.<sup>3</sup> Pæd., ii. 2<sup>19</sup>, 20.<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>4</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>9</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>43</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Struckmann, *op. cit.*, pp. 115-139. Cf. Batiffol, 'L'Eucharistie,'<sup>5</sup> pp. 248-261.

force; and he who comes to the reading of Clement with faith in this doctrine may without undue violence read it in, and into, these and kindred passages. But other passages show that the language of metaphor is an unsafe basis for dogmatic superstructure. For elsewhere he speaks of love as heavenly nourishment, a rational banquet,<sup>1</sup> of a righteous meal as a Eucharist,<sup>2</sup> of hope as the blood of faith.<sup>3</sup> "It is an admirable thing," he says, "to look up to the truth and cling to the nourishment which is from above and divine, and to be filled with the insatiable vision of Him who truly exists, tasting of the pleasure which is sure and abiding and pure."<sup>4</sup> It has been argued that "if we read Clement as a whole, and reflect upon his strong antithesis of the letter, the flesh, to the spirit, and his language on the subject of priest and sacrifice," we shall conclude that he is nearer to Zwingli than to the doctrine of transubstantiation.<sup>5</sup> But in an eclectic like Clement the argument from logical consistency cannot be pressed too far, and is only valid when there is an immediate relation between the principle and the conclusion. The language of Clement is based throughout on the sixth chapter of the Gospel of St John more than on the words at the institution of the ordinance: he nowhere quotes the words, "This is My body"; but the symbolic language presupposes a truth and a certain conception of that truth. It is the case that Clement was far from narrow in his conception of the nature and sphere of sacramental grace; but it is certain that his teaching went far beyond the mere symbolism usually associated with the name of Zwingli.<sup>6</sup> He regarded the Eucharist as an ordinance instituted by Christ, whose method of administration

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, ii. 1<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 1<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, i. 6<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 1<sup>9</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Bigg, p. 107.

<sup>6</sup> See, however, on the teaching of Zwingli, Lambert, 'The Sacraments of the New Testament,' p. 292, note 2.

was determined by the Church, and which, when received in faith, was a veritable means of "spiritual nourishment and growth in grace."

With regard to the period when the full fruition of salvation takes place, its final scope and extent, as generally with regard to all eschatological matters, the language of Clement is often obscure. This obscurity is due in part to the fact that not only the proposed section or treatise on the Resurrection<sup>1</sup> was not written or has been lost, but also the sections on the Soul,<sup>2</sup> the Devil,<sup>3</sup> the Angels,<sup>4</sup> have met with like destiny. The obscurity, further, is partly due to the fact that he deliberately in reverent silence omits discussion when it might naturally have been expected;<sup>5</sup> and that, here as elsewhere, there are individual statements not in harmony with his general principles or their logical development.

The soul, according to Clement, never sleeps, and the life of the blessed immediately after death is a self-conscious life. The promise as to seeing God face to face is fulfilled after our departure hence.<sup>6</sup> The blessedness of a holy life here is followed by increase of blessedness hereafter.<sup>7</sup> To be set free by death is but an exchange of life;<sup>8</sup> to the martyr the gate of death is the beginning of life.<sup>9</sup> Such an one goes with good courage to his friend the Lord, and is greeted by the Saviour as a "dear brother."<sup>10</sup> He is received with the joyous acclamations of angels, and led by the Saviour to the bosom of the Father, to the life eternal.<sup>11</sup> Of the millennium he says nothing; of the Parousia he says little. He alludes to it in an exposition of the nineteenth Psalm, in an annotation on the First

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>47</sup>; ii. 10<sup>104</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 2<sup>82</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>122</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., iv. 4<sup>14</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., iii. 3<sup>13</sup>; v. 13<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>13</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. 11<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Q. D., 42.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 11<sup>85</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>87</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 7<sup>44</sup>.

Epistle of St John, and in his address to the Newly-Baptised;<sup>1</sup> but it has no prominence as a motive in the spiritual life. His intention to write on the Resurrection, whether carried out or not, may partly account for the meagreness of the teaching in his extant writings.

Special difficulty arises in regard to Clement's views concerning the extent and final scope of the salvation wrought by Christ. One general principle is laid down—that no one shall be finally condemned without having had an opportunity of accepting or rejecting the message of salvation, as otherwise the condemnation would be unjust.<sup>2</sup> “It would have been an act of no ordinary arrogance that those who had departed before the advent of the Lord without having had the good news proclaimed to them, or having of themselves given ground of approval or condemnation in respect of their belief or unbelief, should participate either in salvation or punishment. For it were not right that they should be condemned without trial, and that only those after the advent should reap the fruit of the divine righteousness.”<sup>3</sup> As to save is the work of the Lord, He preached to the spirits in ward. If He preached both to Jews and Gentiles, all who believe will be saved when they have made confession of their sins, since the punishments of God are saving and disciplinary. If He preached only to the Jews in Hades, then the Apostles in harmony with their mission must have preached to the Gentiles there. Apparently this offer of salvation is limited to those in Hades who before the advent had lived righteously; and it does not of itself imply that even all such would accept the message or be finally saved, but only that all may be saved; but it is plain that the principle of equality of opportunity which

<sup>1</sup> Ec. Pr., 56. Adum. in 1 Joan. ii. 28; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 213; ib., p. 223.

<sup>2</sup> Str., vi. 6<sup>51</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>48</sup>.



underlies it is one capable of indefinite expansion in the direction of universal salvation.

With reference to the destiny of the unrighteous, three views have been ascribed to Clement—the hypothesis of annihilation, that of eternal punishment by fire, and that of universal salvation. In support of the first hypothesis two passages are adduced. The law, it is said, inflicts penalties for moderate transgressions, “but when it sees any one in such a condition as to seem incurable, and advancing to the lowest point of unrighteousness, then already in its care for others, in order that they may not be corrupted by him, as if cutting off a part of the whole body, so it puts to death such an one in the highest interests of health.”<sup>1</sup> But from the context this can only mean that the man dies lest his influence should corrupt others; and of what takes place after death there is no indication. Again, “It is the highest and most perfect good when one is able to lead back any one from evil-doing to well-doing; and this is effected by the law. So that when any one is overcome by unrighteousness and greed, and falls into evil past all remedy, it would benefit him to be put to death.”<sup>2</sup> This cannot mean that annihilation is better than eternal punishment for such an one, as there is no suggestion of such an alternative in the passage. But as he had already said that it was for the good of others that the incurable and unrighteous one should be put to death, so here he says that it is for the good of the man himself. As in the previous case, he says nothing as to what takes place after death; but the implication is that “the flesh is destroyed that the spirit may be saved.”<sup>3</sup> The hypothesis of annihilation may therefore be set aside.

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 27<sup>171</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 27<sup>173</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. v. 5. Cf. Adum. in 1 P.; Stäh., iii. p. 206.

The hypothesis of eternal punishment occupies a different position.

That in a general way it will be well with the righteous after death, and not well with the unrighteous or unbelieving, Clement often affirms. More definitely, in his "Exhortation to the Greeks" does he repeatedly insist on the alternative between acceptance and judgment, the choice of life or of death, of eternal life or the "fire which the Lord hath prepared for the devil and his angels."<sup>1</sup> He supports this view by the witness of Greek poets and thinkers as well as by the authority of Scripture. "If death were the end of all," as Plato said, "the wicked would have had a good bargain in dying."<sup>2</sup> Sophocles and Pindar alike emphasise the contrasted destiny.<sup>3</sup> Socrates says that good souls depart hence with good hope, and that the wicked live with an evil hope. Heraclitus says that there awaits for men after death what they look not for or dream of.<sup>4</sup> And this, so far as the wicked are concerned, he explains elsewhere as meaning fire.<sup>5</sup> These ideas, moreover, were extracted from the barbarian philosophy. The "fierce men of fiery aspect" in Plato are the angels who lay hold of and chasten the righteous. For, it is said, "He maketh His angels winds, and His ministers a flame of fire." What the barbarians call Gehenna, Plato calls Tartarus.<sup>6</sup> By over-scrupulousness in discriminating between the claims of the worthy and the unworthy, we may neglect some who are dear to God—the punishment for which is "eternal fiery punishment."<sup>7</sup> Clement interprets the saying in Zechariah, "Is this not a brand plucked

<sup>1</sup> Prot., ix. 84; x. 95; xii. 123; viii. 83.

<sup>2</sup> Str., iv. 7<sup>44</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Prot., x. 90; Str., iv. 26<sup>167</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iv. 22<sup>144</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Prot., ii. 22.

<sup>6</sup> Str., v. 13<sup>90, 91</sup>. Cf. Pæd., i. 7<sup>61</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Q. D., 33. Cf. Q. D., 13, 39. Cf. Matt. xxv. 41.

from the fire," as referring to Satan, and asks, "Why have they fled to the death-bringing brand with whom they will be burned, when it is in their power to live well and not according to custom? For God bestows life, but evil custom after our departure from the world inflicts vain repentance together with punishment."<sup>1</sup> To the like effect is a fragment preserved in an Armenian version.<sup>2</sup> So elsewhere he speaks of the "fire that cannot cease because of sin."<sup>3</sup> From these passages it would seem to follow that it is the teaching of Clement that eternal punishment by fire awaits the unrighteous, and that in the case of such repentance is profitless and vain.<sup>4</sup> The exact weight, however, to be attached to these statements cannot be gauged without considering what he meant by "fire," as well as by examining other passages and principles with which these positions are in open or implicit antagonism.

"Fire" in the Scriptures is always interpreted by Clement figuratively, is represented not as outward and material but inward and spiritual, and its function as that of a force to cleanse and discipline, not to destroy.<sup>5</sup> There is a fire which convicts and heals superstition.<sup>6</sup> The cleansing of the blood of the sons and daughters of Israel "by the spirit of judgment and the spirit of burning" is likened to a spiritual bath which washes away the filth of the soul.<sup>7</sup> Fire is conceived as a force, good and powerful,

<sup>1</sup> Prot., x. 90; Zech. iii. 2. Cf. Prot., i. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Stäh., iii. p. 229, fr. 69.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>83</sup>. From the context, however, it may be that the thought is rather akin to that of 2 Peter ii. 14.

<sup>4</sup> The passages in Potter, p. 1020, often quoted as decisive of the question, are not genuine. See Stäh., vol. iii. p. lxxi. The passage in Q. D., c. 39, denying the possibility of forgiveness for sins committed after baptism, is plainly corrupt, and in all probability, with Dindorf, Mayor, and Barnard, we should insert a negative, and read, "even this man is *not* altogether condemned by God."

<sup>5</sup> Ec. Pr., 26; Str., v. 14<sup>100</sup>. Cf. Ex. Theod., 81.

<sup>6</sup> Prot., iv. 53.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., iii. 9<sup>48</sup>; Isa. iv. 4.

destructive of what is worse, preservative of what is better.<sup>1</sup> "We say that fire sanctifies not flesh but sinful souls, and by fire we mean not that which is all-devouring and common, but the discerning fire which penetrates the soul that walks through the fire."<sup>2</sup> As with the symbol so with the thing signified. Cocytus, Acheron, and the like, referred to by Plato, are places of punishment, but punishment with a view to discipline.<sup>3</sup> "The gnostic pities those who are chastened after death, and by punishments are involuntarily made to make confession of their sins."<sup>4</sup> "Those who have reached a higher degree of insensibility are forced to repent by the necessary chastisements, by the goodness of the great Judge."<sup>5</sup> In some instances it is difficult to determine whether Clement is speaking of punishments here or hereafter, but the above are quite explicit; and in any case the aim of punishment is represented by him as the same in both. In view of the apparent conflict of opinions, the determining factor must be assigned to general principles.

That, in the judgment of Clement, repentance after death was possible, there can be no doubt. The measure of that possibility is limited rather by the free-will of man than by the nature of God. Even for the devil repentance was possible, because of his possession of freedom.<sup>6</sup> Such possession, it is plain, made equally possible the condition of final impenitence.<sup>7</sup> The justice of God, as we have seen, is inseparably related to His goodness. "As children are corrected by their teacher or their father, so are we corrected by Providence. God does not take vengeance, for vengeance is a retaliation for evil, but He corrects with a view to the good, both public and private, of those who

<sup>1</sup> Ec. Pr., 26.<sup>2</sup> Str., vii. 6<sup>34</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>91</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 12<sup>78</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 2<sup>12</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 17<sup>83</sup>; but cf. vol. iii. p. 214.<sup>7</sup> Cf. Adum. in Jud., vol. iii. p. 207.

are corrected.”<sup>1</sup> Christ handed over those who judged him unjustly to God that they might receive punishment and be disciplined.<sup>2</sup> The possibility of repentance elsewhere than here is distinctly affirmed, and that on the ground that there is no place where the beneficent activity of God is inoperative.<sup>3</sup> Moreover, the Lord is the power of God, and His power can never lose its strength.<sup>4</sup> The principle of equality of opportunity, as alone consistent with divine righteousness, tends in the same direction, especially when accompanied, as it is in Clement, with the hypothesis that disembodied spirits possess clearer vision of the things of God.<sup>5</sup> If that be so, and no further opportunity were to be given to those who had heard here the call of Jesus, not to have heard the call of the Gospel in this life at all would have been a preferential position, which Clement in his missionary zeal could not have admitted for a moment. Further, the possibility of repentance after death is alone consistent with the conception of punishment as discipline. For, if divine punishment be disciplinary, and only disciplinary, it must continue as long as, and only so long as, the educative process has been ineffective. But is it possible that Clement ascribed to God a method of discipline that finally failed in its aim, or ascribed to the great Physician a virtual acknowledgment of His impotence?

Is this discipline, in the life to be, limited to the unrighteous? Or does it extend to those who die in a state of spiritual imperfection? Or is it universal? No such discipline can attach to the martyr, because after death he goes straight to the highest bliss. From the circumstance that the gnostic pities those who undergo punishment, the presumption is that he himself is exempt from such discipline.

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>102</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Adum. in 1 Pet., vol. iii. p. 205.

<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 6<sup>87</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>46</sup>.



But for those who are neither gnostics nor martyrs there would seem to be discipline, especially for sins committed after baptism. This is associated with the idea of gradations of status in heaven. The "mansions" vary according to the lives of men, according to the desert of believers.<sup>1</sup> The three elect mansions are indicated by the thirty, the sixty, and the hundred-fold, in the Gospel. The perfect inheritance belongs to the perfect man.<sup>2</sup> "The man of faith (the simple believer) is distressed yet further, either because he has not yet attained, or not fully attained, what he sees that others have shared. And, moreover, he is ashamed because of the transgressions which he had committed, which in truth are the greatest punishments to the man of faith. And though the punishments cease, as a matter of fact, at the completion of the full penalty and the purification of each, those who have been deemed worthy of the 'other fold' have the greatest abiding sorrow, the sorrow of not being along with those who have been glorified because of righteousness."<sup>3</sup> The punishment, then, from one point of view, is the consciousness of failure to reach an ideal; from another, it is the exaction of a penalty. Whether such souls always remain in a relatively lower sphere is not distinctly stated; but for them, as for others, the law is continuous progress.

The pre-eminence given to the doctrine of the Word is the most distinctive feature in the theology of Clement. He found in it the key to a right conception of God, of nature, of history, and of man. As against every form of polytheism, the unity of God is postulated not less by philosophical thought than by the religious spirit. But the unity which might be admitted by the speculative reason, the conception of a solitary being in inaccessible isolation,

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 6<sup>36</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>114</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>109</sup>.

could not satisfy the hunger of the heart which cries out for a Father in heaven. Nor could the conception of the Fatherhood of God find complete realisation in the thought of His relation to the world or man, or even the highest order of created spirits; for neither the world, nor man, nor angels, had existed from the beginning: there was a time when they were not. But did God only become a Father when the creation sprang into being at His word? Was the Fatherhood of God only an accident, or, irrespective of creation, was it an inalienable characteristic of His? To the Alexandrian thinker the last seemed the true thought. Fatherhood implied sonship; the Son must, therefore, have been eternally begotten, and thus stood in an altogether different relation to the Father from the universe or man which were formed by Him, not begotten of Him. As a revelation of the Father, the Incarnation of the Son was not regarded by Clement as an isolated act, but only as the highest and final act in a series of manifestations of the Word. The universe owed its existence to the Word, and thus bears upon it the impress of rationality. It is the result and the embodiment of a divine thought, and is, therefore, not dead, but informed with life; and it is our duty to search and discover the divine thoughts that are there operative. But there is another sphere for the working of the Word of God. Thought is that in man which is most akin to the essence of God; and the Word wrought in the minds of men. The progressive education of humanity by the Word, altogether apart from its applications, was surely a magnificent conception. In a way of which they themselves were unconscious, the thinkers of Greece had been illuminated by the Word; and, if the light had been obscured by the medium through which it shone or came only in fitful gleams, it was none the less light from Him;

and the partial truth created the longing for the future manifestation. In a more direct way and prior to this, the Word had intervened in the history of mankind. To the people of the Jews, alone among the nations of antiquity, He had given a direct revelation of Himself; and the record of that revelation had been preserved for the guidance of men. But something more than this was needed. The possibility of communication between God and man was an evidence of God's relation to man and of man's kinship with Him. But a theophany was only a transitory manifestation, and left the relation between God and man as external as before; the word in man was still alienated from the Word who was with God; the theophany must be consummated by an Incarnation; and so, the "Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us." When men began to search into the divine content of these words, new problems were created. Two things the Church sought to maintain and reconcile—the absolute deity of Christ and His complete humanity: it sought to show that He was not a dual personality, half human, half divine, but one divinely-human personality, in which the divine and human aspects were alike to be acknowledged, neither aspect being exaggerated nor minimised. The humanity of Christ had been assailed in Alexandria; and, as has been noted, Clement was not altogether uninfluenced by the speculations in his environment. But he held so firmly by the humanity of Christ that he regarded the Incarnation as the basis and archetype of that which was in a measure possible for all His followers. In the fact and in the doctrine of the Incarnation he saw the bridging of the gulf, hitherto impassable, between man and God. He saw in it the consecration of nature and its redemption from the charge of being the cause of evil and antagonistic to God, as well as from the Epicurean charge

that it was outside the abiding love and care of the Almighty. He saw in it the consecration of the history of humanity as an ever-operative sphere for the activity of the Word. He saw in it the consecration of every son of man by presenting to him the possibility of becoming a son of God. Clement might have said with Browning <sup>1</sup>—

“ I say, the acknowledgment of God in Christ  
Accepted by thy reason solves for thee  
All questions in the earth and out of it.”

---

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Chase, Lectures on Ecclesiastical History (Norwich Cathedral), 1896, p. 296.

## LECTURE V.

## THE ETHICS OF CLEMENT.

WITH regard to the sources of the moral ideas in the teaching of Clement, as well as of the psychology that underlies them, there has been much discussion and controversy. According to Merk, he is an adherent of the Stoics;<sup>1</sup> according to Reinkens, of Aristotle;<sup>2</sup> Ritter regards him as fundamentally a Platonist;<sup>3</sup> Dähne as a Neo-Platonist.<sup>4</sup> The truth is, if we accept his own statement, that he refused to be considered a narrow partisan of any school; that we find in his writings terms and definitions drawn indifferently from Plato or Aristotle; that in his conception of virtue, and even of its detailed applications, he has learned much from the Stoics. This need excite no surprise. Stoicism in its highest reach had much in common with Christianity, and even before his conversion it must have been attractive to an earnest spirit such as his; and it is probable, as we have noted, that Pantæus, in whose teaching he found intellectual rest, was an adherent of that system. But in delineating the Christian ideal he professed to exhibit the gnostic according to the rule of

<sup>1</sup> Clemens Alexandrinus in seiner Abhängigkeit von der griechischen Philosophie. 1879.

<sup>2</sup> De Clemente Presbytero Alexandrino, 1851, pp. 300-309.

<sup>3</sup> Geschichte der christlichen Philosophie, p. 447 *et seq.*

<sup>4</sup> De Γνώσει, 1831, pp. 1-18, 69-112.



the Church;<sup>1</sup> his ultimate authority is Scripture; and he would have accepted no maxim from any quarter as authoritative of which he did not regard Scripture as the source, or which could not in his opinion be reasonably deduced from it. "The Platonic and Stoic features are mingled with an inner confidence in the power of the spirit of Christianity."<sup>2</sup>

Of man, his nature and destiny generally, Clement presents a high conception. Man is a plant of heavenly origin.<sup>3</sup> It is his natural prerogative, as man, to have fellowship with God.<sup>4</sup> By nature he is a lofty and majestic being, seeking after the good, as befits the creation of Him who alone is good.<sup>5</sup> All men are the work of one God, invested with one likeness upon one nature.<sup>6</sup> As the image of God is His Word, so the true man, the mind in the man, is the image of the Word.<sup>7</sup> To be "after the image and likeness" does not apply to the body but to the mind and the reasoning faculty on which the Lord puts the seal of likeness.<sup>8</sup> Man is superior to the animals in this, that by the inbreathing of God he shares in a purer essence than they, and that in him alone an idea of God has been instilled at his creation.<sup>9</sup> As to the origin of the soul, the doctrine of traducianism is definitely set aside.<sup>10</sup> Like the centaur, man is compounded of a rational and an irrational element—soul and body. The soul is superior to the body. But the soul is not good by nature, nor the body evil by nature. These two are diverse, but not opposite.<sup>11</sup> Christ healed the soul as well as the body. If the flesh had been the enemy of the soul, He would not have restored it to

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 7<sup>41</sup>. τὸν τῷ ὄντι κατὰ τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικὸν κανόνα γνωστικόν.

<sup>2</sup> Gass, 'Geschichte der christlichen Ethik,' vol. i. p. 78.

<sup>3</sup> Prot., ii. 25.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., x. 100.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., iii. 7<sup>37</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vii. 14<sup>85</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Prot., x. 98.

<sup>8</sup> Str., ii. 19<sup>102</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>88</sup>; vii. 2<sup>8</sup>. Cf. v. 14<sup>94</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>135</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., iv. 3<sup>9</sup>; iv. 26<sup>164</sup>.

health and fortified it in its hostility to the soul.<sup>1</sup> The soul never sleeps.<sup>2</sup> It is immortal and indestructible. Being formed of finer material, it suffered no injury in the flood from water, which is of grosser material.<sup>3</sup> Without the spirit the body is nothing but dust and ashes.<sup>4</sup> The soul is the final cause of the body.<sup>5</sup> The body is the instrument, the seat, and the possession of the soul.<sup>6</sup> The whole body, and not the upper part merely, was formed by God.<sup>7</sup> Man by his constitution has been formed erect for the vision of heaven, and the mechanism of the senses tends to knowledge. All the parts are well ordered with a view to good, not pleasure. The body is the dwelling-place of the soul, and shares in the sanctification wrought by the Holy Spirit.<sup>8</sup> The harmony of the body contributes to the goodly disposition of the mind.<sup>9</sup> Yet, because of the passions inevitably associated with the body, it is a fetter to the soul.<sup>10</sup> Natural death is the dissolution of the chains that bind the soul to the body, and this severance is the life-long "study" of the philosopher.<sup>11</sup> The little piece of flesh tends to obscure the vision of the soul.<sup>12</sup> Clement quotes with approval the saying of Plato,<sup>13</sup> that the soul of the philosopher dishonours the body and seeks to be alone by itself,<sup>14</sup> and without disapproval the saying that the body is the grave of the soul.<sup>15</sup> A fleshly element involves a dead element.<sup>16</sup> The hypothesis of transmigration of the soul and of purification by transmigration is to be rejected. The soul has not been sent into the world as into a prison-house.<sup>17</sup> It is plain that we have here two different, if not contradictory, conceptions of the relation of the body to the

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 17<sup>104</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 9<sup>82</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>81</sup>; vi. 6<sup>52</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>46</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., iii. 17<sup>100</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>163</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>84</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. 26<sup>163</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 4<sup>18</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>40</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., iv. 3<sup>12</sup>.<sup>12</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>46</sup>.<sup>13</sup> Phædo, 65 C.<sup>14</sup> Str., iii. 3<sup>18</sup>.<sup>15</sup> Ib., iii. 3<sup>16</sup>; Plato, *Krat.*, 400 B.C.<sup>16</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>25</sup>.<sup>17</sup> Ib., iii. 3<sup>13</sup>.

soul,—a conception which admits the possibility of the transfiguration of the body and all its activities, and a conception which involves the crushing of the body as the seat of the passions and an obstacle to the development of the highest life. According as the one conception or other predominates, the ethical ideal varies, the ascetic element gains or loses in prominence. The former conception is chiefly emphasised in his refutation of the heretics who vilified the body and creation generally; the latter conception comes out incidentally, but may none the less indicate a dominating principle in his ethical ideals.<sup>1</sup>

Clement puts great emphasis on human freedom. In a fragment of the lost treatise on Providence he defines willing as the natural, voluntary movement of the self-determined mind, or the mind moved of its own choice with reference to anything. Freedom of will is the mind moved according to nature, or it is an intellectual, independent movement of the soul.<sup>2</sup> Like the words or phrase which are employed by him to denote the conception,<sup>3</sup> this definition emphasises the self-determination of the will and its ground in the natural or divine constitution of man. The will takes precedence of all: the rational powers are ministers of the will.<sup>4</sup> That is in our power of which and its opposites we are equally masters; as, for example, we can philosophise or not philosophise, we can believe or disbelieve.<sup>5</sup> This is a gift of God, who has bestowed upon us free and sovereign power to live as we will, and has left the soul unfettered in respect of rejection or refusal.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For a full discussion of the nature of the soul, and of the psychology generally, see the treatise of Ziegler, 'Die Psychologie des T. Fl. Clemens Alexandrinus,' 1894, especially pp. 1-16, 53-66.

<sup>2</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 220.

<sup>3</sup> τὸ ἐφ' ἡμῶν, τὸ αὐτεξούσιον, προαιρετικὴ δύναμις, τὸ αὐθαίρετον τῆς ἀνθρωπίνης ψυχῆς, αἵρεσις καὶ φυγὴ αὐτοκρατορικῆ, &c.

<sup>4</sup> Str., ii. 17<sup>77</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 24<sup>158</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>12</sup>; iii. 5<sup>41</sup>; vii. 3<sup>15</sup>.

The choice or rejection of the truth is a voluntary action.<sup>1</sup> Clement seeks to prove and illustrate this by the statements of Scripture, on general moral grounds, and as being in accordance with the relation of God to man. The very giving of the commandments was a recognition of freedom, for it implied that man had it in his power what to choose and what to shun.<sup>2</sup> The prophet Hosea rebuked the people inasmuch by the possession of the understanding, which is the eye of the soul, they showed that they had sinned voluntarily.<sup>3</sup> The Apostle gives the name of "men" to those who in the enjoyment of freedom of will believed and were saved by voluntary choice.<sup>4</sup> The reply of the Saviour to the rich young man, "if thou wilt," indicated the free-will of the soul; the man was free to choose as God was free to give.<sup>5</sup> In opposition to the natural determinism of Basilides, Clement showed that moral freedom was essential to responsibility. If faith were only an advantage of nature, as Basilides maintained, there could be no room for praise or censure in the case of belief or unbelief, for man would be the creature of a natural, if divine, necessity. If men were moved like lifeless puppets by natural forces, the distinction between voluntary and involuntary is superfluous; and the same is true of the impulse which leads to choice.<sup>6</sup> From this conception of freedom as absolute, important conclusions in the matter of salvation are drawn. God wishes us to be saved of ourselves.<sup>7</sup> Because man is not a lifeless instrument, he must hasten to salvation willingly and of set purpose.<sup>8</sup> Readiness of mind is our contribution to salvation.<sup>9</sup> Faith as well as obedience depend on freedom.<sup>10</sup> Choice and life are yoked together.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 18<sup>89, 90</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>33</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>96</sup>; Ec. Pr., 22.<sup>10</sup> Str., ii. 3<sup>11</sup>; ii. 6<sup>26</sup>; ii. 20<sup>113</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>42</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Q. D., c. 10.<sup>8</sup> Str., vii. 7<sup>42</sup>.Cf. iv. 23<sup>150</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>77</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Str., ii. 3.<sup>9</sup> Ec. Pr., 22.<sup>11</sup> Prot., xi. 117.

He who sins of his own will makes choice of punishment.<sup>1</sup> That which is involuntary is not judged.<sup>2</sup> God only requires of us the things that are in our power.<sup>3</sup> By instruction we are taught to will to choose what is best.<sup>4</sup> God Himself has respect to this freedom, and exercises no compulsion in the matter of salvation. No one will be saved against his will, for force is hateful to God.<sup>5</sup> Man must co-operate with God.<sup>6</sup> Those who are foreordained were foreordained because God knew before the foundation of the world that they would be righteous.<sup>7</sup> Even, as has already been noted, the argument from the miraculous must not be such as to compel the assent of the spirit of man; for such compulsion were out of harmony with the nature of God and man.<sup>8</sup> But though God will not compel man, there is a sense in which man may exercise compulsion upon God. The kingdom of God is not for the slack or the sleepers; the "violent take it by force," and snatch life from God; for in such conflicts He rejoices to be defeated.<sup>9</sup>

The prominence thus given by Clement to the self-determination of man seems to leave little scope for the action of divine grace in the specifically Christian sense of the word. True, the God-given wisdom, which is a power of the Father, stimulates the will.<sup>10</sup> In a general way, too, no progress in virtue or knowledge is possible apart from the assistance of God. Because we wander in the darkness of the world, we need a guide who does not stumble nor go astray.<sup>11</sup> By confidence in the Lord we can war against the principalities of darkness.<sup>12</sup> The thoughts of

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 8<sup>89</sup>.      <sup>2</sup> *Str.*, ii. 14<sup>60</sup>.    *Cf.* ii. 15<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. 6<sup>35</sup>.    *Cf.* ii. 16<sup>75</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> *Str.*, vi. 17<sup>157</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> *Stäh.*, vol. iii. p. 217.    *Cf.* p. 55.

<sup>10</sup> *Str.*, v. 13<sup>83</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 3<sup>9</sup>

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 6<sup>26</sup>; vii. 7<sup>48</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> *Q. D.*, c. 10.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, vii. 17<sup>107</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> *Q. D.*, c. 21.

<sup>12</sup> *Str.*, iv. 7<sup>47</sup>.



virtuous men derive their origin from the inspiration of God, from the contact of the divine will with the souls of men.<sup>1</sup> Apart from the Saviour the film of ignorance cannot be removed that man might thus gain true knowledge of himself or of God.<sup>2</sup> The unknown God can only be apprehended by divine grace.<sup>3</sup> But all that refers to the grace of revelation rather than to grace in the usage of the New Testament. When he quotes "by grace are ye saved," he adds, "not, however, without good works."<sup>4</sup> More specifically, the divine grace and the drawing of the Father are required for the pursuit of the good without afterthought, though this must be associated with a holy willingness to learn.<sup>5</sup> The highest and only true form of continence is unattainable without the grace of God.<sup>6</sup> In particular, the effect of the illumination of grace of illumination in Baptism is emphasised.<sup>7</sup> Faith is a grace.<sup>8</sup> By faith on the part of man and divine grace the bonds of ignorance are loosened.<sup>9</sup> The attainment of the perfect good does not depend wholly on ourselves.<sup>10</sup> In spite of such sporadic expressions and the occasional use of the word, the function which grace plays in the teaching of Clement is relatively unimportant.

Virtue is defined by Clement as the harmonious disposition of the soul in harmony with reason in every relation of life.<sup>11</sup> It is described indifferently as a habit or a disposition. Thus self-control is designated as a disposition,<sup>12</sup> purity as a habit, simplicity as a habit, contentment as a habit, goodness as a habit.<sup>13</sup> Virtue is a habit because it depends not on others but on ourselves, and is the property of the

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 17<sup>157</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>7</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>30</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>7</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Str., ii. 18<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 28<sup>178</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib.

<sup>8</sup> Str., i. 7<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Pæd., i. 13<sup>101</sup>. Cf. ib., i. 12<sup>99</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>55</sup>; Str., vii. 7<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 12<sup>82</sup>; v. 13<sup>83</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iii. 7<sup>57</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>29</sup>.

man who has power to exercise it.<sup>1</sup> We are not born with the possession of virtue, nor does it arise in us afterwards as by natural development, for in that case it would not have been voluntary or praiseworthy; nor, like the faculty of speech, does it arise and become perfected by family intercourse.<sup>2</sup> It is natural only in the sense that we are by nature adapted for its acquisition.<sup>3</sup> There are, no doubt, differences in natural aptitude; but the advantage which one derives from nature may be lost by neglect, and one less gifted by nature may strengthen his gift by discipline; for perfection in virtue is not the prerogative of those who have by nature the higher aptitude in the direction of virtue.<sup>4</sup> Righteousness is an attribute independent of race or nationality; one righteous man as such differs not from another righteous man.<sup>5</sup> Virtue is one in power; all the virtues are mutually related.<sup>6</sup> So he that has one virtue gnostically has all the virtues.<sup>7</sup> Because virtue is a habit or disposition, it reaches its ideal when habit becomes nature.<sup>8</sup> Alike in definition and in detail, Clement has much in common with the Stoics;<sup>9</sup> much inevitably followed from the emphasis which he placed on moral freedom.

The question as to "man's chief end" is dealt with at some length by Clement.<sup>10</sup> He details the opinions of the representatives of various schools of philosophy, for the most part without criticism or comment, though he promises to give a refutation of some of them in due time.<sup>11</sup> But both

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 19<sup>124</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>19</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 11<sup>95</sup>. Cf. ib., i. 6<sup>34</sup>, οὐ γὰρ φύσει, μαθήσει δὲ οἱ καλοὶ καγαθοὶ γίνονται.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>34</sup>; vi. 12<sup>69</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 20<sup>97</sup>; viii. 9<sup>30</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., ii. 18<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>46</sup>; iv. 22<sup>138</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> See the parallels quoted by Stählin.

<sup>10</sup> Str., ii. 21, 22<sup>127, 136</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., ii. 21<sup>134</sup>.

by direct approval and by specific appropriation of the words, he accepts the Platonic conception of the end as assimilation to God.<sup>1</sup> This assimilation may also be described as "assimilation to right reason," but in this connection associated with our restoration through the Son to perfect adoption.<sup>2</sup> The end, he says, is precisely described by the Apostle in the words, "But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the *end* eternal life."<sup>3</sup> It is the ideal set forth in the exhortation to "be perfect as the Father in heaven."<sup>4</sup> This likeness is closely related to, if not dependent on, and one with, the knowledge of Him. The greatest thing assuredly is the knowledge of God.<sup>5</sup> To know God is to share in immortality.<sup>6</sup> The most perfect good is gnosis, for it is chosen for its own sake.<sup>7</sup> The one end of good and of life is to become a lover of God.<sup>8</sup> But this likeness has its limitations. We are called upon by the Scripture to strive to know God as far as possible.<sup>9</sup> It is impossible and impracticable for any one to become perfect as God is perfect, for that were to imply that the virtue of man and God is the same. All that is demanded is that, living according to the obedience of the Gospel, we should be irreproachably perfect.<sup>10</sup> Moreover, by assimilation to God is meant assimilation to God the Saviour, and that only as far as possible for human nature.<sup>11</sup> For to this, too, there is a limit. "It is sufficient if we be as the Master, not in respect of essence, for it is impossible that that which is by adoption should be equal in point of subsistence to that which is by nature."<sup>12</sup> Such being the end, the question arises, Was this end a universal

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 22<sup>136</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib.; Rom. vi. 22, τὸ δὲ τέλος.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vii. 14<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., vii. 14<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>96</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., ii. 9<sup>45</sup>; vi. 12<sup>104</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 22<sup>134</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>27</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., ii. 10<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., ii. 17<sup>77</sup>.

end, or one to be pursued by, and restricted to, a limited spiritual aristocracy? Was it open to, and incumbent on, the man of faith—the simple believer—or the prerogative and ideal only of the man of gnosis?

The relation of faith to gnosis—with the twofold ideal of Christian life based thereon—is one of the most distinctive features in the ethical teaching of Clement. The fluctuating character of his conception of faith or its application may be illustrated by the varying interpretations which he puts on the same passage of Scripture. He quotes four times the saying in Isaiah, “Unless ye believe, ye shall not understand,”<sup>1</sup> and on each occasion he puts a different interpretation on the word “believe.” In one case he takes it in the sense of belief in contrast with unbelief, and asks, confirming his view by a saying of Heraclitus, How could a soul admit the transcendent contemplation of the things of God, while belief in regard to the instruction created an inner conflict?<sup>2</sup> In another passage he interprets it as meaning that a belief in Christ, who was prophesied through the law, was essential to the understanding of the Old Covenant which He Himself interpreted at His coming.<sup>3</sup> Elsewhere he characterises faith as a reasonable standard of judgment which gives a firm basis for the recognition of the divine words and begets full persuasion.<sup>4</sup> In another passage he finds in it a confirmation of the definition—likewise confirmed by a saying of Heraclitus—that faith is a preconception of the mind, and adds that as preconception is essential to understanding, no one can understand without faith.<sup>5</sup>

Faith is opposed on the one hand to unbelief, which is the mere negative supposition of opposition to belief, and on the other to hardness of belief, which is a habit that

<sup>1</sup> Isa. vii. 9.

<sup>2</sup> Str., ii. 2<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 21<sup>134</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 1<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>17</sup>.

is slow to admit faith.<sup>1</sup> Unbelief dies when faith is shed over us.<sup>2</sup> To believe the truth brings life, as to disbelieve it brings death.<sup>3</sup> The change from unbelief to belief is a divine change.<sup>4</sup>

Faith is not a vain and barbarous thing, as the Greeks calumniate it, but it is a voluntary preconception, the assent of piety, "the assurance of things hoped for, the proof of things not seen." It has also been defined as the assent of the intellect to an unseen object, as certainly the demonstration of a thing unknown is a manifest assent. It is the beginning of action, for it is the foundation of the intelligent choice which is based on the demonstration given by faith, and choice is the beginning of action.<sup>5</sup> It is the rational assent of the self-determining soul.<sup>6</sup> It is thus an activity of the reason as well as of the religious spirit. From the former point of view it is essential to the learning of anything; for if faith be a preconception of the intellect, one will never learn without faith, since one cannot learn without preconception.<sup>7</sup> As an assent, it is the basis of opinion and judgment and of all that makes possible our intercourse with our fellow-men.<sup>8</sup> It is in every relation of life universally necessary.<sup>9</sup> The past and the future fall within its scope.<sup>10</sup> It is no barren assent, for it is the doer of good things and the foundation of doing justice.<sup>11</sup> So more distinctly is it with faith on its religious side as the assent of piety. It is a certain inward good, and without seeking after God it both confirms His existence and glorifies Him as existent.<sup>12</sup> It is no mere human acquirement, but something divine.<sup>13</sup> It is a power of God, being the force of the truth.<sup>14</sup> It is a force unto salvation and a power unto eternal

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 6<sup>28</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ec. Pr., 12.<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 3<sup>8</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 6<sup>31</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>8,9</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>3</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>17</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., ii. 12<sup>55</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., ii. 5<sup>28</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., ii. 12<sup>54</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>86</sup>.<sup>12</sup> Ib., vii. 10<sup>55</sup>.<sup>13</sup> Ib., ii. 6<sup>30</sup>.<sup>14</sup> Str., ii. 11<sup>48</sup>.



life.<sup>1</sup> The teaching of philosophy is a gift, but faith is a grace.<sup>2</sup> The Holy Spirit is breathed into those who have believed.<sup>3</sup> By bare faith, without demonstration, the power of God is able to save.<sup>4</sup> He who believes the Scriptures as the voice of God has a demonstration that cannot be gain-said.<sup>5</sup> Faith is the irrefragable criterion.<sup>6</sup> It is essential to salvation,<sup>7</sup> but works must follow if salvation is to be secured.<sup>8</sup> It justified even those who were before the law, and made them partakers of the divine promise.<sup>9</sup> Yet to those who were righteous according to law, faith was wanting; wherefore the Lord said, "Thy faith hath saved thee."<sup>10</sup> Faith is twofold, the faith of science and the faith of opinion.<sup>11</sup> When the Apostle speaks of the "righteousness of God as revealed from faith to faith,"<sup>12</sup> he seems to proclaim a twofold faith, or rather one faith which admits of growth and perfecting; for the common faith lies beneath as a foundation. The special faith, which is built upon it, is perfected along with the believer, and brought to completion along with that which results from instruction and fulfilling the commandments of the Lord. Such was the faith of the apostles which could remove mountains.<sup>13</sup> Perfection of faith is to be distinguished from the common faith.<sup>14</sup> Faith is akin to trust, but trust is more than faith. For when one knows that the Son of God is Teacher, he trusts that His teaching is true. And as instruction, according to Empedocles, will make the mind grow, so he that trusts in the Lord will make faith grow.<sup>15</sup> Faith, then, in the conception of Clement, is at once an intellectual act and a spiritual act or attitude, a divine force, yet voluntary, no mere theological or even religious principle, but one of

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 12<sup>53</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>38</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>88</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>9</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>9</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>12</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>38</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>108</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>12</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., vi. 6<sup>44</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., ii. 11<sup>48</sup>.<sup>12</sup> Rom. i. 17.<sup>13</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>2</sup>.<sup>14</sup> Ib., iv. 16<sup>100</sup>.<sup>15</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>85</sup>. Cf. ib., ii. 6<sup>28</sup>.

universal sweep and significance, one in its origin but varied in its development, sometimes related to teaching rather than to a person, unless so far as a person is behind the words and commands assent and gives authority to that which is believed,—the faith of the Epistle to the Hebrews rather than the justifying faith of St Paul.

As the conception of faith is fluctuating, so also is the conception of knowledge. Of knowledge in general—apart from any Christian or religious application—Clement says that the word is used in a twofold sense. The first, the knowledge commonly so called, is that which appears universally in all men, in which not only the rational powers but also the irrational powers participate, whose nature it is to apprehend through the senses. To such he refuses the name of knowledge. Knowledge, properly so called, derives its impress from judgment and reason, and thus only the rational powers form cognitions, which are applied to things intellectual by the bare activity of the soul.<sup>1</sup> From this point of view, knowledge is the peculiar property of the rational soul. It is the beginning and author of all rational action. For action is based on impulse, and impulse is based on knowledge.<sup>2</sup> In a narrower sense knowledge is used of the esoteric tradition given by the Lord to the Apostles, and transmitted by them to the few in an unwritten form.<sup>3</sup> This is supported by Scripture, in particular by the authority of St Paul. He says, "We know that we all have knowledge," that is, common knowledge in common things, and the knowledge that there is one God. For he was writing to believers. "But *the* knowledge is not in all"—that is, the knowledge which was transmitted among the few.<sup>4</sup> Prophecy was full of this knowledge.

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>68</sup>, 69.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>54</sup>, 61.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 15<sup>97</sup>; 1 Cor. viii. 1, 7. Cf. Stäh., vol. iii. p. 227, fr. 60.

Related to this, but not to be identified with it, is a third form of knowledge—that of gnosis in Clement's sense of the word. It may be defined as "a kind of perfection of man as man, being completed by the science of divine things, in respect of character and life and speech, harmonious and consistent with itself and the divine word." All knowledge is wisdom; but all wisdom is not knowledge.<sup>1</sup> Knowledge is wisdom,—that is, it is a sure and firm science and apprehension of the things that are, and will be, and have been.<sup>2</sup> This wisdom is to be contrasted with the wisdom which furnishes experience of the things relating to life. It is eternal, while the other is useful in time; it is one and the same, while the other assumes many and diverse forms; it is without any movement of passion, while the other is accompanied with passionate desire.<sup>3</sup> The pre-eminence of knowledge is indicated by the prophet when he says, "Goodness and instruction and knowledge teach me," thus presenting in progressive order the guiding principle of perfection.<sup>4</sup> Its goal is contemplation, the immediate vision of God.<sup>5</sup> But it is not a barren contemplation. For the vision of God purity is necessary, and by knowledge the purification of the ruling principle of the soul is effected.<sup>6</sup> A tree is known by its fruit, not by its blossom, so knowledge is not characterised by word and blossoms but by fruit and way of life. For it is not a mere word but a certain divine science, and the light which, springing up in the soul, makes all things luminous in their origin, and prepares man to know himself and teaches him how to attain to God.<sup>7</sup> Knowledge is perfected by word and deed.<sup>8</sup> Works follow knowledge as the shadow the body.<sup>9</sup> It

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 10<sup>55</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>61</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>54</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>36</sup>; Ps. 119<sup>68</sup>, LXX.<sup>5</sup> Str., ii. 10<sup>47</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>39</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., iii. 5<sup>44</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. 17<sup>109</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., vii. 13<sup>82</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 28.

teaches us to discern the things that contribute to the permanence of virtue. As the greatest of all things is the knowledge of God, in this way virtue is so preserved that its loss is impossible.<sup>1</sup> These are the more general characteristics of knowledge, its source, its goal, its fruit: to know more fully what it is, we must look at it more narrowly as contrasted with, and as related to, faith, and as embodied in the gnostic.

Two false views of the relation of faith to knowledge must be set aside. The Valentinians, says Clement, assign faith to us the simple and knowledge to themselves. They hold that knowledge springs up in those who are saved by nature in accordance with the superiority of a germ of excellence, and that it is as widely separated from faith as the spiritual from the psychical. But, rejoins Clement, if that were so, if faith were not a voluntary assent but an advantage of nature, moral responsibility would be plainly destroyed.<sup>2</sup> Another error, dealing not with the origin or nature of faith but with its object, has also to be rejected. Clement refers to some who held that faith was concerned with the Son but knowledge with the Father. He replies that Fatherhood implied Sonship, and that the two cannot in this way be separated. To believe in the Son we must know the Father, and to know the Father we must believe in the Son; for it is through the Son that the Father comes from faith to knowledge. The knowledge of the Son and Father is the comprehension of the Truth by the Truth.<sup>3</sup>

The general principle is that faith and knowledge are indissolubly related. "Neither is knowledge without faith, nor faith without knowledge."<sup>4</sup> By a certain divine sequence and reciprocity faith is an attribute of know-

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 7<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 3<sup>10, 11</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib.

ledge and knowledge is an attribute of faith.<sup>1</sup> Between them there is a natural relationship and adaptation. "As to the man who has hands it is natural to grasp, and to him who has healthy eyes to see the light, so to him who has received faith it is the natural prerogative to participate in knowledge."<sup>2</sup> Faith is as essential to the gnostic as respiration is to life. As without the four elements it is not possible to live, so without faith it is not possible to follow after knowledge.<sup>3</sup> In one sense, faith is more authoritative than science and its criterion;<sup>4</sup> in another sense, to know is more than to believe.<sup>5</sup> In one sense, faith is independent of knowledge, and has to do with a sphere where science cannot act. For faith deals with first principles, and first principles, being incapable of demonstration, can only be apprehended by faith, which leads up from that which cannot be demonstrated to that which is universal and simple.<sup>6</sup> In another sense, knowledge rests upon faith, enriching and extending its scope, and on the ground of things which are already believed, creates faith in things which are not yet believed, the faith so created being, as it were, the essence of demonstration.<sup>7</sup> Faith is the foundation of knowledge,<sup>8</sup> and by knowledge is faith made perfect.<sup>9</sup> "Knowledge is a kind of perfection of man as man. To have no doubt in reference to God, but to have faith in Him, is the foundation of knowledge; and Christ is both the foundation and the superstructure, through Whom also are the beginnings and the ends."<sup>10</sup> In contradistinction to gnostic perfection, the Apostle sometimes calls the common faith the foundation, sometimes "milk" as opposed to gnostic food.<sup>11</sup> "Faith,

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 4<sup>16</sup>. Cf. vi. 8<sup>68</sup>; vi. 9<sup>76</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 17<sup>152</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., ii. 6<sup>31</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>109</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 4<sup>13, 14</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>6</sup>; vii. 3<sup>20</sup>; ii. 11<sup>51</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>164</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., vii. 10<sup>55</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., v. 4<sup>26</sup>.



then, so to speak, is a summary knowledge of the essentials, but knowledge is a demonstration sure and firm of the things received through the faith, being built on the faith by means of the teaching of the Lord, carrying us on to that which is irrefragable and scientifically apprehended.”<sup>1</sup> In such passages faith seems to be used for the contents rather than for the act of faith. Faith, then, is perfect in the sense that a foundation is perfect; it is imperfect in the sense that a foundation is imperfect without a superstructure. The superstructure is knowledge, which, however, is not to be conceived as standing in any merely external relation to faith, but as to something with which it is in vital union, as a natural development of it, and a scientific demonstration of its sphere and object.<sup>2</sup>

This is the ruling conception of the relation of faith to knowledge, though at times, in antagonism to the heretical depreciation of faith, he represents faith as perfect and complete in itself.<sup>3</sup> It is to be noted, moreover, that in depicting the ideal Christian under the designation of the gnostic, he emphasises the points in which knowledge is superior to faith, ignoring the common aspects, much more the points of equality.

The relation of the leading virtues to one another is not uniformly set forth. “The consideration that he is ignorant is the first lesson given to the man who is walking according to the Word. An ignorant man has sought, and having sought he finds, the Teacher; and having found he believed; and having believed he hopes; and having loved he is thenceforward assimilated to Him who has been loved, eager to be that which he first loved.”<sup>4</sup> Thus the order is,

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 10<sup>57</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> How strongly Clement felt the necessity of faith being supplemented by knowledge is seen by the addition of the words “ac speculatione” to “fide” in his *Adum.* in I P. i. 5 (Stäh., vol. iii. p. 203).

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Pæd.*, i. 6<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., v. 3<sup>17</sup>.

ignorance, faith, hope, love. And love is perfected by knowledge.<sup>1</sup> So elsewhere he says that knowledge has for its foundation the holy triad—faith, hope, and love.<sup>2</sup> In a later book of the *Stromateis* he reverses this relation of love and knowledge. "To him that hath shall be added, to faith knowledge, and to knowledge love, and to love the inheritance."<sup>3</sup> The first saving change is from heathenism to faith, a second from faith to knowledge, and this finding its end in love, makes that which knows the friend of that which is known.<sup>4</sup> The perfection of a man of faith is love.<sup>5</sup> Thus in every case faith precedes knowledge and love; but sometimes knowledge is represented as the crown of love, sometimes love as the crown of knowledge. The last is the dominant thought. Knowledge can be taught; it stands between faith and love, which are not taught.<sup>6</sup>

The man of faith and the man of knowledge differ widely in their attitude towards divine truth generally, and, in particular, in their apprehension of the Scriptures. The man of faith only tastes the Scriptures; the gnostic is their true interpreter. The man of faith is as the layman to the skilled craftsman in the matters of daily life.<sup>7</sup> Without letters it is possible to be a man of faith, but not to comprehend the things spoken of in the faith.<sup>8</sup> The gnostic is the scholar of the Spirit. To him the law is not merely a stepping-stone, but he comprehends it as delivered by the Lord.<sup>9</sup> This knowledge is intrusted as a deposit to those who show themselves worthy of the teaching.<sup>10</sup> The difference in content and scope is indicated by the Apostle in the Epistle to the Colossians.<sup>11</sup> The mysteries which were

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 9<sup>45</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 10<sup>67</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vii. 4<sup>55</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 21<sup>130</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 7<sup>54</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ad. in 1 Joan. 4<sup>18</sup>, vol. iii. p. 214.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>95</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., vii. 10<sup>55</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 10<sup>55</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Col. i. 9<sup>11</sup>; i. 25<sup>27</sup>.

hidden until the time of the apostles, and were delivered by them as they received them from the Lord, and "now manifested to the saints," are one thing; and a different thing is "the riches of the glory of the mystery in the Gentiles,"—that is, the faith and the hope in Christ, elsewhere called the foundation.<sup>1</sup> This insight of the gnostic is conditioned by righteousness; for as one increases in righteousness, the nearer to him is the Spirit who is the source of illumination.<sup>2</sup> Such an one apprehends what seems to be incomprehensible to others; for he has believed that nothing is incomprehensible to the Son of God, and therefore, nothing that is untaught,—for He who suffered from love to us would have kept back nothing with a view to our instruction in knowledge.<sup>3</sup> The Word designed the truth to be a living force, and not to be a pretext for intellectual indolence.<sup>4</sup> The difference between the man of faith and the gnostic in regard to the truth of Scripture is thus the difference between the pupil, who has learned and is satisfied with the rudiments, and the advanced scholar; between him who merely grazes the surface and him who searches into the deep things of God; between him who is startled as by a sudden light breaking in upon him in the twilight and him whose eye has been trained for the sure vision and apprehension of the truth;<sup>5</sup> between him who has but entered on the path that leads to life and him who has been initiated into the mysteries of the esoteric tradition. The difference is one not of nature but of training; it is not a difference of kind but of degree or status in the spiritual life; there is no impassable barrier between the stages; any man may "seek and find," and from being a man of faith may become a man of knowledge.

While on the purely intellectual side the distinction

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 10<sup>60, 61</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 17<sup>107</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>70</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 10<sup>51</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Ec. Pr., 35, 32.

between the man of faith and the gnostic is not absolute but one of natural gradation, yet when we pass into the sphere of ethical ideals the transition is not so easily bridged. No doubt, here too they have much in common. All the principles and their applications in questions of practical morals, which are enforced in the *Pædagogus*, are incumbent on both. The gnostic not less than the man of faith must carry out his life in conformity with the precepts of the Word, must direct all his affairs in accordance with reason, must be on his guard not only against every form of vice but every form of extravagance, must fulfil in every detail the principle of doing nothing contrary to nature, dare not, like the heretical gnostic, claim on the ground of special illumination to be indifferent to or superior to the conditions of ordinary morality,—must, in a word, be faithful to all the prescriptions necessary for securing moral health. On the other hand, when it is a question of ethical motives and ideals, there seems a clear antagonism of principles.

The gnostic recognises sin in itself. He condemns not any particular sin but all sin absolutely. His is not the repentance common to all believers, which is the result of past transgressions, but that of him who, knowing the nature of sin, aims at the goal of entire abstinence from sin, the ideal result of which is not-sinning.<sup>1</sup> His repentance has no relation to fear; it is the shame of the soul in itself arising from conscience.<sup>2</sup>

But this does not imply a merely negative goal for the gnostic, but the contrary. While the virtue of the man of faith, his absolute perfection, is purely negative, lying in the mere abstinence from evil, that of the gnostic is positive,

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>37</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 15. "He that hath believed has obtained forgiveness of sins from the Lord, but he that is in the condition of knowledge, as one who sins no longer, obtains from himself the forgiveness of the rest."

having as its goal the unchangeable habit of well-doing after the will of God.<sup>1</sup> The man of faith is limited in the range of his moral activities; he may successfully accomplish one or two things, but not all things nor with the highest science.<sup>2</sup> The righteousness of the man of faith is not true righteousness, for it lacks the notes of progress and perfection that mark the righteousness of the gnostic.<sup>3</sup> Only the action of the gnostic can claim to be moral in the strict sense of the word. "Every action of the gnostic is right action, but that of the simple believer might be called intermediate, as not yet perfected in accordance with reason; but every act of the heathen, on the other hand, is sinful. For not simply to do well, but to perform actions with a certain goal in view and to act in accordance with reason, is exhibited in the Scriptures as morally fitting."<sup>4</sup> This is in harmony with the action of God Himself. He created all things by the Word (Reason), and the man who becomes a gnostic performs good actions by the reasoning faculty.<sup>5</sup>

The higher ethical stage is marked in a very specific manner by the purity of motive, which gives to every action a distinctive character. While the man of faith is influenced by fear of punishment or hope of recompense, the gnostic is spontaneously good, acts only under the influence of love, and for the sake of the good itself, and not for the sake of its results.<sup>6</sup> His self-control is not like that of the dog which refrains because it fears the uplifted hand.<sup>7</sup> The motive of his abstinence is not fear, but love.<sup>8</sup> As little does it rest on love of honour or riches or bodily health.<sup>9</sup> His courage is not the irrational courage of the child, the wild

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 7<sup>60</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 12.

<sup>2</sup> Str., vii. 14<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>102</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 14<sup>111</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>136</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>135</sup>, 143, 144; vi. 12<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>146</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ec. Pr., 19. Cf. Adum. in 1 Joan. 2<sup>3</sup>, vol. iii. p. 212.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., vii. 11<sup>68</sup>.



beast, or the juggler, but the courage which is in accordance with reason, and is inspired by the love which is the fruit of knowledge.<sup>1</sup> All thought even of recompense after death must be eliminated from the service of the gnostic.<sup>2</sup> He practises piety, drawn by the love of Him who is the Beloved. "So that, not even supposing that he were to receive permission from God to do what is forbidden without being punished for it, nor even if he were to receive a promise that he would receive as reward the good things of the blessed on these terms, nor if he were persuaded that what he did would escape the knowledge of God—which is impossible—would he ever wish to act contrary to right reason, having once for all made choice of that which is truly good and to be chosen for its own sake, and on this ground beloved."<sup>3</sup> Nay, even the pursuit of knowledge itself must be freed not merely from base alloy or any consideration of practical need, but even from the desire of salvation. "For I would dare to affirm that he who pursues knowledge for the sake of the divine science itself will not choose knowledge from a wish to be saved. If, therefore, one were, *ex hypothesi*, to offer to the gnostic which of the two he would wish to choose, knowledge of God or eternal salvation, and if these two, which are absolutely identical, were separable, he would without any hesitation whatsoever choose the knowledge of God, having formed the judgment that the distinctive quality of faith, which through love has mounted to knowledge, is to be chosen for its own sake."<sup>4</sup> Truly the utterance of a "bold and joyous thinker."<sup>5</sup>

Of all the characteristic features in the portrait of the wise man of the Stoics which Clement has transferred to his representation of the Christian ideal, the most distinc-

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 10<sup>59</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>144</sup>; vii. 12<sup>69</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>145</sup>, 146.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>136</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Harnack, 'History of Dogma,' vol. ii. p. 328.

tive, even if the most alien to the spirit of Christianity, is that of "apathy"—passionlessness. It would be easy to point out differences between the Stoic wise man and the gnostic in respect of the conceptions of freedom, wealth, beauty, kingship; but that has little bearing on the question of Clement's indebtedness in the matter of apathy. He not only has borrowed the word and the conception, but the theory of relation of other virtues to this fundamental virtue. By apathy or the passionless state he distinctly states that he does not mean mastery over the passions, but their extirpation.<sup>1</sup> Self-control is necessary, as man is by nature subject to passion.<sup>2</sup> It is the mark of the man who restrains the impulses that are contrary to right reason, or who restrains himself that he has no impulse contrary to right reason.<sup>3</sup> But even this absolute self-restraint is but a stage in the direction of that complete emancipation from passion which apathy implies.<sup>4</sup> The gnostic is subject to the passions, such as hunger, thirst, and the like, that exist for the continuance of the body,<sup>5</sup> but otherwise every element of passion must be cut out from the soul.<sup>6</sup> He who has not willed to root out the passions of the soul kills himself.<sup>7</sup> As God is passionless, it were unseemly that the friend of God should be engrossed with the restraint of passion.<sup>8</sup> As his Teacher is passionless, so by fellowship with the Beloved must the scholar become.<sup>9</sup> This condition was attained by the righteous men of old, who, while yet in the body, enjoyed passionlessness and imperturbability.<sup>10</sup> When the Lord says in the Psalm, "Ye are gods, . . . and sons of the Highest, all of you," he refers to the gnostics who have mastered the passions, who reject as far as possible everything that is

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 9<sup>74</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 18<sup>81</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., ii. 18<sup>80</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 13<sup>106</sup>; iv. 22<sup>137, 139</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 9<sup>71</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ec. Pr., 31.<sup>7</sup> Str., vii., 12<sup>72</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 9<sup>76</sup>.Ib., vi. 9<sup>72</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., iv. 7<sup>55</sup>.

human.<sup>1</sup> Though the word "apathy" is not applied to the apostles, it is implied that they possessed it after the resurrection of Christ, as they are represented as not being subject even to such movements of feeling as seem good, but as abiding always in one unchangeable habit of discipline.<sup>2</sup> And this unity of the moral life is one with the condition of apathy, and is to be contrasted with the varying condition that arises from the passionate attachment to things material.<sup>3</sup> Apart from these allusions, nowhere is the virtue of apathy supported by any reference to the teaching of the Scriptures. In the chapter<sup>4</sup> in which the apathy of the gnostic is exhibited in most detail, there are allusions to the "tent," and to "putting to death the desires," which suggest passages in the Epistles of St Paul,<sup>5</sup> but there is no direct appeal to any passage of Scripture. It has only scriptural basis so far as his distinction of the carnal spirit from the ruling faculty may be held to be based on the teaching of St Paul as to the enmity between the flesh and the spirit with which he formally connects it.<sup>6</sup> This complete conquest of the passions logically involved sinlessness; but though, indeed, he says that the gnostic is bound to be sinless,<sup>7</sup> he expressly disclaims elsewhere the possibility of sinless perfection on the part of any man.<sup>8</sup> This illustrates the danger, in the case of a writer like Clement, of putting a dogmatic construction on an incidental phrase or phrases. Clement's conception of apathy, however, though it represents the same attitude to the sensuous nature of man, differs from the Stoic conception in respect of the love which was no less an essential attribute of the gnostic, and in respect of the goal

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 20<sup>125</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 9<sup>71</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 23<sup>152</sup>, 22<sup>139</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 9.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Cor. v. 1; Col. iii. 5.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>134, 136</sup>; Gal. v. 17.

<sup>7</sup> Str., iv. 9<sup>75</sup>. Cf. vii. 3<sup>14</sup>; Col. iii. 5.

<sup>8</sup> Str., iv. 21<sup>130</sup>, ii. 12<sup>70</sup>; Pæd., iii. 12<sup>93</sup>.

of assimilation to God with the immediate vision of Him as its necessary concomitant. Of one object to this union of love with the passionless state Clement takes notice. "If close union with that which is good is accompanied by longing, how can he abide passionless who has a longing for that which is good?" Clement rejoins that love is free from longing or desire, because it is already in possession. "Such objectors do not know the divinity of love. For love is not a longing on the part of him who loves, but a loving union which restores the gnostic to the 'unity of the faith,' as he is independent of time and place. But he who by the agency of love is already among the things in which he shall be, has anticipated hope through knowledge, and does not long for anything, as he has as far as possible the very thing for which he longed."<sup>1</sup> The relation of apathy to knowledge and likeness to God is frequently noted. "Pure, therefore, in respect of bodily desires and of holy thoughts he wishes them to be who arrive at the full knowledge of God, in order that the ruling principle of the soul may have nothing spurious to stand in the way of its power. When he who shares in gnostic fashion in this holy quality devotes himself to contemplation, holding pure converse with God, he comes more immediately into the condition of passionless identity, so as no longer to have science and possess knowledge, but to be science and knowledge."<sup>2</sup> "When a man has transcended passion and desire, and loves the creation for the sake of the God and Creator of all, he will live gnostically. He has acquired the effortless habit of self-control, in accordance with the assimilation to the Saviour. He has formed into a unity knowledge, faith, love; he is one henceforward in judgment and truly spiritual; he is absolutely incapable of admitting the

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi, 9<sup>73</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv, 6<sup>40</sup>.

thoughts that arise from passion and desire, being perfected 'after the image' of the Lord by the Artificer Himself, a perfect man, worthy to be called 'brother' by the Lord, being at once friend and son."<sup>1</sup>

The vision of God is the supreme felicity of the gnostic. In some passages it is hard to say whether Clement is referring to the present earnest or the future realisation; but the complete realisation is yet to be. He seeks to explain in ordinary language what St Paul meant by "seeing God face to face," what Jesus meant by the vision which He promised to "the pure in heart," and when He spoke of the "many mansions in His Father's house." It is indifferently described as the soul's rest in God and as God's rest in the soul. "Knowledge," it is said, "easily transplants a man to that which is akin to the soul and divine and holy, and by a light of its own carries him through the mystic stages of progress until it restores him to the crowning place of rest, having brought him who is pure in heart to behold God face to face with science and apprehension."<sup>2</sup> "The gnostic souls come to places even better than those that preceded, no longer greeting the divine vision in mirrors or by means of mirrors, feasting with loving souls on the vision that is never sated. This is the 'apprehensive presentation' of the pure in heart."<sup>3</sup> It is characteristic of Clement that just as he employs the Stoic term "apathy" to express the goal of the gnostic on the ethical side, so he uses the "apprehensive presentation" of the Stoics to express the highest end of the gnostic on the intellectual and spiritual side. By this term is meant, according to Professor Edward Caird, "a presentation or idea which grasps or enables the mind to grasp the object as it really is."<sup>4</sup> This well expresses the thought of Clement. His

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 10<sup>69</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 9<sup>57</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>15</sup>. Cf. vii. 3<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> 'Evolution of Religion in the Greek Philosophers,' vol. ii. p. 132.



conception of eternal life is "an end that knows no end,"<sup>1</sup> a goal that never reaches completion, a continuous advance, a vision of God ever growing in fulness and clearness, a fellowship with God ever growing in nearness and intensity. Can any conception be more ennobling and inspiring? At every stage in that life the soul's thirst after God will be satisfied; but, as God is infinite, and man though endowed with immortality is finite, eternal life must mean eternal progress, new revelations of God awakening ever-renewed activities, new insight into the unfathomable depths of the love of God in Christ, new glimpses of the beauty of Absolute Holiness.

To what extent is this ideal of the Christian life attainable here and now, or is it only to be attained in the future? Some of the features in the portrait of the gnostic are not his prerogative or exclusive goal. That his every thought may be a prayer, his every deed a sacrifice, his soul a temple, that the unseen and the future may be as real as, nay more real than, the things that lie at his feet, that by fixing his thought on spiritual things he may become detached from material things, is the aspiration of every Christian spirit.<sup>2</sup> But there are other elements in the delineation of which this cannot be said. The science of the gnostic becomes indefectible, being as much an essential attribute of him as weight in a stone.<sup>3</sup> By his knowledge he has all things potentially, though not numerically.<sup>4</sup> By knowledge itself he becomes a partaker of the divine will.<sup>5</sup> He has already become, as it were, out of the flesh and above the world.<sup>6</sup> Such an one has already attained the condition of being equal to the angels.<sup>7</sup> He is destined

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 22<sup>134</sup>; vii. 10<sup>86</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>46</sup>; iv. 22<sup>139</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vii. 14<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. ib., vi. 12<sup>102</sup>; vii. 12<sup>78</sup>; iv. 23<sup>143</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 12<sup>78</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vi. 13<sup>105</sup>, vii. 12<sup>78</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 37.

to be a god, and even now is being likened unto God.<sup>1</sup> He is divine and holy, God-bearing and God-borne.<sup>2</sup> He is a god moving about in the flesh.<sup>3</sup> Perfection takes place when any one hangs on the Lord by means of faith and love and knowledge, and ascends with Him to the place where the God and Guardian of our faith and love is.<sup>4</sup> He cleaves the heavens through his science, and passing through the spiritual essences and every principality and power, he lays hold of the highest thrones, hastening to that alone which alone he knows.<sup>5</sup>

On the face of it, it would seem that this angelic being, this God in human form, utterly unfettered by the flesh, this knowledge incarnate, can, in the intensity of his gaze and concentration on the unapproachable heights, have little interest in men or in human affairs. But the duty of teaching and moulding others is an essential mark of the gnostic faculty.<sup>6</sup> "These three things our philosopher holds fast: first, contemplation; in the second place, the fulfilment of the Commandments; thirdly, the making of good men. These in their union perfect the gnostic. If any of these be wanting, the contents of the knowledge are defective."<sup>7</sup> He who is likened to the Saviour is given to saving.<sup>8</sup> In imitation of the divine purpose, he does good to all who are willing to the best of his power.<sup>9</sup> In respect of the beneficence of his teaching, he may be called a living image of the Lord.<sup>10</sup> Thanksgiving and prayer for the conversion of his neighbours are the work of the gnostic.<sup>11</sup> In such service of humanity is true devoutness. The best harvest of the piety of the gnostic is that of the men who have believed through his instrumentality

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 1<sup>3</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., vii. 13<sup>82</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vii. 16<sup>101</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., vii. 9<sup>56</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., vii. 13<sup>82</sup>. Cf. vi. 13<sup>105</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., vii. 1<sup>4</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., ii. 10<sup>46</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 9<sup>77</sup>.<sup>9</sup> Ib., vii. 3<sup>16</sup>.<sup>10</sup> Ib., vii. 9<sup>82</sup>.<sup>11</sup> Ib., vii. 7<sup>41</sup>.

and have been brought into the way of salvation.<sup>1</sup> In such an atmosphere mysticism in the narrower sense of the word cannot live. "The mystic ideal," it has been said, "is not a life of ethical energy among mankind; it is the eye turned wholly inwards, the life spent in contemplation and devout communion."<sup>2</sup> To this type of mystic Clement did not belong. There is a mystic element in his ideal, as in every attempt to express in words the intercourse of the spirit of man with God, and he uses language which any mystic could appropriate; but nothing could be further from his mode of thought than any form of selfish ecstasy or the loss of self-consciousness in communion with God. If he "stands on earth on tiptoe,"<sup>3</sup> to use his own metaphor, he never loses contact with earth and with the needs of men. If, like Moses, he ascends the mountain to hold unbroken fellowship with God, he comes down transfigured indeed with the radiance of that fellowship, but with the Commandments in his hand. In the presence of this love for others mysticism loses its self-centred note, and apathy, save in the limited sense of self-conquest with a view to the higher service of others, becomes impossible. The moral ideal of Clement was an endeavour to harmonise elements that were discordant and antagonistic: formally, the victory lay with Stoicism; in reality, with Christianity.

To questions of social ethics Clement attached great importance. Of these the most urgent in Alexandria were the question of marriage and the relation of the Gospel to men of wealth.

Clement's conception of marriage was determined in part by his view of the relation of man to woman

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Prof. Pringle-Pattison, "Mysticism" (Ency. Brit.)

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>16</sup>.

generally, in part by his Hellenic birth and training, in part by the necessity of refuting the teaching of heretics, but by all these elements as modified and permeated by the teaching of Scripture, especially of Christ and the Apostles.

Man and woman have one God and one Tutor. They have a common life, a common grace, a common salvation, a common virtue and way of life.<sup>1</sup> Woman has the same nature as man, and should possess the same virtue. Virtue is not a matter of sex. Woman is to cultivate temperance and righteousness as well as man. Woman differs from man in the distinctive constitution of the body and the functions relating thereto; but in respect of the soul they are the same.<sup>2</sup> Women, therefore, are to philosophise in like manner as men, but men, unless they have become effeminate, should carry off the highest honours.<sup>3</sup> The Church is full of women who, like philosophers, have all their life made a "study" of death.<sup>4</sup> As it is a noble thing for a man to die for virtue and for freedom, so it is for a woman. For this is not an attribute peculiar to the nature of the male, but to the nature of the good.<sup>5</sup> Marriage is an equal yoke.<sup>6</sup> The difference of sex may show that marriage is natural; but the attitude of the Christian towards marriage must be influenced by consideration of the fact that the distinction of sex is earthly and temporal, and not spiritual and eternal.<sup>7</sup>

In accordance with the Greek way of thinking, Clement teaches that the primary end of marriage is the procreation of children as a duty that we owe to the State.

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 4<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 8<sup>62</sup>. Cf. Plato, *Rep.*, 455 C.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 8<sup>67</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Str.*, iv. 8<sup>59, 60</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> *Str.*, iv. 8<sup>58</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 4<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 4<sup>10</sup>; *Str.*, iii. 12<sup>87</sup>; vi. 12<sup>100</sup>.

We must by all means marry for our Fatherland, for the succession of children, and for the perfection of the world, as far as it lies with us. He quotes with approval the action of legislators like the Spartans and the view of philosophers with respect to the unmarried.<sup>1</sup> From a like point of view he commends marriage because of the intense sympathy of a wife in sickness and old age. The duty of marriage, however, is to be fulfilled in accordance with a fitting time and person and age, and with discrimination. The man and the woman should be in every respect alike, and the woman be fond of the man who loves her, not by force or necessity.<sup>2</sup>

In Alexandria there were two types of heretics who from different points of view had promulgated tenets equally subversive of Christian morals. There were those who in the name of liberty and knowledge taught the moral indifference of actions, and claimed that the more they abused the lower nature the more they honoured the higher, and that the ordinary laws of morality were not binding on those who reached the dignity of being "sons of the highest God" and "lords of the Sabbath," as they described themselves.<sup>3</sup> Of such Clement says that they acted not like kings but whipped curs.<sup>4</sup> A much more dangerous class were those who, partly from dogmatic motives, partly in the name of a professedly loftier moral ideal, maintained an unconditional asceticism and said that marriage was a sin, no better than fornication, that it derived its origin from the devil, and that we should not introduce into the world other unhappy beings and furnish food for death.<sup>5</sup> Those who say so, rejoins Clement, under the guise of self-control are ignorant and godless.<sup>6</sup> To say that marriage is sin is to say that

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 23<sup>139, 142</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 23<sup>137</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>30</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>84</sup>; iii. 6<sup>49</sup>; iii. 6<sup>45</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>45, 60</sup>.



God, who instituted marriage, commanded what is sin. Fornication and marriage are as far apart from one another as the devil is from God.<sup>1</sup> Generation is holy. By means of it the world subsists and the whole economy of creation and salvation.<sup>2</sup> To calumniate generation is to calumniate the Lord and the virgin who brought Him forth.<sup>3</sup> In vainglorious fashion such false teachers claim that they imitate the Lord, who never married. They forget that He had His own bride, the Church; that He was not a common man and needed no helpmeet according to the flesh; that He had no need to beget children to succeed Him, seeing that He was and remained for ever the only Son of God.<sup>4</sup> Those who declare that marriage was permitted by the Law but not by the New Covenant are in direct contradiction to the authoritative teaching of Paul, who approves of the marriage of bishop, presbyter, and deacon.<sup>5</sup> If marriage were an obstacle to salvation, neither the just men before the advent who married, nor those after the advent who do so, will be saved, though they be apostles.<sup>6</sup> Monogamy is the true and only ideal of marriage. The reasons for the temporary permission of polygamy have passed away. A second marriage is permitted by Clement on grounds similar to those conceded by St Paul; but he does not regard it as fulfilling the ideal of the perfect way of life according to the Gospel.<sup>7</sup> The conjugal relationship is to be divorced as far as possible from all sensuous desire. It is to be fulfilled in the spirit of one who is co-operating with God.<sup>8</sup> It is to be carried out by those and after the standard of those who are children not of desire but of

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 12<sup>84</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 17<sup>103</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., iii. 17<sup>102</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>49</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>90</sup>; iii. 18<sup>108</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>90</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>82</sup>; iii. 2<sup>4</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>83</sup>.

will.<sup>1</sup> We are to bear witness to the Lord in all our life by piety in the soul, by purity in the body.<sup>2</sup> The wife is to be in all things a helpmeet to her husband. In all domestic trials she is to remember that God is her helper in her great task, her true comrade and Saviour both for the present and the future. She is to make Him her leader in every action, regard temperance and righteousness as her work, and make the love of God her goal.<sup>3</sup> Like the pattern wife in the Book of Proverbs, she should clothe both herself and her husband with finery of her own workmanship, by which all are made glad—the children for their mother, the husband for his wife, she for them, and all for God.<sup>4</sup> The happy marriage is not to be judged by wealth or beauty, but by virtue.<sup>5</sup> The married life was not to be put on a lower level than the life of celibacy. No doubt, generally speaking, it was a good thing “for the sake of the kingdom of heaven to cut oneself off” from all desire;<sup>6</sup> but on the other hand all desires were pure and holy in the sphere of the Lord.<sup>7</sup> “We pronounce chastity blessed in the case of those to whom God has given the gift, and we admire the stately dignity that belongs to a single marriage.”<sup>8</sup> Each condition of life has its own distinctive ministries for the Lord.<sup>9</sup> The gnostic does not prefer children or marriage or parents to the love of God and righteousness in life; but he may marry.<sup>10</sup> In this he has the apostles for patterns. True, he eats and drinks and marries—not as if such things were the primary end of life, but regarding them as necessities. The single life is not the best sphere for exhibiting true manhood. Such an one lacks the cares

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 7<sup>58</sup>. Cf. Pæd., ii. 10<sup>92</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 20<sup>126, 127</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iii. 7<sup>59</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>79</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>67</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iii. 17<sup>103</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>100</sup>; vii. 12<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., ii. 23<sup>145</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., iv. 20<sup>126</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iii. 1<sup>4</sup>.

and temptations which family life brings. He has not to master them, and at the same time to retain a firm hold of the love of God. So far as progress towards his own individual salvation is concerned, the celibate may have the advantage; but in respect of the conduct of life he is inferior to the married man, as the latter preserves a faint image of the true Providence.<sup>1</sup> In accordance with his interpretation of the teaching of Jesus, Clement regards the marriage tie as indissoluble save by death.<sup>2</sup> It is plain that the teaching of Clement agrees in all essential points with the teaching of St Paul, but it is modified and necessarily expanded by antagonism to the heretical tendencies of his age.

The perennial question of the relations of wealth and poverty occupies considerable space in the teaching of Clement. His consideration of the general question was called forth by the extravagance and luxury in Alexandria; a special problem was forced upon him by the presence of some men of wealth in the Church.

Like all moralists, Clement points out that material wealth is not the highest form of riches. The truly rich man is he who possesses what is worth most.<sup>3</sup> Righteousness is true riches, and the Word is more precious than all treasure, being the gift of God.<sup>4</sup> True wealth is to abound in virtuous actions.<sup>5</sup> Like the wise man of the Stoics, the Christian alone is rich. He who has the Almighty God, the Word, is in need of nothing.<sup>6</sup> The good man can never be in want so long as he keeps his confession secure towards God. He can ask and receive from the Father of the universe what he needs.<sup>7</sup> In respect of things necessary no one is ever poor, and no man is ever disregarded by God.<sup>8</sup> He who has attained to the condition of being in need of nothing

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 12<sup>70</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 23<sup>145</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Pæd., iii. 6<sup>35</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>36</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Str., vi. 12<sup>99</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Pæd., iii. 7<sup>39</sup>.<sup>7</sup> Ib., iii. 7<sup>40</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>14</sup>.

has no envy of riches.<sup>1</sup> He is pre-eminently rich who desires nothing because by reason of his knowledge of the good he possesses every good thing in superabundance.<sup>2</sup> The best wealth is poverty of desire,<sup>3</sup> and true poverty is not narrowness of means but increase of desire. Material wealth when not under proper control is an acropolis of wickedness.<sup>4</sup> It may be compared to a serpent which, unless grasped firmly and kept at a distance, will twist round the hand and bite, and which must be taken captive by the charm of the Word, if he who owns it is to be untouched by passion.<sup>5</sup> The moral danger may be avoided by the consideration that while all things have been made for the most part for the use of man, it is not good to use all things nor to use them always,<sup>6</sup> that such use must be sanctioned by reason<sup>7</sup> and must not exceed the limit of what is necessary,<sup>8</sup> and that they must be possessed and used without passionate and overmastering desire.<sup>9</sup> In carrying out these principles we must keep before us our own spiritual goal and our duty to others. Because we are journeying towards truth, we must be as unencumbered as possible.<sup>10</sup> Worldly possessions are not "our own," because we do not abide in them for ever, but are handed down in succession to others.<sup>11</sup> Properly used, wealth may be no barrier to, but a means of, spiritual progress. He that would ascend to the heavens "by violence" must carry the fair staff of beneficence. This is in accordance with the declaration of Scripture that "his own riches is the ransom of a man's soul"<sup>12</sup>—that is, if he be rich, he will be saved by distributing it.<sup>13</sup> It was

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 7<sup>40</sup>. Cf. Stäh., vol. iii. p. 223, fr. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Str., vii. 3<sup>18</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., ii. 3<sup>39</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 3<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>14</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., vii. 11<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>31</sup>; iv. 13<sup>94</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 47.

<sup>10</sup> Pæd., iii. 7<sup>38</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Str., iv. 13<sup>94</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Prov. xiii. 8.

<sup>13</sup> Pæd., iii. 7<sup>39</sup>.

in the power of God to make no one poor, but to do this would have extinguished beneficence to others and sympathy.<sup>1</sup> Self-sufficiency apportions something from itself to our neighbours.<sup>2</sup> This imparting to others must not be done in a vulgar or braggart fashion,<sup>3</sup> nor must it be indiscriminate but in accordance with justice and desert; for so to distribute is a form of the highest justice.<sup>4</sup> In his enforcement of the duty of liberality, and in denunciation of the extravagant fads of the rich, Clement uses language which suggests a Christian socialism. He refers to what he calls the astounding apology of women absolutely agape for jewels—"What God hath provided why may we not use? It is in my possession, why may I not enjoy it? For whom have these things been made, if not for us?" To use such language, says Clement, is to betray absolute ignorance of the will of God. Things which are necessary, such as water and air, He has supplied openly to all; things which are not necessary, like gold and pearls, He has concealed in the earth and water. To say and act so is to be out of harmony with the Scripture which calls upon us to "seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness." Moreover, though it is true that "all things are in our power," it is also true that "all things are not expedient." Such selfish use is opposed to the divine constitution of human society. God Himself introduced the principle of "communion" into the race of men, when He first imparted of what was His own, and provided His own Word common to all men, having made all things for all. All things, therefore, are common, and it is not for the rich to claim a larger share. The saying, "What I have, and what I have in superfluity, why should I not daintily enjoy," is alike unworthy of man in himself and as a social being.

<sup>1</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 224, fr. 47.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>7</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vii. 12<sup>69</sup>.



Much more is it in accordance with love to say, "I have, why should I not impart to those who are in need?" For that is the true luxury, the expenditure which is "treasured up." God has given to us the liberty of use, but only so far as necessary, and He has willed that the use should be common. It is monstrous that one should be in luxury, while many are in penury.<sup>1</sup>

These principles touching the duties attaching to wealth in general are applied by Clement to the more pressing question of the attitude of the Gospel to men of wealth in the Church. As treated by him, it was not primarily an ethical or economical question, but one with a practical bearing, to be settled on exegetical and dogmatic grounds. He devoted to it a special homily under the title, "Who is the rich Man that is being saved,"<sup>2</sup> an exposition of a passage in the Gospel of St Mark.<sup>3</sup> The following is an outline of the leading points:—

Those who basely flatter the rich are at once guilty of impiety and treacherous to the true wellbeing of the rich themselves, by inflaming their malady instead of seeking to heal it and helping them to the attainment of salvation.<sup>4</sup> The saying of the Saviour about the rich man and the eye of the needle has caused some only to cling the more closely to this life as if they had no hope of true life, while others have failed to use their wealth with a view to its attainment.<sup>5</sup> Accordingly, he who loves the truth has a twofold duty to the rich, first to expound the Word so as to drive away their groundless despair, and then to show how the man may secure the hope and the prize of the victor in the conflict.<sup>6</sup> The sayings of the Saviour are not to be understood in a carnal sense, but we must seek to penetrate into their inmost meaning.<sup>7</sup> It was natural for Him who was

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., ii. 12<sup>119, 120</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Τὸς ὁ σφζόμενος πλούσιος.*

<sup>3</sup> Mark x. 17-31.

<sup>4</sup> c., i.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., 2.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., 3.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., 5.

the Life to be questioned about life. The crowning lesson was to know God; for only in full knowledge of Him was life.<sup>1</sup> Hence the young man was exhorted to know God, and then to understand, as one trained under the law, the newness and the necessity of the grace and mission of the Saviour, who alone could give the life which he lacked, though he had fulfilled all the requirements of the law.<sup>2</sup> "Sell that thou hast," said the Saviour. That does not mean that he was to cast away his property, but to banish from his soul the excessive desire for it, the morbid excitement concerning it, all the things that choke the seed of true life. To renounce wealth save for life is no great thing. Otherwise the poorest would alone possess eternal life. Many men of old before the coming of the Saviour gave up their possessions, but only increased their arrogance and vanity thereby. Though released from the load of wealth, the desire for it remained. Moreover, he that is in want of the necessities of life has no leisure for higher things.<sup>3</sup> Much better to be free from such anxiety, and so be able to help others and fulfil the teaching of the Lord. Who is to care for the hungry and the homeless if every one is destitute? The Lord did not command Zaccheus and Matthew to give up their wealth, but only enforced its just use. If He were to command us to give up our wealth, and at the same time to assist the needy, were not that most irrational?<sup>4</sup> Wealth is like a tool which may be used skillfully or the reverse, may be a servant of righteousness or unrighteousness. Its nature is to serve, not to rule. In itself it is neither good nor bad. The blame for misuse rests with the mind of man. What is required is not the suppression of our possessions but of the passions which prevent the better use of them.<sup>5</sup> Better to get rid of the

<sup>1</sup> c., 6, 7.<sup>2</sup> Ib., 8-10.<sup>3</sup> Ib., 11, 12.<sup>4</sup> Ib., 13.<sup>5</sup> Ib., 14.

passions within the soul, by the removal of which wealth may be of good service, than to get rid of the wealth which is outside of the soul and leave the passions the more violent because of the lack of means to satisfy them. External things are not injurious in themselves. Wealth of passions is death-bringing; their destruction is salvation. He who uses God's gifts for the salvation of men, who does not carry about his possessions in his soul and circumscribe his life within them, is pronounced blessed by the Lord. He is not the rich man who is incapable of gaining life.<sup>1</sup> But the man who bears his wealth in his soul, who carries about not a heart but a mine or land, can have no desire nor anxiety about the kingdom of heaven. "Where the mind of a man is, there is his treasure also." As treasure may be good or bad, so there is a wealth of good things and a wealth of bad things. So spiritual poverty is blessed; but wretched are the poor who have no share in God and still less in human possessions.<sup>2</sup> Salvation does not depend on external things, but on the excellence of the soul, nor has it any relation to beauty or strength of body. A man though destitute may be drunken with lusts; a rich man may be poor in sensual indulgence.<sup>3</sup> To sell what we have is not to exchange one kind of wealth for another, but to introduce into the soul a different kind of wealth, which makes man as God and ministers eternal life, treasure in the heavens.<sup>4</sup> The wealthy man who had been trained under the law did not understand how the same man could be both poor and rich, and went away downcast, himself making what was difficult a thing impossible. For he might have withdrawn from material wealth to that which was intellectual, and learned to use indifferent things as one who had set out for eternal life. The alarm of the disciples could not be due to the

<sup>1</sup> c., 15, 16.<sup>2</sup> Ib., 17.<sup>3</sup> Ib., 18.<sup>4</sup> Ib., 19.

scanty possessions which they had abandoned, but sprang rather from the consciousness that they had not entirely laid aside their passions. For it is to passionless and pure souls that salvation belongs.<sup>1</sup> "That which is impossible among men is possible with God." The man toiling in his own strength effects nothing, but with the power of God he succeeds. Not that God saves men against their will. For the kingdom of God is for the men of violence who snatch life from Him by force.<sup>2</sup> To leave kindred for the sake of Christ means that if such stand in the way of our higher life, the fleshly relationship must be broken up because of the spiritual enmity.<sup>3</sup> Consider the matter as a lawsuit. Listen first to the father who begat thee, telling thee not to obey the law of Christ. Listen then to the Saviour who regenerated thee, who gives Himself as bread. Then give thy vote for thine own salvation.<sup>4</sup> Canst thou gain the mastery over wealth? Christ does not drive thee away from it. Art thou worsted by it? Fling it away, flee from it. So is it with the possessions of "lands and wealth and houses and brethren, *with persecutions*." If wealth bring thee persecution from without or the more maddening form of persecution of lusts within the soul, leave it, get rid of the persecution, choose before all the Saviour, the Prince of endless life. Salvation is in no way fenced off from the rich, if they are willing to submit to the yoke of the commandments of God. What wrong does a man who by thrift before his conversion has gathered a competency? Or, if God, who allots fortune to all, has placed him in a rich home, is he not still less to be blamed? If because of his involuntary birth in wealth he has been banished from life, he has been wronged by God. If wealth be the purveyor and ally of death, why should it ever have sprung up from the earth at all? <sup>5</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> c., 20.<sup>2</sup> Ib., 21.<sup>3</sup> Ib., 22.<sup>4</sup> Ib., 23.<sup>5</sup> Ib., 24-26.

well-to-do must not be negligent of their own salvation as if they had been condemned beforehand, nor cast their wealth into the sea, but learn how to use it and obtain life. To this end the Teacher says that the greatest of the commandments is "to love the Lord thy God." With good reason: for He is our Father, and He loved us first. The second, but not the less, is, "to love thy neighbour as thyself." What neighbour means, He shows in the Samaritan. The Samaritan is no other than Christ Himself. We are to love Him equally with God; and He loves Christ Jesus who does His will. What one does for a disciple the Lord accepts as for Himself.<sup>1</sup> We are urged to "make friends by means of the mammon of unrighteousness."<sup>2</sup> A possession which a man regards as absolutely his own is by nature unrighteous; but from this unrighteousness we may effect a righteous and saving deed. We are not to wait to be importuned, but to seek out those who are to be benefited and are worthy disciples of the Saviour. The reward is an eternal tabernacle.<sup>3</sup> Surely a divine marketing! With such reward in view, supplicate the poor to receive; be fearful lest they treat thee as unworthy of honour. Not that such rewards are the gift of the benefited, but are given by the Lord because of His friendship for them. You may err as to "the friends of God." Better to benefit the unworthy for the sake of the worthy than by being on your guard against the less good neglect some who are loved by God. To all who are enrolled among the disciples of God open your heart, paying no heed to the body, or outward estate, or appearance. Choose with thy wealth pious old men, orphans beloved of God, widows armed with meekness, men adorned with love, as guards for thy body and soul.<sup>4</sup> They are for you effective soldiers, trustworthy

<sup>1</sup> c., 27-30.<sup>2</sup> Luke xvi. 9.<sup>3</sup> c., 31.<sup>4</sup> Ib., 32-34.



guards. They minister to you, as needed, encouragement, sympathy, teaching, warning, counsel, without hypocrisy or flattery.<sup>1</sup> He who laid down His life for us demands that we owe our lives to our brethren. Thus the rich man may use his possessions so as to avoid the reproach of wealth and the hindrance which it offers in the way of life.<sup>2</sup> The man who is a swaggerer, powerful and rich, should set over himself some man of God as trainer and pilot. Let him reverence at least one man, fear at least one man, listen at least to the bold speech of one man. Such a man will keep sleepless vigil for the rich man, interceding for him with God.<sup>3</sup>

Whatever may be thought of this setting up of a *quasi* spiritual director or external conscience, whatever reserve we must maintain with regard to the validity of the quaint exegesis on which his conclusions are partly based, the moderation of his views on wealth, its nature, its responsibility, and use, commands our admiration. His bias towards asceticism was restrained by the soundness of his judgment. His love of allegorical exegesis did not weaken his moral perceptions. He glorifies neither wealth as such nor poverty as such, but recognises that poverty no less than riches has spiritual difficulties of its own.

In the Cambridge series of 'Texts and Studies,' published in 1897, Barnard published a fragment of what he suggested might be a part of the lost treatise that bore the title, 'Exhortation to Patience—to the Newly-Baptised.'<sup>4</sup> The suggestion is accepted by Stählin,<sup>5</sup> and there can be little doubt as to its genuineness. As it stands, it is almost entirely taken up with practical counsels in complete harmony with the teaching of Clement; as it is only a frag-

<sup>1</sup> c., 35.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., 37-39.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., 41-42. At the close of the Homily Clement tells the well-known story of John the Apostle and the young robber.

<sup>4</sup> Eus., H. E., vi. 13.

<sup>5</sup> Vol. iii. pp. lx. and 221.

ment, we do not know whether any specifically dogmatic instruction preceded. It shows how simple and direct Clement could be when the occasion demanded. Alike because of its interest, as a specimen of an address to catechumens in the end of the second century, of its brevity, and of its direct bearing on the subject of this chapter, I quote it in full.

“Cultivate restfulness in words and deeds, and likewise in tongue and gait. Avoid headstrong vehemence. For so will the mind continue steadfast, and, untroubled by vehemence, will not become enfeebled, nor shallow in perception, nor dull in vision. Nor will it be overcome by gluttony; but it will be overcome if anger boils, and it will be overcome by the other passions, being exposed as a ready prey to them. For the mind must gain mastery over the passions, sitting aloft as on a quiet throne, with vision fixed on God. Be not swift to wrath in respect of the passions, nor sluggish in words, nor over-hesitating in thy movements, to the end that thy restfulness may be adorned with a fair symmetry, and thy bearing appear a divine and sacred thing. But be on guard against the tokens of arrogance, the haughty mien, the head carried high, and the stride of the feet delicate and high-stepping. Let thy words to those thou meetest be gentle, and thy greetings sweet, and let there be reverence towards women, with the eye turned to the ground. And speak all things with circumspectness, and return a useful answer, adapting thy voice to the use of the hearers until it shall be heard, not eluding the hearing of those present by reason of too great lowness, nor deafening them by too great loudness. And take care that thou never speakest anything which thou hast not considered and thought on beforehand. Nor cast down thy words rashly and interrupt the words of another; for it is necessary to hear and converse in turn, apportioning a time

for speech and silence. But learn gladly and teach ungrudgingly, neither concealing wisdom from others from envy, nor turning aside from instruction from a sense of shame. Give way to thy elders as to thy fathers; honour the servants of God; lead the way in wisdom and virtue. Do not wrangle with thy friends, nor scoff nor laugh at them. Falsehood and fraud and insolence strenuously avoid. Endure with fair words the haughty and the insolent, as beseems a meek and magnanimous man. And let all thy affairs be dependent on God, both words and deeds; and refer all things to Christ, and often turn thy soul to God, and lean thy thought on the power of Christ, as though in some haven, through the divine light of the Saviour, it were resting from all talk and action. And by day often give a share of thine own thought to men, but to God as often as possible, both by night and day; for let not much sleep deprive thee of thy prayers and praises to God. For prolonged sleep is like to death. Become always a partner with Christ, who caused the divine ray to shine down from heaven; let Christ be to thee a continuous and unceasing joy. Relax not the tone of the soul by feasting and indulgence in wine, but regard as sufficient what is useful for the body. And be not the first to hasten to meals before the time of supper arrives; but let the supper be bread, and let there be set forth the seeds of the earth and the fruits of the trees. And go to thy food with steady step, and not showing a furious gluttony. And be not an eater of flesh nor a lover of wine, unless when some sickness calls for this remedy. But in place of pleasure in such things, choose thy joys in divine words and hymns which are supplied by the wisdom of God, and let heavenly thought always lead thee heavenwards. Give up anxious cares about the body, encouraged by hopes that rest in God, because He will provide for thee things necessary, sufficient

food for life, and covering for the body, and protection against the winter cold. For to thy King belongs the whole earth and all the things that spring up out of it. As the bodies of His own servants are His members, He tends them with surpassing care, as His holy places and sanctuaries. Wherefore be not afraid of violent ailments, nor shrink from the onset of age, which must be expected as the years pass. For also the sickness will cease when with whole-hearted resolution we keep His commandments. Knowing these things, make thy soul strong against disease, be of good courage like a man in the racecourse, equipped in the best way for enduring toils with unflagging strength. Crush not thy soul altogether with sorrow if a sickness come upon thee and weigh thee down, or any other distress befall thee; but nobly oppose thy thought to the hardships, offering thanksgivings to God even in the midst of distresses; for He has wiser thoughts than men, and such as it is not possible nor easy for men to find. Have pity on those who suffer wrong, and ask assistance from God in the case of men; for He will grant grace to his friend who asks it, and will provide assistance to those who have suffered wrong. For He wills to make His own power known to men, that having come to full knowledge they may return to God and enjoy eternal blessedness, when the Son of God shall appear restoring good things to His own."

The defects in Clement's representation of the Christian ideal lie on the surface. The merits in view of the circumstances of the time are not less conspicuous. The fundamental defect lay in the very conception of a twofold ideal, irrespective of the principles on which the line of demarcation was based. Many of the features are but half-truths or the exaggeration of one side of truth. The truth in the outline is, that men are unequal in spiritual apprehension. The exaggeration is, that the inequality is as absolute



as he seems sometimes to assume, even if this furnished a critical dividing-line. In rescuing the word "gnosis" from the degradation which had fallen upon it, he has not escaped the exclusiveness that was all but inseparable from its use. He has not quite got rid of the distinction of different classes of men derived from the Gnosticism which he is combating; though, by enforcing individual liberty as the true ground of distinction, he has got rid of the most pernicious element in it, that which attributed this classification to nature, and therefore conceived it as arbitrary. Notwithstanding the rigour of some of his precepts and the prominence given to the passionless state in relation to all outward and transitory things, and the ascetic spirit which breathes in some allusions to the body, the attitude of Clement to the world is on the whole genial and sympathetic. So far as it was unsympathetic, it was determined in large measure by antagonism to the extravagance and luxury around him, and in part by his acceptance as authoritative of some sayings of Jesus and St Paul without any endeavour to weaken the absoluteness of their claims. To him the unconditional alternatives of Jesus were no paradoxical way of enforcing a precept, but a law to be fulfilled in the letter and the spirit. The avoidance of all conformity with the world and its ideals was to him a categorical imperative of universal validity. If he treats the body at times as the enemy of the spirit, if he protests against the devotion to games in Alexandria as opposed to a grave view of life and its responsibilities, if he puts the emphasis rather on the saying, "all things are not expedient," rather than on "all things are lawful," is he on these grounds disloyal to the teaching of St Paul? If on one occasion he speaks of the world as a "wilderness," and represents the gnostic as using this world only as a temporary stopping-place, is he alone in this, or is there any religious literature of any age in which



kindred thoughts do not find expression? If, in consideration of the vice and luxury around him, he thinks rather of the suppression than the transfiguration of natural desire, shall we forget that a rigid asceticism, if not the most effective weapon in the long-run, is the best immediate weapon with which to combat moral corruption? That in his ethical fervour he condemned some things in themselves innocent and unimportant, and showed at times a lack of moral perspective, is in no way surprising. Much more surprising is the general sanity of his outlook on life, especially on the social side. He sanctioned, nay, welcomed all forms of culture in which no irreligious or non-ethical element was involved. He had little sympathy with Greek art; for, historically, its growth had been coincident with error and was its glorification, and it had been for the most part the ally of the paganism which it was his life-work to undermine and overthrow. But while condemning its misuse, he praises the art itself.<sup>1</sup> He loved the joyousness and beauty of outward nature. He objected to no music save that which weakened the moral fibre. As in his attitude to the world generally, so in his conception of the duty of the Christian in the face of persecution, and in all questions of social ethics, he is marked by great soberness. Like his own gnostic, he sought to harmonise the intellectual, ethical, and mystical elements in the Christian faith, and to assign to each its true place, to weld into a unity elements which God hath joined together—faith, knowledge, love—but which man has often put asunder; and to exhibit Christian life not as a congeries of inconsistent and unrelated sections, but as a unity in relation to self, to society, and to God.

<sup>1</sup> Prot., iv. 57.

## LECTURE VI.

## SCRIPTURE : ITS NATURE, INTERPRETATION, AND EXTENT.

IF the foundation of a true Christian theology be a right conception of God, and that of a true Christology a right conception of the person of Christ, our attitude towards Scripture must determine in large measure the foundation of both doctrines. The fundamental question is, Whether we are to regard Scripture as primarily the record of man's interest in God or of God's interest in man, the record of the efforts of man's spirit "to feel after Him and find Him," or of the Spirit of God entering into fellowship with man to satisfy the longing which He Himself has implanted? If the former conception be adopted as primary, the Scriptures are only of interest in the history of religion, and as exhibiting the genius of the Jewish race in this lofty province of human inquiry; and all question of authority must be eliminated, and the assertion of their inherent fitness for man's nature and needs be not merely their highest but their only prerogative and claim to our allegiance. If the latter conception be adopted, we have a revelation of and from God, truth manifested through human spirits and of necessity limited by the material forms in which it has been embodied, but none the less His truth, and as such rightfully claiming to furnish an authoritative rule for faith and life. Clement lays down without any reservation the unconditional authority of Scripture and of the whole of what

he held to be Scripture. It is true that he uses the words "prophet," "inspiration," and "Scripture" in a wider as well as in a more restricted sense. He designates the Sibyl as a prophetess,<sup>1</sup> and quotes sayings of hers as illustrating and confirming the teaching of a pure theism as opposed to idolatry. He speaks of prophets of the Egyptians as well as of the Greeks in an incidental fashion without quoting any prophecy from them.<sup>2</sup> But for the latter usage may he not claim the authority of St Paul, in connection with whose designation he himself applies the word?<sup>3</sup> He ascribes inspiration to Plato as well as to an Epicurean.<sup>4</sup> But he draws a clear line of demarcation between such prophecy or inspiration and that exhibited in the Scriptures. For while, in accordance with his theory of theft as well as with his view of universal inspiration, he is ever seeking in the philosophy and poetry of the Greeks for analogies to the truths of Scripture, and quotes sayings which, because of the truth expressed or because of its harmony with the Scriptures, he regards as divinely inspired, he does not consider such writings as authoritative as a whole, and limits their inspiration to the particular citation which he makes. It is otherwise with the Scriptures. These derive their validity from the authority of the Almighty.<sup>5</sup> The prophets of the Almighty God were the instruments of the divine voice.<sup>6</sup> Not one tittle of the Scriptures shall pass away, because they are the utterances of

<sup>1</sup> Prot., ii. 27; ib., viii. 77.

<sup>2</sup> Str., i. 14<sup>62</sup>; i. 15<sup>71</sup>; i. 14<sup>59</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 14<sup>59</sup>. Cf. Tit. i. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>138</sup>; i. 8<sup>42</sup>. In Str., iv. 1<sup>3</sup> he says of his own work that it shall be written *ἦν θεός γε ἐθέλη καὶ ὅπως ἂν ἐμπνέη*. But to transform this natural expression of a reverent spirit into a claim for inspiration in the scriptural sense, or to regard it as proving a loose conception of inspiration, is surely meticulous criticism. It is true, also, that he uses the word "*γραφή*" for a written composition, including his own (Str., i. 1<sup>4</sup>; iv. 1<sup>4</sup>. Cf. i. 1<sup>7</sup>); but that he uses it constantly in the technical sense there can be no doubt.

<sup>5</sup> Str., iv. 1<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 18<sup>168</sup>. Cf. ib., i. 21<sup>135</sup>.

the mouth of the Lord—the Holy Spirit.<sup>1</sup> If the Platonic saying be true that he who declares what takes place in his own family is to be believed, shall we not believe what God spake by His Son in the Old and the New Testaments?<sup>2</sup> For the determination of any controversy between him and the adherents of heresy, the bringing forward of a passage from Scripture is final.<sup>3</sup> God spake at one time by “the pillar and the bush”; thereafter, as flesh of man is more precious than such, by the mouth of the prophets. Now the Lord Himself has spoken, putting man’s unbelief to shame.<sup>4</sup> So far as the Old Testament is concerned, that authority belongs not only to the Hebrew but to the Greek translation. The translators were so guided by the Spirit of God that they agreed in a miraculous manner in thought and expression, and the Greek translation was such that the Hebrew prophecy became a prophecy in the Greek tongue.<sup>5</sup> In the most literal sense of the word the Scriptures were given by inspiration of God, and to this is due their authority. For the same reason they form a unity with entire harmony of contents. This unity, as Clement conceived it, was the unity of a common authorship, with one end in view, the salvation of men. All is the work of God; all therefore must be worthy of Him from whom it came, and perfectly harmonious in all its parts. A human medium was required, but that in no way affected either its authority or unity. The impossibility of conflict between the different parts is with Clement an axiomatic presupposition; and he often seeks to set aside apparent contradictions, as well as to find points of analogy and contact. One

<sup>1</sup> Prot., ix. 82.<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 13<sup>84,5</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 26<sup>170</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Prot., i. 8.<sup>5</sup> Str., i. 22<sup>149</sup>. That Clement was ignorant of Hebrew seems probable from his mistakes in regard to Hebrew names. For what may be said to the contrary, see ‘Jewish Quarterly Review’ for 1893.

God was truly proclaimed by the Law and the Prophets and the blessed Gospel.<sup>1</sup> The Son will keep the things which the Father commanded. It is the same One who is lawgiver and evangelist, and He is never at conflict with Himself.<sup>2</sup> The Covenants—the Old and the New—are two in respect of time and name, but one in respect of power, having been provided by the One God through the Son. The Apostle declares the one salvation which has been perfected from Prophecy to Gospel through one and the same Lord.<sup>3</sup> Of this unity Clement gives a somewhat quaint illustration, which may be interpreted either as showing his ever-present consciousness of this unity, or as an indication of his desire to enforce it. When the Almighty God of the universe first gave the Law by the Word, there appeared to Moses a godlike vision in the form of light in a thorny plant. When the Word had brought to a close His legislative work and His sojourning on earth, He was again mystically crowned with thorns. By this He summed up at the close what had been the first stage of His ancient descent, and showed that the whole had been the work of one Power.<sup>4</sup> Thus Prophecy and Gospel agree, and the Apostle agrees with the Gospel.<sup>5</sup> The Apostle is confirmed by the prophetic word.<sup>6</sup> The Law given through Moses and that given through the Apostles were both used by the Word for the instruction of humanity.<sup>7</sup> Paul is recent in point of time, as he was in his prime immediately after the Ascension of the Lord; but his writing depends on the Old Covenant, deriving breath and expression from it. For faith in Christ and the knowledge of the Gospel are the

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 1<sup>2</sup>; iv. 13<sup>91</sup>; ii. 23<sup>147</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>83</sup>. Cf. ii. 23<sup>147</sup>; iii. 10<sup>70</sup>; iii. 11<sup>76</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., ii. 6<sup>29</sup> (Rom. i. 17).

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>75</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>95</sup>; 3<sup>14</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>94</sup>.



interpretation of the Law and its fulfilment.<sup>1</sup> All the Epistles prove the logical relation of the Law to the Gospel.<sup>2</sup> There cannot be even an appearance of conflict between a metaphorical saying of St Paul and a metaphor in the Law; and the former must be so interpreted as to be in perfect harmony with the latter.<sup>3</sup> In the time of Clement the objections to this unity mainly took the form of an attack on the religious conceptions and the practical ethics of the Old Testament. The attack on the former came from the Gnostics, who denied the unity of the Testaments, and held, on the contrary, that the conceptions of these as to God were so irreconcilable that they could only be explained by the hypothesis of their having derived their origin from different Gods,—the New Testament from One whose essential attribute was goodness, the Old Testament from One whose essential attribute was justice. Clement, as we have seen, denies that these attributes were antagonistic, and in defence of the Law, as of divine authority, appeals to its beneficent results. The greatest and most perfect good for man is the transformation from evil-doing to well-doing, and that is effected by the Law.<sup>4</sup> The fact that it involves penalties is no argument against its perfect goodness. Nor is the appeal to fear any ground for denying the divine origin of the Law. The nature of fear as a moral motive is determined by the persons or objects which are feared. On this ground, as well as by its results, the fear of the Law is justified. It is a fear of God, and it is determined by His nature. As He is passionless, so there is no element of passion in this fear; it is the falling away from God that is feared.<sup>5</sup> The objects of this fear are not things such as poverty, disease, and the like, but things truly evil, vice in all its forms, and death, not the

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 21 <sup>134</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 12 <sup>86</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 6 <sup>35</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Str., i. 27 <sup>173</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 8 <sup>39, 40</sup>.

death which dissolves the union between soul and body, but that which dissolves the union between the soul and truth.<sup>1</sup> The fear, whose fruit is abstinence from evil, cannot but be good.<sup>2</sup> That cannot be an irrational affection which is the result of a commandment given by the Logos.<sup>3</sup> If the Law were given to be "a tutor unto Christ," can it be anything but good? <sup>4</sup> Some heretics appealed to the saying of St Paul, "By the Law is the knowledge of sin," arguing that that was a condemnation of the Law. But this only showed their misunderstanding of the Apostle, who did not say that sin derived its existence from the Law, but only that the Law manifested it.<sup>5</sup> In proof of the humanitarian character of the Law, in close dependence on Philo, he adduces many details. He points to the laws against usury, to the payment of daily wages, to the provision for the poor, which was based on the principle that the love of men to the Creator must manifest itself in love to our fellow-men, to the law enforcing humanity toward beasts, which by the inculcation of kindness toward creatures which were not of the same genus emphasised *a fortiori* the duty of kindness towards those of the same genus; and to the generous features in the regulations affecting those of a different nationality.<sup>6</sup> On all grounds, therefore, the Law and the Gospel are to be regarded as the energy of the one Lord, and the same God is demonstrated to be good from the beginning to the end.<sup>7</sup>

As the Scriptures form the short road to salvation,<sup>8</sup> we might have expected that Clement would have taught that the road was easily traversed and accessible to all; but, on the contrary, in harmony with the spirit of his time, at

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 7<sup>24</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 8<sup>39</sup>. Cf. Ec. Pr., 20.

<sup>3</sup> Str., ii. 7<sup>32</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 7<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 7<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 16<sup>78, 95</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., i. 27<sup>174</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Prot., viii. 77.

least in Alexandria, he maintains that the most distinctive characteristic of Scripture was its symbolic and parabolic character. This symbolic feature was in harmony with the deepest wisdom in all religions and all philosophies. It was a characteristic of the Egyptians, who did not intrust their mysteries indiscriminately.<sup>1</sup> It was a characteristic of the Greeks, who made extensive employment of the art of concealment.<sup>2</sup> It was a characteristic of the Pythagoreans.<sup>3</sup> Not only did representatives of the most intellectual class adopt this method, but such of the barbarians who had devoted themselves in any measure to philosophy had prosecuted the symbolic method.<sup>4</sup> In brief, all who had theologised (thought on the deep things of God) had veiled the first principles of things, and transmitted the truth in enigmas, and symbols, and allegories, and metaphors.<sup>5</sup> That being so, it was not unnatural that the barbarian philosophy should prophesy in occult fashion and by means of symbols.<sup>6</sup> And this may be proved from the language of Scripture itself. That the holy word was hidden is shown by David. "He made darkness His hiding-place, His pavilion round about Him darkness of waters, thick clouds of the skies. At the brightness before Him, thick clouds passed, hailstones and coals of fire." That is, words are sent down from God which to the gnostic are transparent and resplendent as hail, but dark to the multitude, like extinguished coals which, unless lighted up and kindled anew, will not produce fire or light.<sup>7</sup> In like manner, the Spirit says by Isaiah, "I will give to thee treasures, dark, secret."<sup>8</sup> The Lord and His disciples used parables in accordance with the express statements of Scripture itself.<sup>9</sup> Nay, the

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 4<sup>20</sup>; v. 7<sup>41</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., v. 8<sup>44</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>116</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 8<sup>45</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 4<sup>21</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., v. 4<sup>28</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 8<sup>50</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 8<sup>51</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>127</sup>; v. 4<sup>25</sup>.

Saviour Himself put the seal on these things when He said, "To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven"; and by the Parable of the Leaven He showed the like conception of concealment.<sup>1</sup> To the like effect said the noble Apostle, "We speak the wisdom of God hidden in a mystery."<sup>2</sup> On what grounds is this symbolic feature of the Scriptures to be explained or defended? The method of symbolic interpretation contributes to a right theology, and to the display of intelligence and the practice of brevity and the exhibition of wisdom.<sup>3</sup> These are mainly intellectual gains. But there are other and higher grounds. One main reason is that we may cultivate the spirit of investigation and always keep vigil with a view to the discovery of the saving word.<sup>4</sup> The Scriptures desire the true theology to be the property of those who often approach them and have made proof of them in respect of faith. Like fruits shining faintly through water, or like figures which are invested with new features when seen through a veil, the truth gains in grandeur when it is veiled.<sup>5</sup> Clement seems to regard it as a defect if a passage of Scripture could only be interpreted in one way, and approves of truth in symbol because of the great diversities of possible interpretation. The Scriptures are not to be conceived as characterised by a bald uniformity.<sup>6</sup> Because truth does not appertain to all, it is veiled in many modes; the light only arises on those who are initiated unto knowledge, who seek the truth for the sake of love.<sup>7</sup> To seek out the logical coherence of the divine teaching calls for the keenest exercise of the faculty of reasoning.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 12<sup>80</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 4<sup>25</sup> (1 Cor. ii. 7).<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 8<sup>46</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>126</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 9<sup>56</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 28<sup>179</sup>: οὐ γὰρ δὴ μία Μύκονος ἢ πᾶσα πρὸς νόησιν γραφή.<sup>7</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>129</sup>.<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 28<sup>179</sup>.

In conjunction with this symbolic conception of Scripture, Clement held the theory of verbal inspiration. In controverting the views of Tatian, he emphasises the fact that in Genesis the reading is not simply *θεός*, but that by the addition of the article *ὁ* the Almighty is indicated.<sup>1</sup> So, too, of a passage in the New Testament, "The Law was given through (*διὰ*) Moses, not by (*ὑπὸ*) Moses, but by the Word, and through Moses, His servant." Wherefore also, it became temporary. But eternal "grace and truth were through Jesus Christ." Mark the expressions of Scripture. Of the Law it is only said, "it was given"; but truth, being the grace of the Father, is the eternal work of the Word, and it is no longer said "to be given," but "to have come into being" through Jesus Christ, without Whom nothing came into being.<sup>2</sup> The exact grammatical sense would, therefore, seem to be the foundation on which the symbolic structure is to be reared. The interpretation of Scripture, however, was subject to certain general principles which to some extent defined the lines on which allegorical exegesis had to proceed. Restrictions were based on the nature of God from whom the Scriptures came, on the contents of the Scriptures as a whole, on the tradition that was the property of the Church, and the ecclesiastical norm of teaching. Scripture being of divine origin, it must be interpreted in a manner perfectly fitting and appropriate to the Lord and the Almighty God.<sup>3</sup> It is obvious that this principle if primarily a principle of restriction, as it appears from the context, was capable of being developed into a principle of expansion of the allegorical method, and even of justifying its use. For, in the absence of any idea of historical development, it logically led to the elimination or the explaining away of much in the earlier books of the Old Testament. Scripture being a whole

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, iii. 12<sup>81</sup>.<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, i. 7<sup>90</sup>.<sup>3</sup> *Str.*, vii. 16<sup>96</sup>.



and a unit, the analogy of Scriptural usage had to be maintained in order to preserve unbroken harmony in all its parts.<sup>1</sup> The tradition derived from Christ Himself was a further restrictive factor. He who gave the Law was also the exegete of the Law, He who interpreted the bosom of the Father.<sup>2</sup> The Saviour taught the apostles, and from them has been transmitted to us the unwritten interpretation of the written Scriptures.<sup>3</sup> The teaching of the Church limited the range of the operation of the allegorical method by compelling the exegete to keep in view the theological doctrines to which its application should conform. This was emphasised by Clement specially in his refutation of heretical opinions. He accuses the heretics of interpreting Scripture in accordance with their cosmical conceptions, of doing violence to the plain meaning of Scripture by severing passages from the context, by attributing to God what was quoted by the prophet as the murmuring of the people,<sup>4</sup> and by giving an allegorical exposition of what was literal and a literal exposition of what was allegorical.<sup>5</sup> He passes much acute criticism on their method of procedure; but in the advocacy of his own position he has recourse to much perverse interpretation of a similar kind; and in his belief in the symbolic theory he propounds explanations that are purely fantastic, as, in spite of the limitations which I have noted, they could not fail to be. In his eagerness, for example, to prove that the highest wisdom was not given to all, he explains Colossians i. 28, which was directed against such limitation, in a manner contrary to its natural meaning. By "admonishing every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom," the divine Apostle did not mean "every man absolutely"—for in that case no one would have been unbelieving—nor did he mean

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>96</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., i. 26<sup>169</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 7<sup>61</sup>; iv. 21<sup>130</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>38</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., iii. 11<sup>76</sup>; iii. 12<sup>98</sup>.

every believer perfect in Christ, but "all the man," "the whole man," as if purified in body and soul.<sup>1</sup> But exegesis like this is exceptional; and in his discussion of heretical tenets, for example, he adheres for the most part to the literal sense. In illustration of his thesis of the difference between the external meaning of Scripture and the inner meaning which is the prerogative of "men," he adduces a legend to the effect that on the death of Moses one Moses only was seen by Caleb, while two were visible to Joshua. In like manner some look only to the body of the Scriptures, the expressions and names, corresponding to the body of Moses; while others look to the thoughts and what is signified by the names, seeking earnestly for the Moses who is with the angels. In the case of the latter, too, insight is gradual; we cannot all at once look the splendours of the truth in the face.<sup>2</sup> So far as the Old Testament is concerned, most of his illustrations of the allegorical method of getting at the hidden meaning are taken from Philo and Barnabas, and may be justified in some cases by the usage of the writers of the New Testament themselves.<sup>3</sup> The same may be said of the allusions to Isaac as a type of Christ, and the exposition of some incidents which may be treated as parabolical. But when everything is allegorised, the historical becomes a secondary matter, facts are treated as parables, poetry is made to masquerade as science and philosophy. The most grotesque illustrations of his method are those in which he has followed closely the interpretation of Philo or some other of his predecessors. Setting these aside, I give some illustrations which are not so borrowed.

The meaning of the Law is to be taken in three ways—as exhibiting a sign, as ratifying a precept for a right way of

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 10<sup>61</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>132</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Gal. iv. 24; Heb. vii. 1-3.

living, and as predicting like a prophecy. To make such distinctions is the prerogative of men. In Str. vi. 16, he gives what he calls a specimen of gnostic exposition of the decalogue. As the tables were written by the finger of God, that is the power of God and His work, they are found to exhibit the physical creation, to contain symbols of heaven and earth. In accordance with this is the physical decalogue of heaven and earth.<sup>1</sup> The Two Tables may be a prophecy of the two covenants. They were therefore renewed in mystic fashion, when ignorance together with sin abounded. The commandments are written in twofold wise for the twofold spirits—the ruling spirit and that which is subject.<sup>2</sup> So actions are twofold—those of thought and those of activity.<sup>3</sup> As there are ten commandments, so there is a “ten” in man.<sup>4</sup> The first commandment teaches that there is only one Almighty God, who conveyed the people through the wilderness to their fatherland that they might apprehend His power, as far as they were able, through the divine workings, and that they should be done with the idolatry of things created, and fix their entire hope in the true God.<sup>5</sup> The second word indicated that we should not take and give a name to the majestic power of God—for that is His name, for this alone they were able to learn, as even yet the multitude),—nor transfer His title to things created and vain, which have been made by human craftsmen, in which “He that is” is not ranked. For in uncreated identity “He that is” is by Himself alone.<sup>6</sup> The third word<sup>7</sup> declares that the world has been made by God,

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>133</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>134</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>137</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>134</sup>. *τά τε αἰσθητήρια πέντε καὶ τὸ φωνητικὸν καὶ τὸ σπερματικὸν καὶ τοῦτο δὴ ὄγδοον τὸ κατὰ τὴν πλάσιν πνευματικόν, ἕνατον δὲ τὸ ἡγεμονικόν τῆς ψυχῆς καὶ δέκατον τὸ διὰ τῆς πίστεως προσγινόμενον ἁγίου πνεύματος χαρακτηριστικὸν ἰδίωμα.*

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>137</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib. Here follows a mystic interpretation of the number six and the number seven. Ib., vi. 138 *et seq.*

<sup>7</sup> I give the numbers as stated by Clement.

and that He has given the seventh day as rest to us because of the distress in life. For God is unwearied, and passionless, and free from want. But we who bear flesh need rest.<sup>1</sup> The fifth word is that with reference to the honour of father and mother. This clearly calls God Father and Lord. Wherefore also to those who know Him is given the name of sons and gods. The Creator of the universe is then Lord and Father; and the mother is not, as some hold, the essence out of which we have come into being, nor as others have taught, the Church, but the divine knowledge and wisdom, as Solomon says, who calls wisdom the mother of the just. And it is chosen for its own sake. The knowledge of all that is good and venerable comes from God through the Son.<sup>2</sup> Next follows the word about adultery. It is adultery when one leaves the ecclesiastical and true knowledge concerning God, and goes over to the false opinion which is not becoming, whether by defying anything among things created, or by forming an "idol" of non-existent things, with a view to stepping beyond knowledge, or rather stepping out of it. For false opinion is foreign to the gnostic, as true opinion is kindred and wedded to him.<sup>3</sup> The word about murder follows. Murder is a violent removal. He who wishes to remove the true word about God and His eternity in order to give sanction to falsehood by saying that the universe is not ordered by a providence, or that the world is uncreated, doing violence to that which is in harmony with true teaching, is most destructive.<sup>4</sup> Then follows the word about theft. Those who assign any influence to the stars in the matter of growth and life deprive the Father of the universe of His unwearied might.<sup>5</sup> The tenth is the word concerning all lusts. As, then, he who desires what is not becoming is called to account, so in the same way he is not permitted

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>137</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>146</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>147</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 16<sup>148</sup>. He gives no exegesis of the ninth commandment.

to desire false things, nor to suppose that of things created, such as are animate have power of themselves, but such as are inanimate cannot at all save or injure.

The being "after the image and likeness" does not apply to the body, for it is not lawful for the mortal to be likened to the immortal, but to likeness in understanding and reasoning. On this the Lord appropriately puts the seal of likeness, both in respect of doing good and of ruling.<sup>1</sup> The eunuch is the man who is barren of truth.<sup>2</sup> In Isaiah the saying, "Hear, O heaven, and give ear, O earth,"<sup>3</sup> is to be interpreted thus. "Heaven" is the soul of the gnostic who has taken on himself the vision of heaven and the things of God; "earth" represents the man who has made choice of ignorance and hardness of heart. The "hear" refers to the understanding; the "give ear" is the ascription of carnal things to those devoted to things of sense.<sup>4</sup> "Day utters speech to day"—that which has been written without disguise; "night unto night proclaims knowledge"—that which has been hidden mystically.<sup>5</sup>

His interpretation of the Gospels may be illustrated from the Sermon on the Mount, from Parables and separate sayings, from miracles and incidents which are recorded.

"Blessed are the poor," whether in spirit or in substance—that is, of course, for the sake of righteousness. Perhaps it is not the poor simply, but those who have willed to become poor for the sake of righteousness that He pronounces blessed,—those who have despised earthly honour with a view to the acquisition of the good.<sup>6</sup> "Blessed are they that mourn, for they shall be comforted." They who have repented of the evils of their former life shall come to the calling, for that is to be comforted.<sup>7</sup> "Blessed are

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 19<sup>102</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Isa. lvi. 3-5; Str., iii. 15<sup>99</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Isa. i. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iv. 26<sup>169</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 10<sup>64</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>26</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>37</sup>: *εἰς τὴν κλήσιν παρεσόνται· τοῦτο γὰρ ἐστὶ τὸ παρακληθῆναι.*



the meek, for they shall inherit the earth." The meek are those who have laid to rest the implacable conflict of anger and lust in the soul. The meek referred to are those who are meek from deliberate choice, not from necessity.<sup>1</sup> "Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled." They are called blessed by Him who approves of the genuine longing which not even famine can cut off.<sup>2</sup> "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy." Mercy is not sorrow for the calamities of others, but something good. By the merciful are meant not only those who do what is merciful, but those who wish to show mercy though they may not be able, those with whom the actualising is present in respect of choice.<sup>3</sup> "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God." Pure in respect of bodily lusts and holy in their reasonings He wishes them to be who come to the knowledge of God, when the ruling faculty shall have nothing spurious in the way of its own power.<sup>4</sup> "Blessed are the peacemakers." They are such as have tamed and subdued the law which was against the thought of the mind, as well as the threats of anger, and the baits of lust and the rest of the passions which fight against the reason. These having passed their life attended by the science both of good works and true reason, shall be restored to that adoption of sons which is dearest. The perfect peacemaking may be that which in every circumstance maintains unchanged a peaceful state; calling the dispensation of Providence holy and good, and regarding the opposing elements in the world as the most beautiful harmony of creation. They, too, are peacemakers, who teach those who are warring here against the stratagems of sin to pass over to the faith and to peace.<sup>5</sup> "Blessed are they that are persecuted for righteousness' sake." He teaches us clearly in every circumstance to seek

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 6<sup>36</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>26</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>38</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>39</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 6<sup>40</sup>.

out the martyr who, if he be poor for the sake of righteousness, bears witness that the righteousness which he loved is a good thing.<sup>1</sup>

The "night" in which the lamps of the wise virgins were lit was the great darkness of ignorance. Wise souls, pure as virgins, understand themselves to be in the ignorance that marks the world. They kindle the light, rouse the mind, light up the darkness, and drive out ignorance, seek the truth, and await the manifestation of the Teacher.<sup>2</sup> The faith which the apostles asked for is "as a grain of mustard," which bites the soul to its profit and grows to a great height in it, so that transcendent reasonings rest upon it.<sup>3</sup> Or, the mustard-tree is the Church of Christ which filled the world, so that the birds of heaven—that is, divine angels and transcendent souls—lodged in its branches.<sup>4</sup> In the Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus, the poor man is represented by the grass, *πρόα*. For we who are bedewed by the grace of God are the grass, and though cut down we shall spring up again. The rich man is represented by the hay, *χόρτος*, which is to-day in the field and to-morrow is cast into the oven, being made partaker of the fire.<sup>5</sup> The "neighbour" in the Parable of the Good Samaritan is the Saviour Himself. When we had been all but put to death by "the world-rulers of the darkness" with many wounds—fears, lusts, deceits, pleasures—He took pity upon us. For such wounds the only physician is Jesus, who cuts out the passions by their roots, and not, like the Law, their effects merely. It is He who pours wine on our wounded souls. It is He who has brought the oil, the mercy from the heart of the Father.<sup>6</sup> It is He who has exhibited the indissoluble bonds<sup>7</sup> of health and salvation—love, faith, hope. It is He that appointed angels and principalities and powers to minister to us for a

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 6<sup>25</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 3<sup>17</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., v. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 226, fr. 54.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>104, 105</sup>. Cf. Luke xii. 28.

<sup>6</sup> Playing on the words *ἐλαϊον* and *ἐλεος*.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. *κατέδησεν*, Luke x. 34.

great reward,<sup>1</sup> because they too shall be set free from "the vanity" of the world at the revelation of the glory of the sons of God.<sup>2</sup>

The fish which Peter caught at the command of the Lord indicates food with which one is easily satisfied, God-given, and temperate. From those who rise from the water of baptism to the bait of righteousness we should take away dissoluteness and love of money, like the coin from the fish, in order to separate the vainglory, and by giving the stater to the tax-gatherer and rendering to Cæsar "the things that are Cæsar's," to preserve to God "the things that are God's."<sup>3</sup>

The "adversary" with whom Jesus calls us to agree is not the body, as some suppose, but the devil and those who are likened unto him.<sup>4</sup> "The foxes have holes"—that is, men of evil disposition and earth-born, engrossed with money which is mined and dug. "The birds"—flying fowls—"of the heaven have nests"—that is, those who are separated by heaven from the other birds, those really pure, that are able to fly to the knowledge of the heavenly word.<sup>5</sup> The "mother" whom we are called upon to forsake is figuratively interpreted fatherland and sustenance; "fathers" are the law of the State.<sup>6</sup> Who are the "two or three who are gathered together in the name of the Lord, in the midst of whom He is"?<sup>7</sup> Does He not mean the husband, the wife, and the child, seeing that "by God the woman is joined to the man"? Otherwise, the three may

<sup>1</sup> Cf. ἀποδώσω, Luke x. 35.

<sup>2</sup> Q. D., c. 29. Origen (Hom. in Luc., 35) gives as from "quidam de presbyteris," a kindred explanation, but entering into every detail for analogies. He regards it as explained "rationabiliter pulchreque." A like mystic interpretation is found in most of the Fathers.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>14</sup>. Cf. Matt. xxii. 21.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iv. 14<sup>95</sup>. Cf. Matt. v. 25.

<sup>5</sup> Str., iv. 6<sup>31</sup>. Cf. Matt. viii. 20.

<sup>6</sup> Str., iv. 4<sup>15</sup>. Cf. Mark x. 29.

<sup>7</sup> Matt. xviii. 20.

be anger, desire, and reasoning, or flesh and soul and spirit. Perhaps it may mean the one Church, the one man, the one race. The Law and the Prophets, together with the Gospel, are gathered together in the name of Christ into the one gnosis.<sup>1</sup>

The silence of Zacharias was a type of the mystic silence of the prophetic enigmas which was broken by Christ, the light of truth, the Word.<sup>2</sup> With reference to the anointing of the feet of the Lord, Clement identifies the incident recorded in St Matthew with that recorded in St Luke, or mixes them up together. The anointing may be a symbol of the Lord's teaching and of His passion. The feet are the Apostles, which received the fragrance of the unction of the Holy Ghost. Of them also the Holy Spirit prophesied through the Psalmist, "Let us adore at the place where the feet stood"<sup>3</sup>—that is, where the Apostles arrived, through whom being preached He came to the ends of the earth. The tears are repentance, and the loosened hair proclaims the loosening of the old vainglory for the sake of the new faith. Moreover, mystically understood, the anointing is a symbol of the Passion. The oil (*τὸ ἔλαιον*) is the Lord Himself, from whom is the mercy (*τὸ ἔλεος*) which is towards us. But the ointment (*τὸ μύρον*), which is adulterated oil, is the traitor Judas. As the dead are anointed, it may be said that the feet of the Lord were anointed by Judas. We, sinners, who have repented and believed in Him, are the tears. The loosened hair is mourning Jerusalem. Thus the anointed feet were a prophecy of the treachery of Judas when the Lord was on His way to His Passion.<sup>4</sup> The washing of the feet of the disciples by the Saviour intimated their journeying for the benefit of the nations, making this fair and pure by His own power. The ointment in them smelled sweetly,

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 10<sup>68, 69</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ps. cxxxi. 7, LXX.

<sup>2</sup> Prot., i. 1<sup>10</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>61, 63</sup>.

and the work of fragrance reaching to all has been proclaimed.<sup>1</sup> The crowning of the Lord with thorns prophetically pointed at us. For we were once fruitless, but are bound as wreaths round about Him through the Church, of which He is the Head. But it is also a type of the faith,—of life, because of the substance of the wood; of joy, because of the appellation of “crown”; of danger, because of the thorn; for it is not possible to draw nigh to the Word without shedding of blood. It is a symbol, too, of the right action of the Master. He bore on His head, even on the sovereign principle of the body, all our misdeeds by which we were pierced. He by His own Passion saved us from offences and sins and suchlike thorns.<sup>2</sup>

A like method of exegesis is applied to the Epistles of St Paul. To get rid of what he regards as the incongruity between the promise in Exodus and the statement of St Paul in the First Epistle to the Corinthians, “I have fed you with milk, not with meat,”<sup>3</sup> he enters into physiological details as to the nature of milk, with the view of showing that the milk is not to be regarded as something different from the meat, but the same in essence. Blood is a kind of liquid flesh, and milk is the sweeter and finer part of blood. The essence of the human body is blood, and milk is a product of the blood. If food by digestion is changed into blood, and blood is changed into milk, then the blood is a preparation for the milk.<sup>4</sup> Elsewhere he interprets the same saying in a natural sense. Dealing with the passage—“The wild olive is ingrafted into the fatness of the olive,”<sup>5</sup> he touches on various methods of ingrafting. He finds in one method an analogy of the way in which the unlearned converts from the Gentiles are instructed, who receive the word in surface fashion.

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., i., 8<sup>73, 74</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. iii. 2. Cf. Ex. iii. 8, 17.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>24, 52</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Rom. xi. 17.



Another method represents the way in which the truth is acknowledged by those who have studied philosophy, and also by the Jews. A third method is symbolic of the way in which the uncultivated and heretics are brought by violence to the truth. A fourth method is a symbol of gnostic teaching.<sup>1</sup>

These illustrations may suffice to show to what extent Clement was dominated in his exegesis by the hypothesis of the symbolic character of Scripture and his method of applying it. Fantastic alike in its conception and in its results as the allegorical exegesis was, it may be claimed for it that in the hands of Clement it had behind it certain great truths or principles. Like the Rabbinical exegesis of the Old Testament, it was based on implicit belief in the divine origin of Scripture. "Turn it over and over again," we read in the 'Sayings of the Jewish Fathers,' "for the all is therein, and thy all is therein."<sup>2</sup> This being assumed, it followed that analogies between it and the nature of man, as well as the outer universe, were to be expected. This explains, at least in part, the psychological, mathematical, and physical analogies which were read into the simplest words of Scripture. This exegesis had behind it a true conception that the truths of Scripture, like those of nature itself, do not lie on the surface for the careless looker or reader to gather, but demand reverence and patient inquiry for their interpretation. The saying that the Scriptures are pregnant to the gnostic but dismissed by the heretics as barren<sup>3</sup>—to which strong exception has been taken as a "bad feature"—is but Clement's way of saying that spiritual insight is essential to fruitful apprehension. The allegorical theory had behind it, though expressed in a grotesque form and almost unconsciously, the idea of the unity and continuity of revelation.

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>119</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> 'Sayings of the Jewish Fathers,' v. 32.

<sup>3</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>94</sup>.

“The thought was akin to reverence, but it was also akin to that superstition which is most fatal to reverence.”<sup>1</sup> And the history of exegesis shows that the latter tendency always tended to become dominant, that the Scriptures were apt to be degraded to the rank of a book of riddles, the interpretation of which was little better than a form of literary frivolity of no higher dignity or worth than the manufacture of anagrams. The fascination of such a hypothesis is still powerful, even in critical circles, though the *motif* be purely literary or historical or dogmatic. But though the principle is different, the application leads to similar results. If we take the Old Testament, for example, the physiological exegesis of some portions of the book of Ecclesiastes and the pathological exegesis of the Song of Solomon produce results compared with which the Alexandrian exegesis is comparatively sober. And the rigorous application of the same hypothesis to the Fourth Gospel in the hands of the school of Réville and Loisy, in their search for historical facts veiled in its symbolism, is productive of results not less fantastic. Does the fact that such interpretations are put forward in the august name of modern critical science, and not in that of an antiquated exegesis, alter their essential character?

We pass on to inquire—to what books did Clement ascribe the qualities which have been indicated? What books did he recognise as authoritative in questions of faith or controversy? What, in other words, was the Canon of Scripture in the Church of Alexandria, if he be regarded as a representative man?

With regard to the Canon of the Old Testament there is no controversy. His Canon is that of the Septuagint, and included books that have been recognised by the Church of Rome as canonical, but are designated and regarded

<sup>1</sup> Maurice, *op. cit.*, p. 238.

by the Protestant Churches as apocryphal. In particular, he has been greatly influenced by the 'Wisdom of Solomon' and the book of 'Ecclesiasticus,' especially in the ethical sections of his writings; and in this respect differs markedly from Philo, who never mentions them. Yet, though there is no conflict of opinion as to his view of the canon of the Old Testament, his attitude to that canon may throw important light on the controverted question, that of the canon of the New Testament.

The forms of citation or allusion may be thus classified. (1) We have words or phrases which imply authority or inspiration, as ἡ γραφή, ἡ θεία γραφή,<sup>1</sup> αἱ γραφαί,<sup>2</sup> αἱ θείαι γραφαί,<sup>3</sup> αἱ κυριακαὶ γραφαί,<sup>4</sup> αἱ θεοπνεύσται γραφαί,<sup>5</sup> γέγραπται, τὸ πνεῦμα, τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα, τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ, φησί, εἴρηται, and kindred words. (2) We have reference to the names of the writers with or without honorific epithets, as ὁ Μωυσῆς, παρὰ τῷ Μωυσεῖ, ὁ πάνσοφος Μωυσῆς, ὁ θεσπέσιος Μωυσῆς—ὁ Δαβίδ, κατὰ τὸν Δαβίδ, ὁ μακάριος Δαβίδ, ὁ προφήτης, ὁ ψαλμωδός, κατὰ τὸν μακάριον ψαλμωδόν,—ὁ Σολομῶν, κατὰ τὸν Σολομῶντα,—ὁ Ἡσαίας, παρὰ Ἡσαίᾳ, ὁ προφήτης—ὁ Ἰερεμίας, ὁ προφήτης. (3) We have a few references to the books, as, οἱ ψαλμοί, ὁ ψαλμός, ἐν τοῖς ψαλμοῖς γέγραπται, γέγραπται ἐν τῷ Δαβίδ,—αἱ παροιμίαι, ἡ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ σοφία, ἐν τῇ σοφίᾳ εἰρημένον, ἐν τῷ Ἰερεμίᾳ γέγραπται, ἐν τῷ Ἰεζεκιήλ γέγραπται. (4) In a very large number of instances we have passages introduced without any indication of their source—though sometimes a comment implies scriptural authority,—but simply incorporated into his text. (5) In a large number of cases, also, we have only indication by a word or phrase that some particular passage was before the mind of the writer—an evidence

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 3<sup>24</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ec. Pr., i, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., iii. 2<sup>9</sup>, &c.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vii. 1<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> vii. 16<sup>107</sup>. For illustrations of the other forms, see details that follow.

more weighty in some respects than direct citation would be of his knowledge of Scripture and of the way into which it had become inwoven into the texture of his thought, as well as, it may be, of the measure of knowledge which he expected from his readers.

The book of Genesis is mentioned by name.<sup>1</sup> It is nowhere quoted in the *Protrepticus* as ἡ γραφή, but it is so quoted in the *Pædagogus*, and more than once in the *Stromateis*.<sup>2</sup> It is also quoted with γέγραπται absolutely.<sup>3</sup> It is nowhere quoted with the formula τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ or kindred formulas. Some passages are introduced by the formula ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ Μωυσέως,<sup>4</sup> numerous passages by φησί<sup>5</sup>—either in the sense that God says or that Scripture says; occasionally we have εἴρηκεν, or ἐκείνη ἡ θεικὴ φωνή.<sup>6</sup> Sometimes it is quoted under the designation ἡ προφητεία,<sup>7</sup> more frequently with ὁ Μωυσῆς λέγει, or διδάσκει, or the like,<sup>8</sup> sometimes with a honorific epithet, as ὁ πάνσοφος.<sup>9</sup> Sometimes passages are introduced into the text without any indication that they are quotations;<sup>10</sup> sometimes by a supplementary comment or allegorical exegesis it is indicated that Scripture is implied. Very many passages are only alluded to in connection with some incident or suggested by the phraseology.

The book of Exodus is not mentioned by name. It is quoted as ἡ γραφή, both in the sense of Scripture and in the sense of a passage of Scripture, in the *Pædagogus*, and repeatedly in the *Stromateis*.<sup>11</sup> It is nowhere quoted with the words τὸ πνεῦμα. It is quoted in the *Pædagogus* and the *Stromateis* under the phrase ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ, ὁ

<sup>1</sup> Ec. Pr., i.

<sup>3</sup> Str., ii. 11<sup>51</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 10<sup>94</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>145</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 25<sup>161</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>22</sup>; Str., iv. 20<sup>126</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>81</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 12<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 21<sup>142</sup>; ii. 5<sup>20</sup>, &c.

<sup>10</sup> Pæd., iii. 10<sup>50</sup>, &c.

<sup>11</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>24</sup>; Str., i. 4<sup>25</sup>, &c.

λόγος διὰ, φησί, and the like.<sup>1</sup> It is quoted as the work of Moses, and as ὁ νόμος.<sup>2</sup> There are passages incorporated and suggestions of others.

The book of Leviticus is mentioned by name.<sup>3</sup> It is quoted in the Stromateis, and by implication in the Pædagogus, as ἡ γραφή.<sup>4</sup> It is quoted with the formula ὁ λόγος διὰ Μωυσέως.<sup>5</sup> The word φησί is not associated with any quotation, but the kindred word λέγει is found.<sup>6</sup> Sayings are quoted as the work of Moses, and under the designation ὁ νόμος.<sup>7</sup> There are allusions to particular sayings or incidents or regulations.

The book of Numbers is mentioned by name,<sup>8</sup> but it is seldom quoted, and never under the designation of ἡ γραφή nor with the formula τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ. It is quoted with φησί,<sup>9</sup> and with the formula, ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ Μωυσέως.<sup>10</sup>

The book of Deuteronomy is not mentioned by name. It is quoted as ἡ γραφή in the Pædagogus.<sup>11</sup> It is quoted under the designation τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον,<sup>12</sup> or with a phrase of like import, ὁ λόγος διὰ.<sup>13</sup> It is quoted as the work of ὁ προφήτης,<sup>14</sup> and as the work of Moses ὁ πάνσοφος, ὁ θεοσπέσιος.<sup>15</sup> It is quoted with φησί, λέγει, and ὁ νόμος.<sup>16</sup> Passages are incorporated with and without comment. As in the previous books, there are allusions and suggestions.

The book of Joshua is mentioned by name.<sup>17</sup> A knowledge of it is further indicated by a reference to the dividing of the waters.<sup>18</sup>

The book of Judges is mentioned by name, and many historical and chronological details are taken from it.<sup>19</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 11<sup>96</sup>, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>7</sup>; iii. 11<sup>71</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 21<sup>120</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>91</sup>; Str., ii. 10<sup>46, 47</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>91</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., v. 6<sup>40</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., ii. 15<sup>67</sup>; ii. 23<sup>147</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>32</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., ii. 19<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Pæd., i. 2<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., i. 7<sup>56</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib.

<sup>13</sup> Ib., iii. 3<sup>20</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Prot., x. 109.

<sup>15</sup> Ib., viii. 80.

<sup>16</sup> Ib., x. 95; Pæd., i. 8<sup>69</sup>; Str., vii. 3<sup>14</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>109</sup>.

<sup>18</sup> Ec. Pr., 6.

<sup>19</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>109</sup>.



Knowledge of it is only further indicated by an allusion to Samson and his hair.<sup>1</sup>

There is no citation from, nor allusion to, nor suggestion of, the book of Ruth.

The First Book of Samuel is mentioned by name, and some historical facts are taken from it.<sup>2</sup> It is quoted with *φησί*, and also with *ὁ λόγος διὰ τοῦ προφήτου Σαμουήλ*.<sup>3</sup> There is, further, a reference to an incident in the career of Samuel.<sup>4</sup>

There is a reference to David which may be taken either from the Second Book of Samuel or the First Book of Chronicles.<sup>5</sup> The scantiness of allusion to this book is the more noteworthy because he attributes to Plato a knowledge of the incident referred to.

His knowledge of the First Book of Kings is attested by the historical data which are adduced.<sup>6</sup> There are, further, allusions to Elijah.<sup>7</sup>

The same may be said of his knowledge of the Second Book of Kings.<sup>8</sup> There is a reference to Elijah which may be due to his knowledge of this book.<sup>9</sup>

Save for the possible allusion already noted, there is no reference to the First Book of Chronicles.

The Second Book of Chronicles or the First Book of Kings is cited in a fragment of a lost treatise.<sup>10</sup>

From the books of Ezra and Nehemiah historical statements are taken.<sup>11</sup>

A passage is quoted from the Fourth Book of Esdras as a saying of *Ἐσδρας ὁ προφήτης*.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>68</sup>; Str., vi. 17<sup>153</sup>; Ec. Pr., 39.

<sup>2</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>109</sup>; i. 21<sup>111, 112</sup>; vi. 12<sup>101</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., iii. 4<sup>27</sup>; iii. 2<sup>12</sup>; Str., vi. 3<sup>29</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Adum. in 1 Joan.; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 211.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>18</sup>. Cf. ib., ii. 8<sup>61</sup>, and 2 Sam. xii. 30.

<sup>6</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>113, 115</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., iii. 7<sup>38</sup>; Prot., x. 92; Str., iii. 6<sup>52</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>118, 122</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>112</sup>; Str., iii. 6<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 218.

<sup>11</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>124</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Str., iii. 16<sup>100</sup>. Cf. i. 22<sup>149</sup>.

The book of Psalms is quoted with greater variety of phrase than any other book of the Old Testament. It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή* or with *γέγραπται* in the *Protrepticus*, the *Pædagogus*, and the *Stromateis*.<sup>1</sup> It is quoted in the *Pædagogus* and in the *Stromateis*—much more frequently in the former—under the designation of *τὸ πνεῦμα* simply, or *τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ*.<sup>2</sup> We have not only *τὸ πνεῦμα εἴρηκεν* but even *τὸ πνεῦμα ψάλλει*, *τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα ἔψαλλεν*.<sup>3</sup> We have the full formula *ὁ Δαβίδ, τουτέστι τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ δι' αὐτοῦ*.<sup>4</sup> We have *διὰ τοῦ ψαλμωδοῦ τὸ πνεῦμα*,<sup>5</sup> *ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ Δαβίδ*,<sup>6</sup> *ὁ λόγος διὰ Δαβίδ*.<sup>7</sup> We have quotations with the designation *ὁ προφήτης*, *ἡ προφητεία*, *ὁ προφητικὸς λόγος*, *ἐκεῖνο τὸ προφητικόν*.<sup>8</sup> We have *φησί* and kindred words.<sup>9</sup> We have *ὁ Δαβίδ* many times, *ὁ μακάριος Δαβίδ, κατὰ τον μακάριον Δαβίδ*,<sup>10</sup> *ὁ ψαλμωδός, κατὰ τον μακάριον ψαλμωδόν*,<sup>11</sup> *γέγραπται ἐν Δαβίδ, ὁ ψαλμός, οἱ ψαλμοί*.<sup>12</sup>

We have, further, passages incorporated without any indication of their source; in some cases, however, with a comment which implies that they were Scripture or authoritative.<sup>13</sup>

The book of Proverbs is quoted by name in the *Stromateis*.<sup>14</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή* repeatedly in the *Pædagogus* and the *Stromateis*.<sup>15</sup> It is nowhere quoted with the designation *τὸ πνεῦμα*. It is, however, quoted with other phrases which imply inspiration or authority, such as *ὁ παιδαγωγός, ὁ θεὸς παιδαγωγός*,<sup>16</sup> *ὁ λόγος, ὁ λόγος διὰ Σολομῶντος, ὁ ἅγιος λόγος*,<sup>17</sup> *θείως λέλεκται, ἐνθέως εἴρηται*,<sup>18</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Prot., ix. 85; x. 105; Pæd., i. 9<sup>78</sup>; Str., iv. 25<sup>153</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., ii. 20<sup>125</sup>; Pæd., ii. 4<sup>41</sup>; i. 8<sup>73</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>87</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 9<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., ii. 10<sup>110</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Str., vii. 7<sup>36</sup>; i. 27<sup>172</sup>; Pæd., i. 6<sup>51</sup>; Str., vi. 8<sup>64</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Prot., x. 103, &c.

<sup>10</sup> Str., vi. 16<sup>145</sup>, &c.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., vi. 3<sup>30</sup>, &c.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., vii. 13<sup>83</sup>; vii. 7<sup>48</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Prot., iv. 63, &c.

<sup>14</sup> Str., ii. 2<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>15</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>4</sup>; ii. 2<sup>29</sup>; Str., ii. 7<sup>83</sup>, &c.

<sup>16</sup> Pæd., iii. 10<sup>49</sup>; iii. 2<sup>9</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Ib., iii. 11<sup>67</sup>, &c.

<sup>18</sup> Str., ii. 7<sup>35</sup>; i. 5<sup>29</sup>.

οἱ χρησμοί οἱ θεῖοι, τὸ λόγιον ἐκεῖνό.<sup>1</sup> It is very frequently quoted as the work of Solomon, sometimes as ὁ προφήτης,<sup>2</sup> sometimes as the words of ἡ σοφία, where σοφία is represented as speaking, as well as when it is not so represented.<sup>3</sup> It is also quoted with φησί.<sup>4</sup> As in other books, passages are incorporated without any indication that they are quotations, save in one or two cases where a comment implies it.<sup>5</sup>

The book of Ecclesiastes is quoted by name, and also with γέγραπται.<sup>6</sup> Ecclesiastes i. 2 is represented as having inspired part of the teaching of Epicurus.<sup>7</sup> Otherwise there is no indication of its use or influence.

The book of Job is not quoted nor referred to in the Protrepticus or the Pædagogus, but it is quoted several times as ἡ γραφή in the Stromateis.<sup>8</sup> It is quoted twice or thrice with sayings of Job himself, in one case with comment.<sup>9</sup> One passage is quoted with the indefinite ὅσπερ εἰπέ τις.<sup>10</sup> A passage of Job is erroneously described as written in the Kings.<sup>11</sup> There are references to Job himself based on incidents in the book.<sup>12</sup>

The Wisdom of Solomon is mentioned by name.<sup>13</sup> There is a possible allusion to it as ἡ γραφή in the Pædagogus<sup>14</sup> and an undoubted reference in the Stromateis.<sup>15</sup> Scripture is implied in a comment upon it.<sup>16</sup> It is nowhere quoted with the designation τὸ πνεῦμα. It is quoted with φησί, and also with εἴρηται.<sup>17</sup> It is quoted with the phrase ἡ σοφία λέγει, ἡ θεία σοφία,<sup>18</sup> but more frequently with the name of its author.<sup>19</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 7<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>7</sup>, &c. ; iii. 17<sup>103</sup>, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 19<sup>96</sup> ; ii. 18<sup>83</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., iii. 4<sup>30</sup>, &c.

Cf. ἡ πανάρετος σοφία ; Str., ii. 22<sup>138</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., ii. 18<sup>79</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 13<sup>58</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>90</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. 2<sup>6</sup> ; vi. 8<sup>65</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iii. 16<sup>100</sup> ; iv. 26<sup>108</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., iv. 12<sup>83</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., iv. 26<sup>170</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., iv. 5<sup>19</sup> ; iv. 17<sup>106</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>89</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>99</sup>.

<sup>15</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>108</sup> ; vi. 11<sup>92</sup>.

<sup>16</sup> Ec. Pr., 4I.

<sup>17</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>7</sup> ; Str., vi. 14<sup>113</sup>.

<sup>18</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>7</sup> ; Str., iv. 16<sup>103</sup>.

<sup>19</sup> Str., vi. 11<sup>93</sup>, &c.

The book of Ecclesiasticus is twice quoted by name as ἡ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ σοφία.<sup>1</sup> It is very frequently quoted as ἡ γραφή in the Pædagogus.<sup>2</sup> It is quoted with γέγραπται.<sup>3</sup> It is never quoted under the designation τὸ πνεῦμα. It is quoted as the utterance of ὁ παιδαγωγός.<sup>4</sup> It is quoted very frequently in the Pædagogus with φησί.<sup>5</sup> It is still more frequently quoted as the sayings of ἡ σοφία.<sup>6</sup> In some cases it is correctly described as the "Wisdom of Jesus";<sup>7</sup> but in others its authorship, or rather some quotations from it, are erroneously assigned to Solomon.<sup>8</sup>

A reference to Esther and her mission shows his knowledge of the book of Esther.<sup>9</sup>

There is a possible reference to the book of Judith.<sup>10</sup> The narrative of Judith is referred to.<sup>11</sup>

The book of Tobit is twice quoted without name as ἡ γραφή.<sup>12</sup>

The book of Hosea is nowhere quoted as ἡ γραφή. It is quoted with the form ὁ λόγος διὰ, and ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ,<sup>13</sup> with φησί,<sup>14</sup> and with the name of the writer, and with ὁ προφήτης.<sup>15</sup> In the Protrepicus, and also in the Stromateis, a passage in Amos is erroneously referred to as a saying of Hosea, though forms implying inspiration and authority are employed in both cases.<sup>16</sup>

The book of Amos is quoted as ἡ γραφή,<sup>17</sup> and also with the forms τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα διὰ, ὁ λόγος διὰ.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 4<sup>27</sup>; i. 10<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., i. 13<sup>58</sup>; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 225.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>31</sup>, &c.

<sup>7</sup> Str., i. 4<sup>27</sup>; i. 10<sup>47</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., iii. 2<sup>12</sup>. Cf. Str., i. 21<sup>123</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., iv. 19<sup>118</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Pæd., i. 7<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>15</sup> Ec. Pr., 4; Str., vi. 15<sup>115</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>115</sup>. Cf. v. 14<sup>126</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>62</sup>; ii. 2<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>99</sup>, 101, 109.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., i. 8<sup>69</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., ii. 5<sup>24</sup>; vii. 16<sup>105</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Str., ii. 7<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., ii. 23<sup>139</sup>; vi. 12<sup>102</sup>. Cf. i. 21<sup>123</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Ib., ii. 12<sup>126</sup>.

<sup>16</sup> Prot., viii. 79; Str., v. 14<sup>126</sup>.

<sup>18</sup> Pæd., ii. 2<sup>30</sup>; i. 8<sup>69</sup>.

The book of Micah is quoted with *Μιχαίας ὁ προφήτης* and as one of the Twelve Prophets.<sup>1</sup>

The book of Joel is quoted with *διὰ Ἰωήλ*—one of the Twelve Prophets—*εἴρηται*.<sup>2</sup>

The book of Obadiah is not named nor quoted.

The book of Jonah is quoted by name and he is called a prophet.<sup>3</sup> There is a reference to his prayer.<sup>4</sup>

The book of Nahum is quoted once, without any reference, but with an implication that it is a saying of the Tutor.<sup>5</sup>

The book of Habakkuk is quoted with *ὁ προφήτης*.<sup>6</sup>

The book of Zephaniah is quoted with *διὰ τοῦ Σοφονίου τὸ πνεῦμα*,<sup>7</sup> and with *ὁ προφήτης*.<sup>8</sup>

The book of Haggai is quoted with *φησί*, and with *γέγραπται*.<sup>9</sup>

The book of Zechariah is quoted with *ὁ προφήτης Ζαχαρίας*,<sup>10</sup> and once without reference but with a comment.<sup>11</sup>

The book of Malachi is quoted with *Μαλαχίας ὁ προφήτης* and with *ὁ Μαλαχίας φησί*.<sup>12</sup> A phrase is incorporated without reference.<sup>13</sup> In the historical narrative Malachi is designated as the "Angel in the Twelve."<sup>14</sup>

The book of Isaiah is quoted as *ἡ γραφή* in all the three leading works of Clement.<sup>15</sup> The same is true of the application of *τὸ πνεῦμα*, *τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα διὰ*.<sup>16</sup> We have, further, *ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ*, *ὁ θεὸς διὰ*, *ὁ κύριος διὰ*.<sup>17</sup> It is also quoted with *φησί*, *ἡ προφητεία*, *τὸ ἐκείνου προφητικόν*, *ὁ προφήτης*, and with the name of the writer or his book.<sup>18</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 26<sup>169</sup>; iii. 6<sup>101</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 14<sup>135</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>81</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Str., ii. 2<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Str., iii. 12<sup>86</sup>. But the reference is uncertain.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., ii. 3<sup>39</sup>; Str., iii. 6<sup>86</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>136</sup>; iii. 4<sup>39</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>122</sup>.

<sup>15</sup> Prot., i. 9; Pæd., i. 5<sup>24</sup>; Str., vi. 6<sup>49</sup>.

<sup>16</sup> Prot., viii. 79; Pæd., ii. 1<sup>8</sup>; Str., v. 14<sup>119</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>76</sup>; Prot., viii. 93; Str., iii. 15<sup>98</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., v. 13<sup>88</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Q. D., c. 41; Jonah ii.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., ii. 12<sup>128</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Prot., x. 90.

<sup>13</sup> Prot., xi. 114.

<sup>18</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>21</sup>; i. 8<sup>67</sup>, &c.



Many passages are incorporated, and there are numerous references or allusions.

The book of Jeremiah is quoted very rarely in the Pædagogus and the Stromateis as ἡ γραφή,<sup>1</sup> and in the Protrepicus not at all. It is quoted in all of them with τὸ πνεῦμα, and once with the elaborate formula, ὁ Ἱερεμίας ὁ προφήτης ὁ πάνσοφος, μᾶλλον δὲ ἐν Ἱερεμίᾳ τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα.<sup>2</sup> We have also ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ.<sup>3</sup> It is quoted with ὁ προφήτης, ἡ προφητεία,<sup>4</sup> and very frequently with the mere name, φησὶν Ἱερεμίας,<sup>5</sup> and once with γέγραπται under the name of the book.<sup>6</sup> There are some allusions to words or phrases.

The book of Baruch is quoted as ἡ θεία γραφή,<sup>7</sup> and with the formula (implied from the context) ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ Ἱερεμίου.<sup>8</sup>

A saying from the Lamentations of Jeremiah is quoted in like manner.<sup>9</sup>

The book of Ezekiel is nowhere quoted as ἡ γραφή, though once with the form ὡς ἐν τῷ Ἱεζεκιήλ γέγραπται.<sup>10</sup> It is quoted once with the form τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ.<sup>11</sup> We have, further, ὁ κύριος διὰ Ἱεζεκιήλ, ὁ παιδαγωγὸς διὰ Ἱεζεκιήλ.<sup>12</sup> There are passages quoted without reference and some suggestions.

The book of Daniel is nowhere quoted as ἡ γραφή, nor with the phrase τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ, nor with φησί. It is quoted with the name of the writer and with ὁ προφήτης.<sup>13</sup>

Of the apocryphal additions to the book of Daniel, we have a reference to Susanna as a heroine,<sup>14</sup> to the Song of the Three Holy Children,<sup>15</sup> and to an incident in Bel and the Dragon.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>76</sup>; Str., v. 5<sup>27</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>87</sup>; Str., iv. 26<sup>163</sup>; Prot., viii. 78.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>81</sup>. <sup>4</sup> Prot., viii. 78.

<sup>6</sup> Str., i. 11<sup>50</sup>. <sup>7</sup> Pæd., ii. 3<sup>36</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 9<sup>80</sup>. <sup>10</sup> Str., iv. 25<sup>188</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., ii. 15<sup>69</sup>; Pæd., i. 9<sup>76</sup>, 84.

<sup>14</sup> Ib., iv. 19<sup>119</sup>. <sup>15</sup> Ec. Pr., i; Str., i. 21<sup>123</sup>

<sup>5</sup> Ib., viii. 80.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., i. 10<sup>81</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., ii. 23<sup>147</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>125</sup>, 146.

<sup>16</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>123</sup>.

There is a reference to the books of the Maccabees.<sup>1</sup>

It would thus appear that of the books in the Hebrew canon Clement shows no knowledge of Ruth, the Song of Solomon, and Obadiah, and that all the apocryphal books are quoted or referred to except the Epistle of Jeremiah and the Third and Fourth Books of the Maccabees.

From this survey of Clement's use of the Old Testament in its bearing on our conclusions as to his use and appreciation of the books of the New Testament, the most important points to be adduced are these. No conclusion adverse to his knowledge of, or appreciation of, any particular book can be drawn from the absence of reference to any such book. Otherwise we should have to draw the inference that the books of Ruth, the Song of Solomon, and Obadiah were not in his copy of the Septuagint. The same applies to the writer's more or less infrequent reference to particular books as bearing on the measure of authority which he attached to them. In both cases the omission or infrequency is due to the personality of the writer, and to the degree in which he found certain writings more in harmony with his spiritual individuality and better adapted for exhortation and argument. The absence of the words *ἡ γραφή* or *γέγραπται*, where other indications of authority are present, throws no doubt on the authority of a book; or in that case we should have to eliminate the books of Numbers, all the historical books from Joshua to the Second Book of Chronicles, Daniel, and all the Minor Prophets except Amos and Haggai. No conclusion adverse to the inspiration of a writer can be drawn from the absence of *τὸ πνεῦμα διὰ*. For in that case we should have to eliminate from Clement's list of inspired books Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Job, Proverbs, Ecclesiasticus, the Wisdom of Solomon, Ezekiel, Daniel, and all the Minor Prophets

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>128</sup>. The genuineness of this passage is disputed.

except Amos and Zephaniah. No conclusion adverse to the authority and inspiration of certain books can be drawn from the omission of both *ἡ γραφή* and *τὸ πνεῦμα*, as in that case we should have to omit from his list of authoritative and inspired books Numbers, Daniel, and all the Minor Prophets except Amos, Haggai, and Zephaniah. No conclusion as to the relative authority which he assigned to any book of the same class or group can be drawn from the number of phrases or epithets implying authority or inspiration which he employs in reference to such, or the relative frequency of such phrases or epithets. Otherwise we should have to conclude that in his eyes Jeremiah was unequal in authority or value to Isaiah, and Ezekiel inferior to both. And, further, our conclusions as to the usage of Clement in regard to the authority or inspiration of particular books would be modified if one or other of the great works of Clement had perished. No doubt, it may be urged that there was no need for him to pay attention to such matters in view of the fact that no one disputed the authority of the books in question. But in view of the incidental character of the phraseology and the absence of design in the case of his references to both Testaments, the same argument can be applied to his usage in the case of the New Testament writings. Accordingly, in deciding as to the canonical status of any book in the New Testament in the eyes of Clement, we cannot be controlled solely by the application of a particular word or phrase, but must also have regard to the general attitude of the writer to such book or books and to the principles which underlie his application of the same.

Apart from his formulas of citation, his method of quotation throws light on the same question. His ascription of a passage in Job to the Second Book of Kings is a slip of memory which is only interesting in view of his otherwise almost complete ignorance of the latter book.

The ascription of a passage in Amos to Hosea in writings separated by such an interval as the *Protrepticus* and the Fifth Book of the *Stromateis* is an illustration of a familiar experience—the stereotyping of an error, not recognised as an error, in the mind of a writer. Apart from such errors, in view of his belief in the literal inspiration of the Old Testament, he deals with it with great freedom.<sup>1</sup> There can be little doubt that in many cases he quoted it from memory, and that in some cases, when he did not wish to quote the whole of a passage, he quoted only what was relevant to his purpose. As for his detachment of passages from the context, and without any regard to the context, or the transposition of clauses where the separate clauses are correctly quoted, is it a paradox to say that that shows his reverence for the authority of the words of Scripture? All were transcribed from one authority. And as passages from different books could be quoted and put together and treated as parts of a whole, so clauses might be abbreviated or reversed without any sense of impropriety. In a mass of solid gold it does not matter where you break off a piece, or how the pieces so broken off are welded or mixed together. In any case, if we find such freedom of treatment in regard to the Old Testament, we need not be surprised to find like freedom in regard to the treatment of the New Testament, without looking on it as an adverse testimony to the authority of the latter.

Before forming any conclusions as to whether Clement had an official canon of New Testament writings, which he regarded as of equal authority with the books of the Old Testament, or whether we can speak in his case of a canon at all, it may be well to look at the evidence for the

<sup>1</sup> For example, in *Str.*, i. 19<sup>96</sup> he attributes the saying in *Prov.* ix. 17 to ἡ σοφία instead of to γυνή ἄφρων. In *Pæd.*, i. 11<sup>96</sup> he quotes *Ex.* xxxii. 6, χορτασθέντες γοῦν ἀνέστησαν παλῆειν, and comments on the word χορτασθέντες, though it is not in the text of Exodus. Cf. *Prov.* xv. 17 with *Pæd.* ii. 1<sup>16</sup>.

separate books, applying to them the same tests that we have applied to the books of the Old Testament.

According to Eusebius,<sup>1</sup> Clement recorded in the 'Outlines' the following tradition of the earliest presbyters with reference to the order in which the Gospels were written. The Gospels containing the genealogies were written first. The Gospel of Mark was held to be a reproduction of the sayings of Peter, though Peter neither forbade nor encouraged its production. "Last of all, John, perceiving that the outward facts had been made plain in the Gospels, at the instance of his friends, and under the inspiration of the Spirit, composes a spiritual Gospel." The implication that there were only four Gospels traditionally recognised by the Church is confirmed by an explicit statement in the extant writings.<sup>2</sup>

That Clement regarded the Four Canonical Gospels as a unit and as forming a whole in spite of difference in expressions which in no way affected the harmony of the thought, there can be no doubt. This he designates as τὸ εὐαγγέλιον. After the phrase ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ or τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, we have quotations, for the most part introduced as sayings of the Lord, indifferently from the Gospels of St Matthew,<sup>3</sup> St Mark,<sup>4</sup> St Luke,<sup>5</sup> and St John.<sup>6</sup> It should be noted, however, that the passage assigned to St Mark, as it is quoted only in part, might have been taken from the parallel passage in St Matthew, so that the conclusion as to St Mark in this connection is uncertain.

The Gospel of St Matthew is mentioned by name in the Stromateis.<sup>7</sup> It is quoted as ἡ γραφή in the Protrep-

<sup>1</sup> H. E., vi. 14; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 197.

<sup>2</sup> Str., iii. 13<sup>93</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>13</sup>; i. 9<sup>76</sup>; i. 9<sup>79</sup>; i. 9<sup>80</sup>; i. 9<sup>85</sup>; Str., iv. 4<sup>15</sup>; vii. 12<sup>72</sup>; Ec. Pr., 57.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iv. 4<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., ii. 12<sup>125</sup>; Str., i. 21<sup>138</sup> (ἐν τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις); iii. 6<sup>56</sup>; Ec. Pr., 50.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>12</sup>; i. 9<sup>85</sup>; Adum. in 1 Joan., Stäh., vol. iii. p. 210.

<sup>7</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>147</sup>.



ticus,<sup>1</sup> the Pædagogus,<sup>2</sup> and the Stromateis.<sup>3</sup> It is quoted with *γέγραπται* in the Pædagogus<sup>4</sup> and the Stromateis.<sup>5</sup> Passages are quoted as sayings of *ὁ κυρίος*,<sup>6</sup> *ὁ παιδαγωγός*.<sup>7</sup> The form *φησί* is found in the Pædagogus.<sup>8</sup> In one case we have the form *τὸ προφητικὸν πνεῦμα*.<sup>9</sup> In a fragment of the Commentary on St Jude there is a reference to a saying in "other Gospels" than the Gospel of St Mark, which occurs in the Gospel of St Matthew.<sup>10</sup> A passage which may either refer to St Matthew or St Luke is introduced with the phrase *ἡ προφητικὴ φωνὴ συνῶδὸς ἀληθείας*.<sup>11</sup>

There are few certain references to the Gospel of St Mark. A definite allusion to it by name is found in the "Quis Dives,"<sup>12</sup> and in the fragment of the Commentary on St Jude.<sup>13</sup> The allusions to the Lord's Prayer<sup>14</sup> and to the Parable of the Fourfold Seed<sup>15</sup> are too indefinite to enable us to determine the source of the reference. The same is true of other sayings which may be taken from, or have as their background any one of, the Canonical Gospels.

The Gospel of St Luke is specifically mentioned by name in the Stromateis and in the Pædagogus.<sup>16</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή* in the Pædagogus<sup>17</sup> and the Stromateis.<sup>18</sup> It is implicitly referred to as such in the Pædagogus,<sup>19</sup> and either it or St Matthew is referred to as *ἡ γραφή* in various passages.<sup>20</sup> It is quoted as the saying of the

<sup>1</sup> Prot., ix. 82.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>14</sup>; i. 5<sup>17</sup>; ii. 12<sup>118</sup>; ii. 12<sup>120</sup>; iii. 11<sup>70</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., ii. 5<sup>22</sup>; v. 14<sup>91</sup>; vi. 18<sup>164</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 6<sup>50</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., iv. 14<sup>95</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Prot., ix. 87; Pæd., i. 5<sup>12</sup>; Str., vii. 15<sup>89</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., ii. 6<sup>51</sup>; iii. 12<sup>93</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Pæd., ii. 6<sup>49</sup>; iii. 4<sup>30</sup>; iii. 5<sup>33</sup>; iii. 6<sup>36</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., i. 5<sup>12</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 209..

<sup>11</sup> Prot., i. 4.

<sup>12</sup> Q. D., 5.

<sup>13</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 209.

<sup>14</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>73</sup>; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 205.

<sup>15</sup> Str., iv. 6<sup>31</sup>. So Clement designates the Parable of the Sower.

<sup>16</sup> Str., i. 21<sup>145</sup>; Pæd., ii. 1<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Pæd., ii. 12<sup>120</sup>. But cf. note 4.

<sup>18</sup> Str., ii. 5<sup>22</sup>. But cf. note 5.

<sup>19</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>6</sup>, compared with ii. 1<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>20</sup> Ib., ii. 12<sup>120</sup>; iii. 11<sup>70</sup>. Cf. note 4.

Word,<sup>1</sup> the Lord,<sup>2</sup> the Saviour.<sup>3</sup> It is quoted with *φησί* in the *Pædagogus*.<sup>4</sup> A passage is quoted in the *Protrepiticus* as one of the *λόγιοι νόμοι καὶ ἅγιοι λόγοι*.<sup>5</sup> There are allusions to the Parable of the Two Brothers,<sup>6</sup> to the Parable of Lazarus,<sup>7</sup> to Zaccheus,<sup>8</sup> and to a saying of the Baptist<sup>9</sup> which is regarded as authoritative.

The Gospel of St John is referred to by name in the *Pædagogus*.<sup>10</sup> Sayings of John or John the Apostle taken from the Gospel are quoted in the *Protrepiticus*,<sup>11</sup> the *Stromateis*,<sup>12</sup> and a fragment of the *Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα*.<sup>13</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή* in the *Protrepiticus* and the *Stromateis*.<sup>14</sup> The same passage is quoted as Scripture, and as a heretical watchword with the words *ναὶ φασι γεγράφθαι*.<sup>15</sup> It is quoted with sayings of the Lord,<sup>16</sup> the Word,<sup>17</sup> the Tutor.<sup>18</sup> It is quoted with *φησί*,<sup>19</sup> and once with a *ὅτι εἶπεν*.<sup>20</sup>

In all the writings of Clement there are numerous passages from the Gospels, and many suggestions by word or phrase of passages therein incorporated into his own text, occasionally with a comment, but much more frequently without.

The important points that arise from this survey are these. The word "Gospel"—with the possible exception of St Mark—is applied indifferently to all. All the Gospels are mentioned by name. The Gospel of St Matthew is most frequently referred to as *ἡ γραφή*: the Gospel of St John comes next in order. It is very infrequently applied to St Luke, and to St Mark not at all. This

<sup>1</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 8<sup>72</sup>.<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 1<sup>4</sup>; *Q. D.*, 39.<sup>3</sup> *Ec. Pr.*, 26.<sup>4</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 4<sup>10</sup>; ii. 9<sup>79</sup>; iii. 12<sup>91</sup>.<sup>5</sup> *Prot.*, x. 108.<sup>6</sup> *Str.*, iv. 6<sup>30</sup>. So Clement designates the Parable of the Prodigal Son.<sup>7</sup> *Str.*, iv. 6<sup>30</sup>.<sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 6<sup>35</sup>.<sup>9</sup> *Pæd.*, iii. 12<sup>91</sup>.<sup>10</sup> *Ib.*, i. 6<sup>38</sup>.<sup>11</sup> *Prot.*, iv. 59.<sup>12</sup> *Str.*, v. 12<sup>81</sup>.<sup>13</sup> *Stäh.*, vol. iii. pp. 216, 217.<sup>14</sup> *Prot.*, ix. 82; *Str.*, i. 21<sup>135</sup>.<sup>15</sup> *Str.*, i. 20<sup>100</sup>; i. 17<sup>81</sup>.<sup>16</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 3<sup>8</sup>; i. 5<sup>13</sup>; i. 6<sup>28</sup>, <sup>36</sup>; i. 8<sup>66</sup>; *Adum.* in 1 *Pet.*, *Stäh.*, vol. iii.

p. 204; fr. 39, p. 220.

<sup>17</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 6<sup>46</sup>.<sup>18</sup> *Ib.*, i. 7<sup>53</sup>.<sup>19</sup> *Ib.*, i. 6<sup>29</sup>. Cf. i. 7<sup>53</sup>; *Prot.*, ii. 10 (*φησί σου*.)<sup>20</sup> *Pæd.*, i. 8<sup>62</sup>.

fact is a striking illustration of the danger of drawing conclusions from too narrow a basis. For not only is the Gospel of St Mark referred to as a separate Gospel, but, so far from occupying an inferior position in his eyes, it is the text of that Gospel which he employs as the basis of his tractate, "Quis Dives." The favourite Old Testament phrase τὸ πνεῦμα is found, and in an altered form, with reference to a saying in St Matthew only. The word φησί is applied very rarely to St Matthew, not frequently to St Luke, and not at all to St Mark or St John. The sayings are ascribed to the Lord Himself most frequently in St John, less frequently in St Matthew and St Luke. It is difficult to account for this varying usage; but to whatever cause it may be due, it is not due to any distinction in the mind of the writer as to the relative authority and sacredness of the different Gospels, all of which are recognised as forming a unity, in perfect harmony with each other, and alike authoritative.

"The Acts of the Apostles," says Leipoldt,<sup>1</sup> "is not regarded by Clement as canonical. His successor Origen first takes this step." This statement is open to question. The authorship of the Acts of the Apostles is specifically assigned to St Luke.<sup>2</sup> It is quoted with the designation of "The Acts" simply,<sup>3</sup> and "The Acts of the Apostles."<sup>4</sup> It is quoted with reference to the education of Moses.<sup>5</sup> It is quoted as giving authentic sayings of St Peter and incidents in his life.<sup>6</sup> It is quoted in like manner as giving authentic sayings of St Paul, and incidents in his career.<sup>7</sup> In defence of his own exegesis of 2 Cor. xii. 5, he quotes the evidence

<sup>1</sup> Entstehung d. ntl. Kan., p. 220.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 12<sup>82</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 23<sup>153</sup>, 154; vi. 8<sup>63</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>16</sup>; Str., i. 11<sup>50</sup>; i. 19<sup>91</sup>; iv. 15<sup>97</sup>; v. 11<sup>75</sup>; vi. 18<sup>165</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., i. 23<sup>153</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>16</sup>; Str., vi. 8<sup>63</sup>; i. 23<sup>154</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., i. 11<sup>50</sup>; i. 19<sup>91</sup>; v. 11<sup>75</sup>; v. 12<sup>82</sup>; vi. 15<sup>124</sup>.

of Acts as to the missionary activity of St Paul.<sup>1</sup> It is quoted with *γέγραπται*.<sup>2</sup> Reference is twice made to the "Catholic Epistle of all the Apostles," once with mention of the Book of Acts by name, once without such mention.<sup>3</sup> The statement in Acts vi. 12, with reference to the Twelve and their action in regard to the distribution of the common funds, is quoted without reference to Acts, as though the source of the allusion were well known.<sup>4</sup> An important clause of Acts i. 7 is incorporated without reference, but from the context the implication is that it is a saying of Christ.<sup>5</sup> "We have learned," He says, "that God is a knower of hearts." The word *παρελήφμεν* cannot be pressed as indicating an authoritative source of teaching. But the word *καρδιογνώστης* is found nowhere else in the Scriptures save in the Book of Acts, where it is found twice.<sup>6</sup> In the literature prior to the date of Clement it is found in the "Pastor" of Hermas, but there it is given as an attribute of the Lord, not of God,<sup>7</sup> and the most natural conclusion, in view of his otherwise attested knowledge of the Book of Acts, is that it is a reminiscence of that book. The use of Acts as a historical book must be compared with his use of the Historical Books of the Old Testament; and, compared with the scanty reference to them from Joshua to the Second Book of Chronicles inclusive, the knowledge and use of Acts are all the more noteworthy. In view of the fact that so many spurious Acts were current at this period, the use of the form, "The Acts" simply, implies that it occupied a unique and distinctive place, as the one historical record of the apostolic age that could claim universal recognition. A writing whose author is declared to be the

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 18<sup>165</sup>.<sup>2</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>16</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 15<sup>97</sup>; Pæd., ii. 7<sup>56</sup>.<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ii. 7<sup>86</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Str., iii. 6<sup>49</sup>.<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 12<sup>101</sup>; Acts i. 24; xv. 8.<sup>7</sup> Hermas, Mand., iv. 3.

writer of the Third Gospel, whose sayings can be incorporated without specific reference to their sources, which can be quoted as authoritative in support of his own attitude to Greek philosophy as well as in questions of practical ethics<sup>1</sup>—to say nothing of the term *γέγραπται*—was certainly to the consciousness of Clement a document of the first rank and invested with canonical authority.

“Unless all appearances be deceptive,” it is averred, “it was strictly speaking only the Four Gospels that Clement considered and treated as completely on a level with the Old Testament. The formula, ‘The Law and the Prophets and the Gospel,’ is frequently used, and everything else, even the Apostolic writings, is judged by this group. He does not consider even the Pauline Epistles to be a court of appeal of equal value with the Gospels, though he occasionally quotes them as Scripture.”<sup>2</sup> Now, if the question could be decided by the extent of his knowledge and use of the Pauline Epistles, there could be no doubt of the answer. But it is always possible to hold that they were not used because recognised as authoritative, but became authoritative because they were so used,—though the ground for their use has in this case to be explained; and not the use but the method of use must be the determining factor.

Clement declares the harmony of the Law, the Prophets, and the Apostles with the Gospel.<sup>3</sup> He takes for granted that a conflict between Paul and the language of the Old Testament is impossible, and adopts altogether fantastic exegesis to get rid of the apparent conflict. He speaks of the Law given through Moses and that given through the Apostles as alike of service to the Word in the education of mankind; and all the illustrations that

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 19<sup>91</sup>; Pæd., ii. 1<sup>16</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Harnack, ‘History of Dogma,’ vol. ii. p. 58.

<sup>3</sup> Str., vi. 11<sup>68</sup>; vii. 3<sup>14</sup>.



follow are taken from the Epistles of St Paul.<sup>1</sup> He says that the Greeks must be taught by the Law and the Prophets and then by the blessed Apostles.<sup>2</sup> He puts the injunction of the Apostle on a line with the Gospel and affirms their agreement.

The Pauline Epistles are marked by the symbolic note<sup>3</sup> which was the highest characteristic of religious writings, and could be allegorised so as to bring out their hidden meaning. For the unbelieving to reject the message of so great an apostle could only issue in condemnation.<sup>4</sup> By heretics and orthodox alike his words were adduced as a final court of appeal.<sup>5</sup> The only question of controversy betwixt Clement and the heretics was not the question of their authority but of their interpretation. The Pauline Epistles are *αἱ θεῖαι γραφαί*.

In the Pædagogus he gives some passages from what he designates by these words—and the numerous quotations which follow are taken from the Epistles to the Ephesians, Galatians, 1st Thessalonians, Colossians, First Epistle to Timothy, and Romans.<sup>6</sup> The First Epistle to Timothy and the Epistle to Titus belong to the "Sacred Books."<sup>7</sup> Setting aside some doubtful cases where it is uncertain whether a passage from the Old or the New Testament was before his mind, we find that the technical term *ἡ γραφή* or *γέγραπται* is applied to Romans, the Epistles to the Corinthians, Ephesians, Colossians, 1st Thessalonians, 1st Timothy. A saying in 2nd Corinthians is the cry of "The

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>95</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>119</sup>. Cf. vi. 18<sup>164</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Pæd., ix. 84; Str., vii. 16<sup>104</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Str., iii. 8<sup>61</sup>; iii. 1<sup>2</sup>; ii. 7<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>94.96</sup>. It has been urged against the weight to be attached to this that Clement mixes up with these passages quotations from profane writers. It is true that he interpolates a saying from Pindar, but giving it as a quotation from Pindar, and some lines from Menander, without stating his authority. But that only proves that he could not resist an apposite poetical quotation.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>. *ἐγγεγράφεται ταῖς βίβλοις ταῖς ἁγίαις*.

Truth." We have also the phrase that most clearly indicates inspiration, τὸ ἐν τῇ ἀποστόλῃ ἅγιον πνεῦμα.<sup>1</sup> In the sense of Scripture we have φησί applied several times to passages in the Epistles; and we have once κελεύει in a similar usage. One saying is quoted as a command of the Tutor, another as an exhortation of the Word.

All the honorific epithets that are applied to Moses, David, Solomon, and others whose writings are quoted by the name or designation of the writer, are applied with much greater profuseness to St Paul. He is repeatedly characterised as ὁ θεῖος ἀποστόλος,<sup>2</sup> ὁ θεσπέσιος,<sup>3</sup> ὁ μακάριος,<sup>4</sup> ὁ γενναῖος,<sup>5</sup> less frequently ὁ ἅγιος, ὁ καλός. He is the apostle of the Lord.<sup>6</sup> He is further an unerring witness.<sup>7</sup> A saying of his is characterised as expressed in an inspired and prophetic manner, as most mystically and holily uttered.<sup>8</sup> The great majority of the quotations are simply given as sayings of the Apostle without any epithet. In all the writings of Clement there are numerous passages from the Pauline Epistles incorporated into his text, for the most part without any indication that they are quotations, sometimes with a comment which implies that they are quotations. In many cases it is clearly shown by a word or a phrase that he is saturated not only with the teaching but with the vocabulary of St Paul.

From all the points indicated, from the relationship in which they are described as standing to the Old Testament and the Gospel, from the general notes that mark their character and authority, from the specific phrases and words that indicate a written authority, from the epithets that are bestowed upon him and his teaching, and from the extent of Clement's knowledge of them, in the light of the method of his use, there would seem to be little doubt that

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>49</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> ±9 times.

<sup>3</sup> ±5 times.

<sup>4</sup> ±6 times.

<sup>5</sup> ±8 times.

<sup>6</sup> Prot., ix. <sup>87</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. <sup>149</sup>.

the Pauline Epistles were to Clement canonical Scriptures in the fullest sense of the word. Let us look at the details.

The Epistle to the Romans is repeatedly quoted by name.<sup>1</sup> Quotations from it belong to the Divine Scriptures.<sup>2</sup> It is quoted with *ἡ γραφή* in the sense of a passage of Scripture, and also with *γέγραπται*.<sup>3</sup> It is quoted as a saying of "the Apostle"<sup>4</sup> and of "Paul,"<sup>5</sup> sometimes with, sometimes without, honorific epithets. Numerous passages are incorporated without reference.<sup>6</sup> Sometimes a word or phrase suggests that the phraseology or thought of Paul was in his mind.<sup>7</sup>

The First Epistle to the Corinthians is quoted by name,<sup>8</sup> and also in the more general phrase "to the Corinthians,"<sup>9</sup> and by the indefinite phrase "in a certain Epistle."<sup>10</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή* in the technical sense of a passage of Scripture.<sup>11</sup> A saying is quoted as that of *τὸ ἐν τῷ ἀποστόλῳ ἁγίῳ πνεῦμα*.<sup>12</sup> It is also quoted with *φησί*.<sup>13</sup> The form *ὁ ἀποστόλος*<sup>14</sup> is associated with quotations, and also the form *ὁ Παῦλος*,<sup>15</sup> sometimes with, sometimes without, honorific epithets. Numerous passages are incorporated without reference.<sup>16</sup> There are suggestions of many others.

The Second Epistle to the Corinthians is mentioned by name.<sup>17</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή*,<sup>18</sup> and as the utterance of the Truth,<sup>19</sup> and as the exhortation of the Word.<sup>20</sup> We have also the forms *ὁ ἀποστόλος*,<sup>21</sup> *ὁ Παῦλος*, with or without

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>19</sup>; Str., ii. 6<sup>29</sup>; iii. 4<sup>39</sup>; iii. 11<sup>75</sup>; iv. 3<sup>9</sup>; v. 4<sup>26</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., iii. 8<sup>61</sup>; iii. 12<sup>85</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> ±42 times.

<sup>5</sup> ±8 times.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 8<sup>69</sup>; ii. 1<sup>10</sup>; Prot., x. 59.

<sup>7</sup> Prot., x. 92.

<sup>8</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>33</sup>; Str., ii. 22<sup>136</sup>; v. 12<sup>80</sup>; vii. 14<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., i. 7<sup>61</sup>; Str., i. 14<sup>59</sup>, &c.

<sup>10</sup> Str., iii. 6<sup>53</sup>. *ἐν τίνι ἐπιστολῇ*.

<sup>11</sup> Cf. Str., vii. 14<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>49</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Ib., ii. 1<sup>6</sup>; ii. 1<sup>10</sup>; ii. 1<sup>13</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> ±42 times.

<sup>15</sup> ±9 times.

<sup>16</sup> Pæd., ii. 1<sup>10</sup>; iii. 11<sup>79</sup>.

<sup>17</sup> Str., iv. 16<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>18</sup> Ib., vi. 8<sup>66</sup>.

<sup>19</sup> Prot., xi. 115.

<sup>20</sup> Pæd., iii. 2<sup>11</sup>.

<sup>21</sup> ±10 times.

honorific epithets. Passages are incorporated without reference. There are suggestions of many others by a word.<sup>1</sup>

The Epistle to the Galatians is referred to by name.<sup>2</sup> Passages taken from it belong to the "Divine Scripture."<sup>3</sup> We have the phrase *ὁ ἀποστόλος*<sup>4</sup> and also *ὁ Παῦλος*.<sup>5</sup> A few passages are incorporated without reference; and there are suggestions of others.

The Epistle to the Ephesians is quoted by name.<sup>6</sup> It is plain from the exegesis of Origen that the words *ἐν Ἐφέσῳ* were not in his MSS. Whether they were in those used by Clement or not, the Alexandrian tradition as represented by him is in favour of the Ephesian destination of the letter; and it must have been in the superscription. The Epistle belongs to the "Divine Scriptures."<sup>7</sup> It is quoted with *ἡ γραφή*.<sup>8</sup> We have the forms *ὁ ἀποστόλος*<sup>9</sup> with honorific epithets and *ὁ Παῦλος*. Some passages are incorporated without reference, sometimes with a comment. There are suggestions by words or phrases of others.<sup>10</sup>

The Epistle to the Philippians is referred to by name.<sup>11</sup> It is nowhere designated as *ἡ γραφή*. It is quoted with the indefinite "*ἐν τίνι ἐπιστολῇ*."<sup>12</sup> We have the forms *ὁ ἀποστόλος*,<sup>13</sup> *ὁ Παῦλος*. One or two passages are quoted without reference;<sup>14</sup> and there are suggestions of others.<sup>15</sup>

The Epistle to the Colossians is quoted by name.<sup>16</sup> It belongs to the "Divine Scriptures."<sup>17</sup> *ἡ γραφή* is used in

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>79</sup>; iii. 12<sup>94</sup>; Prot., x. 94, *καπηλεύω*. Cf. 2 Cor. ii. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., i. 9<sup>83</sup>; Str., iii. 15<sup>99</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> ± 5 times.

<sup>5</sup> ± 4 times.

<sup>6</sup> Pæd., i. 5<sup>18</sup>; Str., iv. 8<sup>64</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Str., v. 5<sup>27</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> ± 16 times.

<sup>10</sup> Prot., ii. 27; Pæd., i. 6<sup>23</sup>; Prot., x. 92.

<sup>11</sup> Str., iv. 13<sup>92</sup>. Cf. Prot., i. 8.

<sup>12</sup> Str. iii. 6<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> ± 5 times.

<sup>14</sup> Prot., i. 8.

<sup>15</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>99</sup>. Cf. Phil. iii. 20.

<sup>16</sup> Str., i. 1<sup>15</sup>; iv. 8<sup>65</sup>, &c.

<sup>17</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

the sense of a passage of Scripture.<sup>1</sup> We have the forms *ὁ ἀποστόλος*,<sup>2</sup> *ὁ Παῦλος*.

The First Epistle to the Thessalonians is not quoted by name. It belongs to the "Divine Scriptures."<sup>3</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή*.<sup>4</sup> We have *ὁ ἀποστόλος*.<sup>5</sup> One passage is quoted without reference; and there is a suggestion of another.<sup>6</sup>

The Second Epistle to the Thessalonians is not quoted by name, nor are any passages from it quoted as *ἡ γραφή*. One passage is quoted without reference.<sup>7</sup> There is a possible suggestion of another.<sup>8</sup>

The First Epistle to Timothy is quoted as addressed to Timothy.<sup>9</sup> There is a reference to the Second Epistle by mistake for the First.<sup>10</sup> It is quoted as *ἡ γραφή*<sup>11</sup> and also with *γέγραπται*.<sup>12</sup> Passages from it are quoted as belonging to the "Divine Scriptures."<sup>13</sup> Precepts in it are taken from the "Sacred Books."<sup>14</sup> Passages are quoted under the form *ὁ ἀποστόλος*, *ὁ Παῦλος*, with or without a honorific epithet.<sup>15</sup> One passage is incorporated without reference. There are suggestions of others.<sup>16</sup>

The Second Epistle to Timothy is mentioned by name, and as addressed to Timothy.<sup>17</sup> Passages are quoted with *ὁ ἀποστόλος*, with and without honorific epithet.<sup>18</sup> No passages are quoted with the name of *ὁ Παῦλος* simply. No passages are quoted without reference. Clement states that the heretics rejected the authenticity of the Epistles to Timothy on dogmatic grounds.<sup>19</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 8<sup>66</sup>.

<sup>2</sup>  $\pm 6$  times.

<sup>3</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., ii. 9<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>5</sup>  $\pm 4$  times.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vii. 10<sup>57</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., v. 3<sup>17</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Prot., x. 94.

<sup>9</sup> Pæd., ii. 2<sup>19</sup>; Str., i. 1<sup>4</sup>; ii. 2<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Str., iii. 6<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., iv. 3<sup>9</sup>.

<sup>12</sup> Ib., iv. 16<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Ib.

<sup>15</sup> Str., i. 10<sup>49</sup>; iii. 6<sup>51</sup>.

<sup>16</sup> Prot., ix. 86.

<sup>17</sup> Str., iii. 6<sup>53</sup>; iv. 7<sup>49</sup>.

<sup>18</sup> Ib., i. 10<sup>49</sup>; v. i. 5.

<sup>19</sup> Cf. ii. 11<sup>52</sup>. ὑπὸ ταύτης ἐλεγχόμενοι τῆς φωνῆς (i.e., 1 Tim. vi. 20) οἱ

ἀπὸ τῶν αἰρέσεων τὰς πρὸς Τιμόθεον ἀθετοῦσιν ἐπιστολάς.



The Epistle to Titus is quoted by name.<sup>1</sup> Precepts contained in it are assigned to the "Sacred Books."<sup>2</sup> A passage is quoted as ἡ ἀποστολικὴ γραφή.<sup>3</sup> Another passage is quoted as from the divinely-inspired apostle of the Lord.<sup>4</sup>

The Epistle to Philemon is nowhere quoted or referred to. That this does not necessarily imply ignorance of its existence or doubt of its authority is plain from his apparent ignorance of certain books of the Old Testament. The omission was probably due to its brevity and its personal note. The contents were of no special interest to him, as the question of slavery was to all appearance not urgent in the Church in Alexandria.

The Epistle to the Hebrews is quoted by name, and as the work of Paul.<sup>5</sup> A passage is quoted as from the divine apostle.<sup>6</sup> We have also ὁ ἀποστόλος simply.<sup>7</sup> A passage is quoted without reference, and there are suggestions of others.<sup>8</sup> In a passage from the "Hypotyposes," preserved by Eusebius, the position of Clement with regard to the authorship of Hebrews is given as follows: "The Epistle to the Hebrews was the work of Paul, and was written to the Hebrews in the Hebrew language, but Luke translated it carefully and published it for the Greeks. Hence the similarity in the complexion of style between Acts and Hebrews. The words, Paul the Apostle, were probably not prefixed, because in sending it to the Hebrews, who were prejudiced and suspicious of him, he did not wish to repel them at the outset by putting his name."<sup>9</sup> The interest of this hypothesis is that Clement has observed the difference in style between Hebrews and the Pauline Epistles and its likeness to St Luke.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Str., i. 14<sup>69</sup>; iv. 20<sup>128</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>97</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Prot., i. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., i. 7.

<sup>5</sup> Str., v. 10<sup>62</sup>; vi. 8<sup>62</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., ii. 2<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> ± 7 times.

<sup>8</sup> Prot., ix. 82.

<sup>9</sup> Eus., H. E., vi. 14.

<sup>10</sup> Cf. Adum. in 1 Pet. v. 13; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 206.

From this record it appears that, with the exception of Philemon, all the Epistles of St Paul were used by Clement; that, with the exception of 1st and 2nd Thessalonians, all the Epistles are mentioned by name; that, with the exception of the Epistles to the Philippians, 2nd Timothy, and Hebrews, all the Epistles are quoted as Scripture, or in phrases which imply scriptural authority; that, apart from cases where a honorific epithet is attached to the name of Paul or to him as the apostle, the form *ὁ ἀποστόλος*, most naturally interpreted as the Apostle *par excellence*, occurs more than 120 times, most frequently in 1st Corinthians, Romans, and Ephesians, least frequently in Philippians and the Pastoral Epistles, and not at all in 2nd Thessalonians; that, with the exception of 1st Thessalonians and Titus, we have passages incorporated without reference or suggestions of passages. As has been shown in the survey of references to the Old Testament Scriptures, the absence of the word *ἡ γραφή* cannot be pressed as showing that Philippians, 2nd Timothy, and Hebrews occupied in his mind a lower level than the other Epistles; and the detailed examination leads to the same conclusion as that drawn from the more general principles previously considered, that the Epistles of St Paul were normative in all questions of doctrine and ethics for the Church of Alexandria in the time of Clement.

According to the statement of Eusebius, Clement commented on all the catholic Epistles. To what extent is this confirmed by the evidence of the extant writings?

There is no clear evidence of Clement's knowledge of the Epistle of St James. The passage, "faith is perfected through gnosis,"<sup>1</sup> can hardly be regarded as an allusion to "faith was perfected by works." The explanation of the word "God of all grace"—because He is good and

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 10<sup>55</sup>. διὰ ταύτης (i.e., γνώσεως) γὰρ τελειοῦται ἡ πίστις.

the Giver of all good things—is slender evidence of his knowledge of St James ii. 22.<sup>1</sup> The references to Abraham as the “friend of God” from the context are most naturally referred to the Old Testament.<sup>2</sup> The passage in St James iv. 6 is twice given; but in one case it is taken from Clement of Rome,<sup>3</sup> and in the other case it is impossible to say whether it is taken from the Epistle of St James, or from the parallel passage in the First Epistle of St Peter, or from the Book of Proverbs.<sup>4</sup> As it is quoted as ἡ γραφή, which no other passage of 1st Peter is, it is most probably to be assigned to Proverbs. The saying quoted in the Stromateis might be taken either from St Matthew or from St James.<sup>5</sup> It is nearer in form to the latter than the former; but, as in the first instance noted, it is quoted as a saying of the Lord, and in the latter case it is incorporated without reference, the probability is that he was thinking of the passage in St Matthew. By Justin and others the passage in St Matthew is quoted in the form employed by Clement. The strongest case for his knowledge of St James is the reference in the Stromateis, where, it is true, the command to love one’s neighbour is associated, not, as in James, with a “royal law,” but with “royal persons.”<sup>6</sup> This difference in the case of Clement, whose memory was often tenacious of single words, does not disprove that that passage was in his mind. But of itself the passage is hardly sufficient to prove the thesis, as it is not clearly confirmed by other testimony. At the most, the evidence in regard to St James does not go beyond a “non liquet.”

The First Epistle of St Peter is quoted by name.<sup>7</sup> No

<sup>1</sup> Adum. in 1 Pet.; Stäh., vol. iii. p. 206.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., iii. 2<sup>12</sup>; iii. 8<sup>42</sup>; Str., ii. 5<sup>30</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>49</sup>; 1 Pet. v. 5.; Rom. iii. 34.

<sup>5</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>99</sup>; vii. 11<sup>67</sup>. Cf. vii. 8<sup>54</sup>. Cf. Matt. v. 37 with James v. 12.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vi. 18<sup>164</sup>. Cf., however, 1 Pet. 2<sup>9</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Str., iv. 17<sup>106</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Str., iii. 18<sup>110</sup>; iv. 20<sup>129</sup>.

passage is quoted with ἡ γραφή. A passage is quoted with φησί, or as a saying of the Tutor.<sup>1</sup> One passage is quoted with the words τὸ εἰρημένον ἀγίως.<sup>2</sup> Peter is designated ὁ μακάριος<sup>3</sup> and ὁ θαυμάσιος.<sup>4</sup> Numerous passages are quoted simply as the sayings of Peter.<sup>5</sup> Several passages are quoted without reference,<sup>6</sup> and there are numerous suggestions.<sup>7</sup>

The Second Epistle of St Peter is nowhere mentioned nor quoted. The fact that he only seems to have known one epistle because he uses the phrase ἐν τῇ ἐπιστολῇ<sup>8</sup> does not prove that he knew only one; for he uses a like phrase of 1st John,<sup>9</sup> though he knew of more than one, and also of 1st Corinthians.<sup>10</sup> Potter gives two references to 2nd Peter. The first proves nothing; the second is a mistake for 1st Peter. In Strom. i. 1<sup>2</sup> some have found a possible reference to 2nd Peter ii. 22; but on a phrase so proverbial nothing can be built. There is a possible suggestion of 2nd Peter i. 10 in Strom. vii. 11<sup>66</sup> and Quis Dives, c. 36; but the possibility is barely established. As in the case of St James, the statement of Eusebius may be held to demonstrate Clement's knowledge of 2nd Peter; but in his extant works there is no evidence of such knowledge. As the emphasising of knowledge in the Epistle was in harmony with his way of thinking, the absence of reference here is the more noteworthy. In one case, moreover, where he accuses the heretics of twisting the Scriptures with a view to their own pleasures, a reference so apposite to the context as that of 2nd Peter iii. 16 might naturally have been expected.<sup>11</sup>

Part of his commentary on the Epistle of St Jude survives in a Latin version. Elsewhere the Epistle is definitely

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>68</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iii. 11<sup>53</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 219.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iii. 11<sup>75</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Pæd., i. 6<sup>44</sup>; iii. 11<sup>74</sup>; Str., iv. 7<sup>46</sup>; Ex. Theod., 12.

<sup>6</sup> Prot., iv. 59.

<sup>7</sup> E.g., Str., i. 28<sup>178</sup>; iii. 4<sup>31</sup>; vii. 7<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iii. 18<sup>110</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>32</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., v. 12<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> Ib., iii. 4<sup>39</sup>.

assigned to St Jude.<sup>1</sup> A passage is quoted with "Jude says,"<sup>2</sup> and another with the words διδασκαλικώτατα ἐκτίθεται.<sup>3</sup> A passage is quoted without reference.<sup>4</sup>

The First Epistle of St John is specifically mentioned.<sup>5</sup> A passage is quoted as having been spoken by John *θείως γε καὶ ἐπιπνύως*,<sup>6</sup> another passage with *φησί*.<sup>7</sup> Several sayings are quoted as sayings of John.<sup>8</sup> One passage is quoted without reference.<sup>9</sup> Part of the commentary survives in a Latin version.

Clement knew of at least two Epistles of St John, as he refers to the "larger epistle."<sup>10</sup> Part of a commentary on the Second Epistle survives in a Latin Version. Clement regards *ἐκλεκτή* as a proper name, and says that the letter was addressed to a certain Babylonian.<sup>11</sup>

There is no trace of the Third Epistle in the extant writings of Clement.

The Book of Revelation is assigned to St John.<sup>12</sup> It is quoted as "The Apocalypse."<sup>13</sup> If this does not prove that the Apocalypse of St John occupied a higher platform than the other Apocalypses then current, it shows that at least it was more widely known. A reference to the Word as Alpha and Omega is found twice, and there is a kindred reference to the Lord.<sup>14</sup> With the indefinite phrase, "we have heard," there is a reference to the precious stones on the walls and gates of the Jerusalem that is above.<sup>15</sup> A comment implies that it is "Scripture." There is a refer-

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 2<sup>11</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Pæd., iii. 8<sup>44</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iii. 8<sup>45</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Str., vi. 8<sup>65</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., ii. 15<sup>66</sup>; iii. 4<sup>32</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Q. D., 37.

<sup>7</sup> Str., iii. 5<sup>42</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>82</sup>; iii. 12<sup>98</sup>; Str., iii. 5<sup>44</sup>; iii. 6<sup>45</sup>; iv. 16<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Str., v. 1<sup>13</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Ib., ii. 15<sup>68</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> "Scripta vero est ad quamdam Babyloniam Electam" (Stäh. vol. iii p. 215). (2 John i.)

<sup>12</sup> Str., vi. 13<sup>106</sup>.

<sup>13</sup> Pæd., ii. 10<sup>108</sup>.

<sup>14</sup> Ib., i. 6<sup>38</sup>; Str., iv. 25<sup>157</sup>.

<sup>15</sup> Pæd., ii. 12<sup>119</sup>. τὸ συμβολικὸν τῶν γραφῶν.



ence to the contents of Rev. v. 6.<sup>1</sup> There are suggestions of other passages.<sup>2</sup>

If the positions here supported be adopted, it would appear that in the extant works of Clement we have clear evidence of his knowledge and recognition of all the books that now form the canon of the New Testament, with the exception of Philemon, 2nd Peter, and 3rd John, and that in the case of James the evidence is inconclusive.

From the evidence it would appear that Clement was acquainted with at least two groups of authoritative books other than the writings of the Old Testament—the one designated τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, the other ὁ ἀπόστολος. Though the Gospels could not have been formed into one roll,<sup>3</sup> they are virtually regarded as forming one book. As in the New Testament we find the “Law” given as a denomination for the whole of the Old Testament,<sup>4</sup> so it has been suggested that Clement uses the word “Gospel” for the whole writings which he recognised as belonging to the New Testament. But the arguments are inconclusive; and it is all but certain that he used the word to express the four canonical Gospels only.

A second group seems to be quoted under the name of “The Apostle.” In an overwhelming number of cases the word simply means St Paul. But in some cases—though we nowhere find the phrase “in the Apostle” as a parallel phrase to that “in the Gospel”—it seems to refer to writings. As it is nowhere applied to any quotation from the Epistles of the other Apostles, it is probably to be interpreted as meaning the Epistles of St Paul only. In the plural form the phrase does not seem to be applied to writings but to individuals, whose writings for that reason

<sup>1</sup> Str., v. 6<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *E.g.*, *Pæd.*, iii. 3<sup>25</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Kenyon, ‘Handbook to the Textual Criticism of the N. T.’ p. 31.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 21.

are recognised as authoritative. In this way the term might include both the Catholic Epistles and the Pauline Epistles.

The manner in which "Gospel" and "Apostle" are referred to implies their authoritative character. But it does not follow that they were regarded as parts of an exclusive whole, of a canon in the latter sense of the word. Clement uses the word "canon" in various ways. He speaks of the "canon of the truth," of the "canon of the faith," of the "canon of the Church," of the "ecclesiastical canon."<sup>1</sup> This last is defined as "the harmony and agreement of the Law and the Prophets with the Covenant delivered at the coming of the Lord."<sup>2</sup> It is therefore a canon of interpretation, not of the contents of that to which the canon applied, though it implies a certain relationship between the things interpreted. The question of a canon, considered as an authoritative collection of writings, turns rather on the interpretation to be put on the word *διαθήκη*. The word is used by him in the New Testament sense of "covenant," without any reference to a written testament, sometimes in a sense that fluctuates between these conceptions. But in some cases the natural interpretation suggests a written document. He speaks of the importance of philosophy in enabling us to distinguish synonymous expressions in the Testaments.<sup>3</sup> After quoting a saying of the Lord in the Gospel of St Matthew, he asks, quoting a passage from the Book of Proverbs, "Does He not legislate to the same effect in the Old Testament?"<sup>4</sup> Elsewhere he contrasts the saying of the Law with a saying of the Lord Himself in the New

<sup>1</sup> Str., vii. 16<sup>94</sup>; iv. 15<sup>98</sup>; vii. 16<sup>105</sup>; vii. 7<sup>41</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>126</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 9<sup>44</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iii. 6<sup>54</sup>. οὐχὶ δὲ τὰ αὐτὰ καὶ ἐν τῇ παλαιᾷ διαθήκῃ νομοθετεῖ; Prov. xix. 17; Matt. xxv. 40.

Testament.<sup>1</sup> The one was a written authority; is it not most natural to regard the other, the contrasted, source, as also written? So he speaks of the Epistles of St Paul as depending on the Old Testament.<sup>2</sup> But though there is this conception of a written Testament, and though the conception of a New Testament was logically prior to any collection of writings, and may have been at work unconsciously, it is plain from Clement's treatment of other works that the conception was not consciously realised nor logically developed.

The extensive use of writings not regarded as canonical is one of the most pronounced features in the works of Clement. Of some a mere mention must suffice. The Book of Enoch is quoted as the work of Enoch, and an allusion to the same passage is found elsewhere.<sup>3</sup> In view of the precedent in the Epistle of St Jude, this is in no way surprising.<sup>4</sup> The Apocalypse of Elias is quoted without reference as Scripture.<sup>5</sup> There is a probable reference to "The Acts of Paul,"<sup>6</sup> and to "The Acts of John."<sup>7</sup> The limited use of such as compared with the "Acts of the Apostles" would seem to indicate that he had no direct knowledge of them, or that he regarded them as relatively unimportant. One passage seems to be taken from "The Apocalypse of Zephaniah."<sup>8</sup> There are two references by name to "The Traditions of Matthias," and another passage with the name of Matthew only.<sup>9</sup> Some have identified this work with the "Gospel according to Matthew," to which Origen makes allusion,<sup>10</sup> but so far as can be gathered from

<sup>1</sup> Str., iii. 10<sup>71</sup>. Cf. v. 13<sup>85</sup>; vii. 16<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ec. Pr., 53; Str., i. 17<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Prot., x. 94.

<sup>7</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 210.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., ii. 9<sup>45</sup>; vii. 13<sup>82</sup>; iii. 4<sup>26</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 21<sup>134</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Jude v. 14.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vi. 5<sup>43</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Str., v. 11<sup>77</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Hom. in Luc. i.

Clement's use of it, it contained not sayings of Jesus but of Matthew the Apostle.<sup>1</sup>

The most important questions arise in connection with his use of the Apocryphal Gospels, the Didache, the First Epistle of Clement of Rome, the Epistle of Barnabas, the Pastor of Hermas, the Apocalypse of Peter, and the Preaching of Peter.

Two Apocryphal Gospels, the Gospel according to the Egyptians and the Gospel according to the Hebrews, are mentioned by name. In speaking of the first-mentioned he says: "In the first place, we have not the saying in the Four Gospels handed down to us but in the Gospel according to the Egyptians."<sup>2</sup> Apparently, therefore, Clement does not recognise the authority of any Gospel other than the canonical four; and we might have expected that that would have ended the discussion, and that his use of it was only to be regarded as an "archaism."<sup>3</sup> But the matter is not quite so simple as it seems. For on the first occasion on which he refers to the passage, he explains the answer of the Lord in allegorical fashion; and on the second occasion he accuses the heretics who had adduced the passage of not noting the context, and explains the addition which they had omitted allegorically. No doubt this might be interpreted as meaning that he was willing to discuss the matter from their standpoint, or on the assumption of their premises. But it is much more probable that it was to him a genuine saying of the Lord. He distinguishes in effect between the validity to be ascribed to the particular saying itself and the ecclesiastical authority of the book in which the saying is recorded. Another saying of the Lord may be taken from this Gospel.<sup>4</sup>

The "Gospel according to the Hebrews" is mentioned

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix G.

<sup>2</sup> Str., iii. 13<sup>93</sup>; cf. Q. D., 5.

<sup>3</sup> Leiboldt, p. 159.

<sup>4</sup> Str., iii. 15<sup>97</sup>. So Stählin. See Appendix G.

by name, and a saying is quoted with the formula, "It is written in the Gospel according to the Hebrews."<sup>1</sup> There it is classed as parallel to a thought in the 'Theætetus' of Plato, and in the 'Traditions of Matthias.' The same saying is adduced without reference,<sup>2</sup> the context, however, suggesting that he regarded it as authoritative. Clement seems to have regarded the saying as a genuine saying of the Lord, though he does not expressly say so, and does not even clearly indicate that it is such; but, as in the case of the "Gospel according to the Egyptians," this does not imply that he recognised the canonical authority of the whole book. Individual sayings are quoted with ἡ γραφή and λέγει ὁ σωτήρ,<sup>3</sup> which may have come either from oral tradition or some non-canonical Gospel; but so far as they are not explained on the principle just suggested, they may be due to a slip of memory, or may be regarded as the survival of the influence of an earlier period, when he had not yet definitely formulated a distinction between what was canonical and what was not. There is no saying quoted with the phrase "In the Gospel" that can be definitely assigned to any non-canonical Gospel.

Though relative frequency of quotation does not furnish an absolute criterion of relative value, it has a certain force. While the Gospel of St Matthew is quoted or referred to from three to four hundred times, and there are references to some passage in every chapter of the Gospel of St Luke, and to all but the ninth chapter in the Gospel of St John, there is only one quotation, twice repeated from the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," and two or three, dealing with the same incident, from the "Gospel according to the Egyptians." If Clement or his antagonists had put any non-canonical Gospel in the same

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 9<sup>45</sup>. See Appendix G.

<sup>2</sup> Str., v. 14<sup>96</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> See Appendix G.



category as the canonical Gospels, it is inconceivable that the references to them should have been so few. It is a proof that the non-canonical Gospels stood in a purely external relation to his inner development, and had contributed little or nothing to it. In any case, it shows that in the non-canonical Gospels there was little that was not found in the canonical Gospels, and that that little was not of much value.

The "Didache" was familiar to Clement. This is proved by the form in which he quotes the Decalogue.<sup>1</sup> It is often said that the "Didache" is quoted by Clement as *ἡ γραφή*. From the previous sentence to that in which the term is used it is more probable that the reference is to John x. 8.<sup>2</sup> The "Didache" is, however, quoted in the next sentence with *φησί*.<sup>3</sup>

If we apply to the Epistles of Clement of Rome and Barnabas the same criteria which we have applied to the Pauline Epistles, we find the results to be as follows. The Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians is quoted by name, and as the work of Clement.<sup>4</sup> It is nowhere quoted as *ἡ γραφή*. It is quoted with *γέγραπται* with the Epistle to the Corinthians by name,<sup>5</sup> and in one case as the "Epistle of the Romans to the Corinthians."<sup>6</sup> It is quoted with *φησί*,<sup>7</sup> though in one case the subject may be Clement of Rome himself.<sup>8</sup> In the series of quotations from the Epistle of Clement in Strom. iv.,<sup>9</sup> he is designated as the apostle Clement. He is not named with any such honorific epithets as are attached to the name of Paul. It is doubtful whether Clement could have regarded as Scripture in the fullest sense, or as on a level with the

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>89</sup>; Str., iii. 4<sup>36</sup>. *οὐ παιδοφθορήσεις*.

<sup>2</sup> Str., i. 20<sup>100</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib.; Did., iii. 5.

<sup>4</sup> Str., i. 7<sup>38</sup>; iv. 17<sup>105</sup>; vi. 8<sup>65</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 17<sup>110</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., v. 12<sup>80</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iv. 17<sup>108</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., iv. 18<sup>111</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., iv. 17.

Pauline Epistles, a letter in which he conceived of the writer as the spokesman of a church; but it is certainly a writing which he treats with great respect, and it was probably regarded by him as authoritative.

The question as to the Epistle of Barnabas is more complicated. One passage is quoted with *φησί*.<sup>1</sup> Barnabas is designated as the Apostle<sup>2</sup> or apostolic,<sup>3</sup> as "one of the Seventy and a fellow-worker with Paul,"<sup>4</sup> as "one who proclaimed the Gospel along with the Apostle,"<sup>5</sup> as "one of the Seventy who received gnosis from the Apostles."<sup>6</sup> Sometimes Clement quotes or appropriates the fanciful interpretations of the Old Testament which are characteristic of Barnabas.<sup>7</sup> The evidence in favour of its canonicity in his eyes seems so far cogent. But there is evidence of a contrary kind. When quoting the exposition of the First Psalm by Barnabas, he quotes other expositions with no indication that that of Barnabas stood on a different platform from the others, and, apparently, with a preference for another than that of Barnabas.<sup>8</sup> From this attitude of his two opposite conclusions may be drawn. We may say with Leipoldt that to the consciousness of Clement there was no clear distinction between Scripture and valuable historical sources, and that his attitude to a "work which he certainly regarded as canonical" shows that his "corpus ecclesiasticum" was not a fixed quantity.<sup>9</sup> Or, we may hold that a work whose authority is not unquestionably accepted by him cannot have had in his eyes canonical authority. He never dreams, for example, of differing from St Paul, or St Peter, or St John, but is satisfied with expounding them. If that be so, the designation "the

<sup>1</sup> Pæd., iii. 12<sup>90</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Str., ii. 6<sup>81</sup>; ii. 7<sup>35</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., ii. 20<sup>116</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., v. 10<sup>63</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Stäh., vol. iii. p. 199.

<sup>7</sup> Pæd., iii. 11<sup>75</sup>; Str., v. 8<sup>52</sup>; vi. 11<sup>84</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Str., ii. 15<sup>68</sup>.

<sup>9</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 234.

apostle" cannot of itself in that case involve authority; and the phrases that are attached to his name only indicate that he was entitled to such deference as might be awarded to a fellow-worker of Paul. The citation with *φησί* might, then, be regarded as a slip of memory. This gains a measure of support in the fact that on the only other occasion of its use the same passage is attached to a passage in the book of Isaiah.<sup>1</sup> Further doubt as to the position of Barnabas is suggested by the circumstance that in the *Pædagogus* he seems to be giving a direct contradiction to a statement of his. At any rate, he emphatically contradicts a hypothesis which from his knowledge of the immediate context in the Epistle of Barnabas he could not fail to know was held by Barnabas.<sup>2</sup> This seems decisive. The work of Barnabas, accordingly, was to him that of one who was to be honoured as a fellow-worker of Paul, and with whom as an exponent of the Old Testament he had himself some intellectual sympathy, rather than an authoritative Scripture.

No doubt attaches to his recognition of the canonical authority of the 'Pastor' of Hermas. It is regarded as what it claims to be, the record of a revelation granted to Hermas in a vision.<sup>3</sup> It is quoted under the name of 'The Shepherd.'<sup>4</sup> A saying of Hermas is commented on as if it were a passage of Scripture.<sup>5</sup> It is quoted in support of his dogmatic thesis that the apostles preached the Gospel to the heathen in Hades.<sup>6</sup> It is quoted on the relation of the Christian virtues to one another,<sup>7</sup> and

<sup>1</sup> Str., ii. 18<sup>79</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> *Pæd.*, ii. 10<sup>86</sup>: οὐκ οὐν οὐδὲ τὴν ναῖαν μεταβάλλειν τὴν φύσιν πιστευτέον ποτέ.  
*Barn.*, x.: τοῦτο γὰρ τὸ ζῶν παρ' ἐνιαυτὸν ἀλλάσσει τὴν φύσιν.

<sup>3</sup> Str., i. 29<sup>181</sup>; ii. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 12<sup>55</sup>; iv. 9<sup>74</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> *Ec. Pr.*, 45.

<sup>6</sup> Str., vi. 6<sup>46</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 12<sup>55</sup>.

also alongside of a saying of St Paul and a saying of the Lord.<sup>1</sup> It is quoted in support of his contention as to the difference between the letter and the inner meaning,<sup>2</sup> and as to the utterance of some truths by the false prophets.<sup>3</sup>

Clement regards as authoritative and authentic all the literature that circulated in the name of Peter. Of these the most important are 'The Apocalypse of Peter' and 'The Preaching of Peter.' According to Eusebius, Clement commented on the 'Apocalypse of Peter' in his 'Hypotyposes';<sup>4</sup> and the passages in the 'Selections from the Prophets' support this statement.<sup>5</sup> The fact that the teaching of 'The Apocalypse of Peter,' in the fragmentary form in which we now have it, is so entirely out of harmony with Clement's own teaching on punishment for sin, may mean that the document has undergone many interpolations. If not, that he should have accepted a document as authoritative which was so foreign to his own way of thinking, proves how dominant in his mind was the conception of apostolic authority as a guarantee of inspiration. It must have required all his allegorical subtlety to explain away its details.

'The Preaching of Peter' is quoted by name, and as the work of Peter.<sup>6</sup> It is quoted in support of his view that the souls in Hades must have had an opportunity of hearing the Gospel.<sup>7</sup> It is quoted with great regard for the letter of the passage in support of his contention that the Greeks had an imperfect knowledge and worship of the true God,<sup>8</sup> that Greeks, Jews, and Christians all knew God, though in a

<sup>1</sup> Str., iv. 9<sup>74</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 15<sup>131</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., i. 17<sup>85</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> H. E., vi. 14.

<sup>5</sup> Ec. Pr., 41, 48, 49. From a comparison of Fragments 41 and 48 it is plain that he regarded it as Scripture and commented on it as such.

<sup>6</sup> Str., i. 29<sup>182</sup>; ii. 15<sup>68</sup>; Ec. Pr., 58.

<sup>7</sup> Str., vi. 6<sup>48</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 5<sup>39, 40</sup>.

different way,<sup>1</sup> and that God gave philosophy to the Greeks.<sup>2</sup> A saying from it is quoted and put alongside one assigned to the Apostle Paul.<sup>3</sup> It is also quoted in support of his view as to parabolic teaching and the interpretation of the Old Testament.<sup>4</sup> Though it is not quoted with any of the ordinary forms that imply inspiration or authority, there can be no doubt from his method of use that he regarded it as a canonical Scripture, simply because, as in the case of the Apocalypse, he regarded it as the work of the Apostle Peter.

The conception of a canon logically involved that of a closed canon and a clear recognition of the principles on which it should be formed; but the use of apocryphal books by Clement shows that in Alexandria the conception was yet in flux, that the question of an authoritative record had not yet been definitely settled, nor the principles of its formation formulated. All the books of the New Testament, with the exceptions already noted, were known to Clement and used by him as authoritative; but alongside of these, some as equal in rank, some as lower in rank, were placed other productions believed to belong to the apostolic or sub-apostolic age. Clement witnesses to the importance that was attached in the formation of the canon to apostolic authorship or apostolic sanction, and to the part played by the Catholic Church, as claiming to be the custodian of apostolic tradition, in determining what was, or was not, cognate to itself and its teaching. In estimating his position as a representative man, we have to keep in mind his strong individualism, his belief in the universality of inspiration, his genial outlook on Greek literature, and the influ-

<sup>1</sup> Str., vi. 5<sup>41</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., vi. 5<sup>42</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 5<sup>43</sup>. The saying is from 'The Acts of Paul.'

<sup>4</sup> Str., vi. 15<sup>127, 128</sup>.



ence which these exercised. But as a counterpoise to this have to be placed his official position and his extensive journeyings in pursuit of Christian truth, which entitle him to be regarded as a representative not of Alexandria merely, but of the Church in widely scattered districts of the Roman Empire.



## APPENDIX A.

### ANALYSIS OF THE PROTREPTICUS.

IN Greek song and story we read how Amphion built the walls of Thebes by his skill in music, how Orpheus tamed the wild beasts, how the grasshopper took the place of the broken string on the lyre of Eunomus. But my Eunomus sings not in Phrygian or in Lydian measure, but He sings the new song—"a song to lull all pain and error, and bring forgetfulness of every sorrow." Orpheus and Amphion corrupted the life of man under the mask of music; my Singer has destroyed the bitter slavery of the demons, and by the might of His song such as were but "stones" and "beasts" become men.<sup>1</sup> This song has brought the whole universe into harmony. The Word of God—the New Song—is the philanthropic instrument of God. Our salvation is His only harvest from us. Though designated by me the New Song, "He was before the morning-star"; He "was in the beginning." The source of our being and our wellbeing, the Word, by whom all things were created, has appeared as our teacher to bestow on us eternal life. His pity is an eternal pity. Like those who bind captives to the dead, the wicked serpent binds living men to dead idols. He who now exhorts men to salvation is He who once spoke to men through the thorn and the cloud, and by the pillar of fire terrified men. Then He spoke by the mouth of the prophets; now, the Lord Himself, the compassionate God, speaks clearly to men. The Word of God became man that thou mightst learn from man how man may become God. Be very earnest in regard to Christ. He is the door to a true conception of God: only through Him is God truly discerned by the initiated.<sup>2</sup> Do not concern

1 i. 1.4.

2 i. 5.10.

yourselves with oracles and other insane forms of divination, artifices of unbelieving men. The mysteries are a seed of wickedness and corruption. What you are not ashamed to worship I shall not refrain from describing. What of Aphrodite, her origin and rites? Are not the mysteries of Demeter an insult and a jest? What of Zeus and his intercourse with Persephone? What of the inhuman mysteries of Dionysus and the savagery of the Titans? The mysteries of the Cabiri are but murders and funerals.<sup>1</sup> Their mysteries are mysteries of atheists. Are they not atheists who do not recognise the truly existent God, and call those gods who are nothing but a name? Strange that men like Euhemerus, who saw clearly the errors of men in regard to God, should have been called atheists. The extreme points of atheism are ignorance and superstition. By it the primal fellowship between God and man was darkened, and man, the child of God, has been turned aside from the heavenly way of life. Some have deified the stars and worshipped the sun. Some have made gods of the fruits of the earth. Some have deified retribution and calamities. Some have made idols of the passions. Some deify incidents that befall men. Some manufacture gods and speak of their birth. Some attribute the beneficence of God Himself to "saviours," as Heracles and Asclepius.<sup>2</sup> The things recorded of your gods really happened to dissolute men. Their fatherland, their crafts, their way of life, their graves, prove that they were but men. Listen to the loves of your gods—the monstrous legends of their dissoluteness, their wounds and their battles, their laughter and tears. The games, Isthmian, Olympian, and the like, were primarily gatherings at tombs. The mysteries seem to have been held in honour of the dead. Your gods ate and drank, sometimes unwittingly of the flesh of men like Zeus. The myths about Zeus are antiquated; he is dead and buried in Crete.<sup>3</sup> Your Zeus, your Apollo, have different names and characteristics. Better than such worship the Egyptian worship of creatures without reason; they at least are not unnatural in their lusts. You scoff at the Egyptians; but do not some of you worship the stork, the weasel, and the ant? The impure demons are no "guardians of articulate-speaking men." Do they guard you from committing sin, as, of course, they have had no experience of it?

<sup>1</sup> ii. 11, 12.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 23-26.

<sup>3</sup> ii. 27, 27.

Like gluttons they are enticed by the smoke, "the drink-offering and burnt-offering which is their due."<sup>1</sup> Those gods of yours are inhuman and enjoy human sacrifices. A place does not transform a murder into a sacrifice. To sacrifice a man to Artemis is as much a murder as if done in passion or from lust of gold. You turn aside from a serpent, why not from man-hating demons? Can truth or profit be got from the wicked? Your temples are but tombs. Yourselves dead, you have put your trust in the dead; "your heads are shrouded in night."<sup>2</sup>

Statues are the work of men. As art flourished, error grew. The statue of Zeus at Olympias was fashioned by Pheidias. Other statues are the work of other sculptors, as the Egyptian Serapis—the so-called "made without hands." Well says the philosopher Heraclitus, "and they pray to their images as if one were to talk with houses." Statues are less worthy of honour than the meanest living creatures; these possess life and growth, though their senses be undeveloped. Your image is but dead matter; we have an intellectual image of the only true God. Men plunder idols; birds defile them. Fire and earthquake have no fear of images.<sup>3</sup> Kings of old, even private persons, claimed for themselves divine honours. How can phantoms and demons be gods? Why forsake heaven and honour earth? Matter needs art to fashion it; God is in need of nothing. I dare not intrust the hopes of my soul to soulless things. You have been deceived by art—though apes are not deceived by pictures in wax or clay. You have peopled the woods, fields, rivers, and seas with a mob of satyrs, nymphs, nereids, and nereids. You have made a stage of heaven. We carry about in the living statue—man—the image of God, an image which is our guest. We are "not from beneath."<sup>4</sup> You have pictures of wantonness everywhere. We are forbidden to practise an art that deceives. The sculptor has a better claim to divine honours than the statue which he moulded. Take heed lest you become as void of perception as statues. What folly to worship the work of God, sun, moon, and stars, and not God Himself. The universe sprang into being by a mere act of His will. Do not deify the cosmos, but seek for its Creator. In the Divine wisdom is a holy asylum.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> ii. 38, 41.<sup>2</sup> iii. 42, 45.<sup>3</sup> iv. 46, 53.<sup>4</sup> iv. 54, 59.<sup>5</sup> iv. 60, 63.



Turn to philosophers. They have a dream of the truth. Think of the divergent views of Thales, Anaximenes, and Parmenides, &c., with regard to the first principles. The Stoics utterly disgrace philosophy by representing Divinity as permeating all matter. Epicurus, utterly impious, thinks that God cares for nothing.<sup>1</sup>

You fashion gods out of winds or air or fire or earth. I yearn for the Lord of the fire, the Creator of the cosmos, for God Himself, not for His works. In his conception of God Plato grazed the surface of the truth. He speaks truth as in a riddle. For true laws and opinions concerning God he is indebted to the Hebrews. By the inspiration of God not Plato alone, but many philosophers like Antisthenes and Cleanthes, have declared that God is the only true God.<sup>2</sup>

The witness of poetry is as that of philosophy. Take Aratus or Hesiod or Euripides. They have glimmerings of the truth, but only glimmerings; for to speak of God apart from the word of truth is to walk without feet.<sup>3</sup>

Turn to the Prophetic Scriptures. They are a short road to salvation. Mark how Jeremiah, Isaiah, the whole prophetic choir, set forth God. Listen to the divine Moses, the blessed psalmist, the holy apostle of the Lord.<sup>4</sup> Thousands of Scriptures might be adduced. As a gentle Father, not as a master, God admonishes His children. You must become little children. The church of the first-born is formed of many good children. Be not slaves too proud to become sons. Do not prefer bondage to freedom, death to salvation. Scripture sets before us the threatening, the exhortation, the reward. The Lord exhorts all men to a full knowledge of the truth. If eternal salvation were for sale, the whole wealth of Pactolus would not suffice to purchase it; but with love and faith you can buy it. God alone can teach man and make him like to God.<sup>5</sup> The apostle calls the sacred books God-inspired. No exhortation has such force as that of the Lord Himself, whose sole work is the salvation of men. He says, "The kingdom of heaven is at hand"; and the apostle interprets that divine voice. Faith will introduce you, experience will teach you, the Scriptures will train you. The Word shines for all men. "Let us who are many hasten to be gathered together into the one love. Let us follow

<sup>1</sup> v. 64, 66.<sup>2</sup> vi. 67, 72.<sup>3</sup> vii. 73, 76.<sup>4</sup> vii. 77, 81.<sup>5</sup> ix. 82, 86.

after oneness, seeking out the good Monad," that we may come to rest in the one truth, saying, "Abba, Father."<sup>1</sup>

"It is not reasonable," you say, "to subvert the customs handed down to us from our fathers." Why not, then, use the milk of infancy? Why not slobber as we did when children? Abhorrent to piety is this insane custom. But for it you would never have rejected God's greatest boon to the race of men. Superstition destroys, piety saves.<sup>2</sup> Look to those who serve the idols—their filthy hair, their ragged raiment, their nails like wild beasts' claws. They seem to be mourning for their gods, not to be worshipping them. Why not look up to the Lord of the universe? Monstrous that you, who are His absolute property, should become the slaves of another master. Let us pass from ignorance to knowledge, from unrighteousness to righteousness, from godlessness to God. Our loving Father never ceases to admonish or save. Why not prefer life to death?<sup>3</sup> By your obsession with ancestral customs you keep off the truth. Let us fight in the stadium of truth, with the Holy Word as umpire, and the Lord of the universe as presiding in the contest. The prize is immortality. Heed not the loafers in the market-place and their harangues. Heed not the image-makers who have had the audacity to make gods of men. No artist, great or mean, ever formed a living image. Only the Creator of the universe has formed a living image—man. Statues are but earthly images of the visible and earth-born man.<sup>4</sup> As a man, seek out the Creator. As a son, acknowledge thy Father. By nature man is formed for intercourse with God. Piety is his peculiar prerogative—a sufficient viaticum for eternity. Till the fields, if you will, but, as you till, know God. Sail, if fond of seamanship, but invoke the heavenly pilot. If knowledge has come to you when soldiering, listen to the general who commands what is right.<sup>5</sup> Awake out of your drunken stupor. Why love the darkness? Neither halo, nor iris, nor sun, nor moon, nor punishment, nor destiny, nor sleep, nor death, is a god. Only one God truly exists. "The earth is the Lord's." Why ignore the owner?<sup>6</sup> Are stones and birds sacred, but not men? Wretched men to suppose that God speaks through the croaking of a raven or the chattering of a jackdaw, but not

<sup>1</sup> ix. 87, 88.

<sup>4</sup> x. 96, 98.

<sup>2</sup> x. 89, 90.

<sup>5</sup> x. 99, 100.

<sup>3</sup> x. 91, 95.

<sup>6</sup> x. 102, 103.

through the articulate speech of men. To be deprived of spiritual vision and to be deaf to divine instruction is of all things the most pitiable. Yet nothing can hinder a man who is determined to know God. Receive, then, the gentle word, and spit out deleterious poison. "Believe, O man, Him who is man and God. Believe Him who suffered and is adored. Believe the living God, whom to find is to possess life."<sup>1</sup> More blessed are the wild beasts than men in their errors. Fishes are not superstitious, birds are not idolaters. Gain knowledge of God, if even at the end of life. Let heaven be thy fatherland, and God thy lawgiver. Better the bitter drug of truth than the sweet of custom. Cast aside the playthings of childhood.<sup>2</sup> The Son—the Word—took the mask of a man and acted the drama of human salvation. The universe has been flooded with His benefits.<sup>3</sup>

Regard His beneficence. Man, the child of God, fell under the power of the serpent—that is, pleasure. The Lord overcame the serpent; and he who lost paradise receives heaven as his due.<sup>4</sup> With the coming of the Word from above, recourse to the men of Athens or Ionia is superfluous. The true wisdom, only dimly guessed at by the highest philosophers, we have apprehended. The Word gives clear vision to the darkened mind. Let us admit the light, that we may admit God. Let us remove the ignorance which like a mist obstructs the vision, and contemplate the God who truly exists. The Sun of righteousness has changed sunset into sunrise. By heavenly teaching He has made man as God.

Let us give to God the guerdon of a thankful heart and obedience. Those who put their trust in jugglers receive amulets that claim "saving" power; why not rather take for an amulet the Heavenly One Himself—the "Saving" Word? Let the light shine in the heart.<sup>5</sup> God sent the Good Shepherd to save the flock of men. He proclaims good news to the obedient, judgment to the disobedient. He blows the trumpet of the Gospel, and gathers the soldiers of peace. With His armoury we are prepared for battle with the evil one. Better to become at once the servant of the best of beings, and by holy service to imitate Him. I exhort you to be saved. Christ truly bestows life upon you. He banishes death, and makes man the temple and dwelling-place of

<sup>1</sup> x. 104, 106.<sup>2</sup> x. 107, 109.<sup>3</sup> x. 110.<sup>4</sup> xi. 111, 112.<sup>5</sup> xi. 113, 115.

God. Offer thyself to Him, that thou mayst be not the work only, but also the grace of God.<sup>1</sup>

Custom is as dangerous as the Charybdis or the mythic sirens. But if bound to the cross, thou art saved from destruction: the Word of God will be thy pilot, the Holy Spirit will bring thee to anchorage in heaven, where thou shalt have the vision of God and be instructed in the holy mysteries. Come, O frenzied one, to the true Cithæron, where no Maenades hold revel, but the daughters of God celebrate the sacred rites of the Word. Come, O blind Teiresias, and be led to the truth. Thou didst not see Thebes, but thou shalt see the heavens.<sup>2</sup> "Hear," says Jesus, "ye men endowed with reason, barbarians and Greeks alike. To you alone of mortals I grant immortality. I confer on you the word, the knowledge of God, my perfect self. I seek that ye may be like unto me."<sup>3</sup> Let us run to Him, let us love Christ, the good charioteer of men. Let us acquire the greatest of all things—God and life. Let us long for the Word of Truth Himself. Let us not value least the things which are worth most. Not unreasonably the philosophers call ignorance a form of madness. Can we doubt whether it is better to be sane than insane? All things are God's. If man be beloved by God, all things are His. The pious alone is rich, and wise, and of noble birth. He is the "image" of God as well as the "likeness." He is like unto God. Choose judgment or grace. Surely life is not to be compared to destruction.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> xi. 116, 117.

<sup>2</sup> xii. 118, 119.

<sup>3</sup> xii. 120.

<sup>4</sup> xii. 121, 123.

## APPENDIX B.

## ANALYSIS OF THE PÆDAGOGUS.

BOOK I. Corresponding to the actions, habits, and passions of men, the Word discharges a threefold function. As Tutor, His aim is preliminary, not scientific, to train the soul to a virtuous, not a scientific, life. He diets our sick souls. By a series of stages leading to salvation, the Word first exhorts, then trains, and finally teaches.<sup>1</sup> Our Tutor is like God, His Father, sinless, free from passion. We need first to be delivered from passions, and then from proclivity to sin. Not to sin is the prerogative of God. To be free from deliberate transgression is the mark of the wise man. To avoid involuntary offences belongs to the well-instructed. Our Tutor heals body and soul. Man is His child, His greatest work.<sup>2</sup> The Lord ministers all good to men. Man, who was made by God, is loved by Him, and ought to return His love and live according to His will. This applies to women as well as to men. For men and women have a common grace and a common salvation, a common love and training.<sup>3</sup>

Pædagogy is the training of children. As is proved by the Lord in the Gospel, we are the children of the Tutor. The same is shown by the designations, "lambs," "sucking-calves," "doves," "chickens," and "young colts." We are "little children," not because we are at the age of unreasoning or devoid of learning, but because we are simple and guileless, as those who know the only God as their Father. As infants we are easily wrought to goodness, and, being a new people, are not perverse like the ancient race. Because the children are the simple ones we glory in the name. All young and feeble things meet with kindness. So God

<sup>1</sup> i. 1<sup>1-3</sup>.<sup>2</sup> i. 2<sup>1-6</sup>.<sup>3</sup> i. 3-4<sup>7-11</sup>.



the Father of the universe treats with tenderness the children whom He has begotten and adopted. The Spirit calls the Lord Himself a child—the great God and the perfect child.<sup>1</sup> We are not, then, called children, because our education is childish or imperfect in character. When regenerated we at once attain perfection; illuminated, we know God. We are already “light in the Lord,” though there is a difference between the earnest and the attainment of the promise. Yet faith is perfect and complete in itself. It is the one universal salvation of men, and equality of fellowship with the righteous and loving God is the same to all. In the same Word there are not gnostics and psychical men. The Master calls us “babes.” We are to be as new-born babes of God. Those under the Law are children; those under faith are men and sons. Compared with the Law, childhood in Christ is full growth.<sup>2</sup> When the apostle said, “I have fed you with milk,” he did not mean that which was childish and imperfect. For the milk is to be regarded not as something different from the meat, but the same in essence. Blood is a kind of liquid flesh, and milk is the sweeter and finer part of blood. The essence of the human body is blood. Milk is a product of the blood. The affinity of milk for water, its mixture with honey and sweet wine, the butter made from milk, may all symbolise spiritual truths.<sup>3</sup>

Our Tutor, Jesus, calls Himself the good shepherd. As such He leads the children to salvation. He has said—“I am your Teacher.” Divine instruction is a right directing of truth with a view to the vision of God, and is a possession for ever; whereas human instruction fails to mould moral character. Once He said, “Thou shalt fear”; to us He says, “Thou shalt love.” Moses predicted His name and office. By Prophecy He is invested with a rod.<sup>4</sup>

“But can He be good who uses the rod?” To say so is to forget that in love for us the Lord became man. From experience of suffering He knows the weakness of the flesh. God hates nothing, nor does His Word. He loves, and man most of all. “If so, how does He punish?” Punishment cures the passions; reproof acts as a surgeon. Censure is a mark of goodwill, not

<sup>1</sup> i. 5<sup>12, 24</sup>.<sup>2</sup> i. 6<sup>25, 34</sup>.<sup>3</sup> i. 6<sup>35, 52</sup>.<sup>4</sup> i. 7<sup>53, 61</sup>.

of hatred. He adjusts His reproof to the distinctive habits of each. He cuts off the impulse to sin by declaring its consequences. He punishes, but without feeling of revenge. God is good and just. His Son, the saving Word, may wound in a saving fashion the soul that has grown apathetic, and may do so by manifest methods. The affection of anger, if such a word may be used, is inspired by love to man. The Incarnation is a proof.<sup>1</sup> The Tutor of humanity has devoted Himself to the saving of the "babes." The prophetic testimony shows the varied manner of His loving training. He employs all forms of admonition, reproof, and censure. His rhetorical use of fear is a spring of salvation. He leads to self-control those who were being carried away to dissoluteness. When He threatens more harshly, it is to draw us back from rushing to death. The goodness that always shows kindness is disregarded; that which reminds us by the loving fear of righteousness is held in reverence. There is a fear which is associated with reverence, and a fear which is associated with hatred, such as slaves feel towards a harsh master. There is an absolute difference between voluntary and forced piety. The physician is not the cause of the fever, he only demonstrates its existence. So God only shows the sins which are in the man who is sick of soul. The same love that caused God to make His sun to shine caused Him to send down His own Son.<sup>2</sup> As by fault-finding He seeks to induce repentance and dissuade us from sinning, so He employs persuasion and praise. He appeals to the past, the present, and the future. By all forms of cure He calls mankind to salvation. He invites us to the possession of blessings. He calls men of understanding to the love of knowledge. He brings the light of truth to the erring. Praise as well as blame is an essential medicine. Some men need to be beaten out like iron; others grow by praise. Such is His method of instruction. By the Law and the Prophets He trained men who were hard to bridle. The Law was "a tutor to bring us to Christ." Our Tutor is Jesus, the Word of God; to Him God has intrusted us. He is worthy of trust, because He is adorned with three of the fairest graces—knowledge, benevolence, and boldness of utterance.<sup>3</sup>

The Tutor delineates for us the ideal of the true life and trains men in Christ. He formed man out of the dust, and transforms

<sup>1</sup> i. 8<sup>82,74</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> i. 9<sup>75,88</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> i. 10-11<sup>89,97</sup>.

him into a holy and heavenly being. From the tutorship of Christ a noble temper springs; and in those who have been taught the scope of its energy the whole life is conspicuous for gravity.<sup>1</sup> As everything contrary to right reason is sin, he who transgresses is not rational. Christian action is an energy of the rational soul which is perfected through the body, the soul's consort and fellow-combatant, in accordance with a right judgment and desire of the truth.<sup>2</sup>

Book II. What should the Christian be in his whole life? How is he to deal with his body? We must purify the eye of the soul and sanctify the flesh itself. We are to eat that we may live. Food is to be simple and artless, correspondent to truth, befitting simple and artless children, sufficient for life—not for luxury. Such food conduces to health and strength; variety of foods is a source of disease. Men sweep the world as with a drag-net in pursuit of dainties. It has driven them to invent many forms of dessert. We who seek the heavenly food must master the belly. Let the supper be plain and economical, suitable for sleepless vigil. The natural use of food is indifferent. But it is not in accordance with reason for those who share in divine food to take part in the tables of demons. We must be lords over meats, not their slaves. We should partake of few and necessary things.<sup>3</sup> We are to take part in social gatherings in a harmless and unsated way, to eat with thanksgiving, to win our fellow-guests by self-control. But to eat flesh or drink wine is not to sin. Only we are to partake temperately, not greedily, and not violate decorum in eating. The Lord fed the disciples with loaves and baked fishes—a pattern of simple food. It is lawful to partake of all things; but “all things are not expedient.” It is not good to use all things, nor always. In the sphere of a temperate simplicity there is ample variety. Boiled flesh is to be preferred to roasted. Dried fruits and honey may be partaken of. The apostle Matthew and John the Baptist ate the simplest fare, though Peter was taught that the use of food was a thing indifferent. The Tutor by Moses enforced frugality on the Jews by prohibiting the use of many things.<sup>4</sup> As for food, so with drink. The natural drink for the thirsty man is water.

<sup>1</sup> i. 12<sup>98-100</sup>.<sup>2</sup> i. 13<sup>101, 108</sup>.<sup>3</sup> ii. 1<sup>1-9</sup>.<sup>4</sup> ii. 1<sup>10, 18</sup>.

Such the Lord supplied to the Hebrews. Boys and girls with fire in their blood should not have access to wine. To be heavy with wine is not compatible with interest in the things of God. The advanced in years may partake more freely; they can withstand the stormy surge of passions. But they must not drink to the point of shaking their reason. It is well to mix the wine with much water. Both are works of God. Reason should be a partner in the feast. The picture of the drunkard is at once ridiculous and pitiful. The divine wisdom despises such a life, if life it be. Christ made water into wine at the marriage, but He does not permit drunkenness. Wines are imported for jaded appetites. Why should not the wine of the country satiate desire? In drinking regard must be had to seemliness. The Lord partook of wine, but with decorum. At all times we must conduct ourselves in a decorous way, as in the presence of the Lord.<sup>1</sup>

Gold and silver vessels only deceive the vision. They provoke envy when they go beyond what is necessary. So with furniture in ebony and ivory. Such vulgar display is banished by the absolute authority of the Lord. "Sell what thou hast, and give to the poor." The Lord took His food in a homely bowl. He did not carry about a silver foot-bath from heaven. He made use, not senseless magnificence, His aim. In like manner all the possessions of the worshippers of the one God should show forth the symbols of the one beautiful life. Cheaper things are better than costly. For self-sufficiency only a few things are required.<sup>2</sup>

At social gatherings musical instruments provocative of lust or gluttony must be abandoned. The pipe and the flute are more appropriate to beasts than men. The harp or the lyre may be used without blame. We are to banish the liquid harmonies which by base artifices minister to ribaldry, and leave chromatic harmonies to bacchanalian songs.<sup>3</sup> Buffoons are to be banished from the Christian polity. We must not make a mock of speech, the most precious of all human possessions. It is lawful to be playful, but not to play the buffoon. We are to laugh, as in all things, in a temperate fashion. One should not be grim, but grave. We must not smile at what is disgraceful or painful. We are not to be always laughing, neither before our elders, nor before everybody,

<sup>1</sup> ii. 19, 34.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 3<sup>35, 39</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> ii. 4<sup>40, 44</sup>.

nor about everything.<sup>1</sup> From filthy speaking we must absolutely refrain. The divine Tutor invests us with temperate words for ear-guards. By forbidding the utterance of what is unseemly, the Tutor protects us in advance against licentiousness. Let jeering be far removed from us. It is opposed to the friendly feeling which is the end of a banquet. Young men and women are to be absent from such festive gatherings. Unmarried women are not to be present at a banquet of men. Men are not to indulge in any movements or actions suggestive of levity or greed. At a rare time elderly people may quiz children. If one has to sneeze or hiccup, let it be done as quietly as possible. In a word, that which is distinctive of the Christian is composure, tranquillity, stillness, repose.<sup>2</sup>

For Christians the use of crowns and ointments is not necessary. Perfumes and dyes should not stealthily slip into the city of truth. Let women savour of Christ, the truly royal ointment. Some sweet scents are salutary, and may be employed to stimulate sinking strength. We are to choose what is useful. Silly men who dye their hair only make it the grayer. Men of temperance are not to wear a crown of flowers at home. This is neither to enjoy the beauty nor the fragrance of flowers. For us, who have heard that the Word was crowned with a wreath of thorns, to bind our head with flowers would be a mockery of His passion.<sup>3</sup>

As for sleep. Costly rugs of all sorts are to be banished. To sleep on down, moreover, is hurtful to the digestion. Ivory which comes from a lifeless body is not lawful on beds. Yet it indicates vanity to make a point of sleeping "under a bull-hide," unless in an emergency. Let the bed be unadorned, with no elaborate carvings. Sleep is for recreation, not for enervation. We must sleep wakefully. We who have the wakeful Word indwelling in us should not sleep the whole night. Still less must we sleep by day. The soul needs no sleep, for it is "ever in motion."<sup>4</sup> \*

We are not to seek after costly clothing. The Lord enjoined, "Consider the lilies." If He takes away anxious care for food and clothing, what will He say of false hair, of the use of rouge and the like, and the base arts which deceive? Those devoted

<sup>1</sup> ii. 5<sup>45-48</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 6-7<sup>49-60</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> ii. 8<sup>61-76</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> ii. 9<sup>77-83</sup>.

\* Chapter 10<sup>83-102</sup> is taken up with the question of marriage. The main points are noted in Lecture V.



to the shadow of the beautiful, not to the beautiful itself, are to be banished from the truth. Clothes are only required for protection against cold or heat. Hence men and women should be clothed alike. As a concession, women may be allowed softer clothes, but not thin, nor of elaborate workmanship, nor decked with bright colours. Dyeing of clothes is to be rejected. Those who are white and genuine within should use white and simple raiment. Life should not be a parade. The Lord derided those who "lived in gorgeous apparel." Trailing garments indicate a bragging spirit. Beauty of body in women should not be a trap for men. They must not make themselves the cynosure of all eyes by using a purple veil. Why prefer what is rare and costly to what is accessible and cheap? Why seek with eagerness things that seem instead of realities?<sup>1</sup> In the matter of shoes women show great stupidity. Sandals with flowers of gold are really base. The mincing walk of many stamps the wantonness of their thoughts. Women may wear white shoes, except on a journey, and then they must use greased shoes with nails. As a rule, women should wear shoes; but a man may go barefoot. Jesus wore nothing elaborate in the way of shoes.<sup>2</sup>

To be astounded at green stones and things which are but the scum of the sea is childish. Women are very anxious about a little oyster, when it is in their power to adorn themselves with the sacred jewel, Jesus, who is called by Scripture a pearl. The stones in the Jerusalem that is above are to be interpreted symbolically. Women put forth the defence, "why may we not use what God has provided?"<sup>3</sup> Better surely to gain decorous friends than lifeless ornaments! Women should be beautiful within. The distinctive excellence of each plant or animal is that which marks its beauty. Only the beautiful is good. To apply things unsuitable to the body as if they were suitable, begets a habit of deceit. Golden necklaces and anklets are but fetters. Women who are tutored by Christ should adorn themselves not with gold but with the Word. If they are beautiful, nature suffices. Let not falsehood contend with truth. For women who serve Christ, it is fitting to embrace simplicity. The chains wrought in gold by God are

<sup>1</sup> ii. 10<sup>108, 115</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 10<sup>116, 117</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> For Clement's answer and discussion of the right use of wealth, see Lecture V.

modesty and temperance. To pierce the ears is contrary to nature. The best ornament for the ear is true instruction.<sup>1</sup>

Book III. To know oneself is to know God. To know God is to be made like unto Him, by well-doing, and by needing the fewest things possible. The man who has the Word for indweller does not embellish himself. He is the true beauty; for he is also God; he becomes God, for so God wills it. There is another beauty of men—love. "Love does not seek what is not her own." The truth calls that its own which is native to it, but the love of ornament seeks that which is foreign to the true self. "The Lord had no form or comeliness"; yet He exhibited the true beauty.<sup>2</sup> The soul is to be adorned with goodness. Women who beautify the outward appearance and leave waste that which is within are unconsciously adorning themselves after the fashion of the temples of the Egyptians—all gorgeous with the gleam of gold and silver without, in the inner shrine a cat or a crocodile. They destroy their own beauty by washes and dyes. They dishonour the Creator as if the beauty which He gave them was of no worth. Even heathen poets condemn them, how much more shall they be cast away by the Truth? Love of dainties and love of wine can be satiated, but love of finery is insatiable. Horses and birds rejoice in ornament which is their own by nature. Is it not monstrous that women should need a beauty, foreign, bought, and unreal? They have even invented mirrors for this manufactured shape of theirs. Esther, it is true, ransomed the people from massacre by her beauty. But, on the other hand, think of the Trojan war and the desolation which it produced, or of the transgression of the angels and their due reward.<sup>3</sup>

Even men pursue the disease of luxury. To dye the hair is to oppose God who alone "can make the hair white or black." To shave for the sake of beauty of appearance is womanly. The beard is the mark of the man and the symbol of his superior nature. Man should adorn his mind. The Lord wishes us to be naked of vulgarity, separated from sin, intent only on salvation.<sup>4</sup>

Women deserve censure for their great wealth of slaves. They have slaves to carry them everywhere, and associate with worthless

<sup>1</sup> ii. 12<sup>118, 120</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iii. 1<sup>1, 3</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> iii. 2<sup>4, 14</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> iii. 3<sup>15, 25</sup>.

creatures. They nurture parrots, but neglect the orphan and even old men with a reputation for temperance. Like sated fowls they scratch the dung of life.<sup>1</sup> Their baths, too, minister to self-indulgence, vulgarity, and immodesty. Men should be to women a noble pattern of truth. At home, in the streets, in solitude, and everywhere, they should exhibit reverence. If we are always conscious of the presence of God, we shall keep from stumbling.<sup>2</sup>

Wealth is to be partaken of rationally and imparted in a spirit of love. Masters only differ from slaves in that they have been brought up in a more sickly fashion and are feebler. The Christians alone are rich. If God denies nothing, all things belong to the pious man. The good man cannot be in straits so long as he keeps fast his confession towards God. Our Tutor gives to us the true riches.<sup>3</sup> Examples often turn the balance towards salvation. So the Tutor in His love by example dissuades from evil, and builds up others on a firm foundation with a view to endurance. Those who have not the power to receive sonship may be preserved from wantonness by fear.<sup>4</sup>

To touch again on baths. They are not to be used on the ground of pleasure. Nor must we bathe on all occasions, nor with the aid of an attendant, nor often in the day. Let due proportion be the standard.<sup>5</sup>

Gymnastic exercises within limits are good both for body and soul. Women are to exercise themselves in spinning, weaving, and cooking. Such exercise tends to sound health. Men may join in various games, or take a walk, or do some economic bye-work, such as using a hoe. In this is nothing ignoble. We are not to enter into athletic contests from a vain spirit of rivalry, but wrestle with composed strength and in the interests of health as befits men free in status. In everything and everywhere we are to be trained to a way of life harmonious and temperate. To be one's own servant, to watch by a sick-bed, to be of service to the impotent, to provide for one in want, is an exercise of righteousness. Fishing is permitted, though the better catch is to be "a fisher of men."<sup>6</sup>

Clothing should be simple and white; like the truth, it should be one, not varied. To men of light white is appropriate. Cloth-

<sup>1</sup> iii. 4 <sup>26,30</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> iii. 8 <sup>41,45</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iii. 5 <sup>31,33</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> iii. 9 <sup>46,48</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> iii. 6-7 <sup>34,40</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> iii. 10 <sup>49,52</sup>.

ing is an index to character. Let the raiment be in harmony with age, person, position, nature, calling. A gold finger-ring may be allowed, not for ornament but for use as a seal. Let the seals be a dove, or a fish, or a lyre, or an anchor—not some idol, nor a sword, nor a goblet.<sup>1</sup> As for the hair. Let the head be closely cropped, but let the chin be covered with hair. Women may dress their locks and bind up the hair simply with a plain pin; but there must be no meretricious braidings. False hair must be absolutely rejected. It is a most impious thing to put dead tresses on the skull. For on whom will the presbyter lay his hand? The hair of another, and therefore the head of another. This is to deceive men, disgrace the Lord, and dishonour the head. Nor is the hair to be dyed. Old age is worthy of trust, and should not be veiled. Women are not to besmear their faces with the juggling tricks of knavish art. Natural beauty is best attained by moderation; this produces health; and beauty is the free flower of health.<sup>2</sup> As for walking, we are to adopt a leisurely but not a loitering step. A noble man must have no unmanly disfigurement either in movements or habits. Men are not to waste their time in barbers' shops or taverns. Gambling with dice is to be prohibited. Nor will the Tutor bring us to the spectacles, the race-course, or the theatres. Such gatherings are the source of moral disorder. The cities in which sport is seriously pursued lack wisdom. For un pitying contests for glory are not sports, nor is the name to be given to the zealous pursuit of frivolities, and to the irrational ambitions and the senseless waste of money connected with them. "But," you say, "we do not all philosophise." Do you not then follow after life? How dost thou love God and thy neighbour, if thou dost not philosophise? To carry on worldly affairs in an orderly way according to the mind of God is not forbidden. Let the buyer or seller have only one price for his goods; if he does not obtain his price, he at least obtains the truth.<sup>3</sup> Men and women—the latter entirely veiled—are to go to church in seemly fashion, delighting in silence, pure in body, pure in heart, fit to pray to God. The whole life of the Christian should be such as they fashion themselves in the church. But some seem to change their manner with the place, and leave within the church what they have heard.

<sup>1</sup> iii. II 53, 60.<sup>2</sup> iii. II 61, 73.<sup>3</sup> iii. II 74, 78.

Let the kiss in church be the kiss of true love and holy. By the well-instructed the sight of women will be avoided. The chaste must not only be self-controlled, but beyond the range of censure. We must not only be trusty but appear worthy of trust.<sup>1</sup> Our dividing line in all things must be the cross. Let us nail ourselves to the truth. If some counsels seem harsh, they are designed to bring about the salvation which is the fruit of correction. So the Tutor sets forth bare injunctions, adapting them to the period of guidance, but entrusting the interpretation of them to the Teacher.<sup>2</sup> "Hear, O child, who art being rightly trained," says the Tutor, "the principal heads of salvation." Clement then quotes the all-embracing precept in the Gospel, Christ's summary of the commandments, and the decalogue. He gives practical counsels based on the Scripture on prayer, fasting, forbearance, love, civil government in various aspects, faith, servants, liberality, and the like. After numerous quotations from the teaching of the apostles, he concludes with a prayer to the Tutor.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> iii. 11<sup>79,83</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iii. 12<sup>84,86</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> iii. 12<sup>87,101</sup>.



## APPENDIX C.

## ANALYSIS OF THE STROMATEIS.

BOOK I. Should books be written, and if so, by whom? Shall we approve the writing of books by men like Epicurus, and forbid men who proclaim the truth to leave works that will benefit the generations after them? Words are the offspring of the soul. The Saviour condemned the servant who returned the deposit without increase. The writer as well as the reader must prove himself in the light of conscience. There is an unwritten husbandry of the Word and a written husbandry. We are to labour "for the meat that endureth unto everlasting life." Souls have their own proper nourishment. On him who labours in writing God will bestow reward according to his need. But "men" should not even aim at reward. To do so is to be in the grip of worldly custom.<sup>1</sup> As for these memorials of mine they are designed to be a veritable image of the living words of my teachers, though they are feeble in comparison with the words of those gracious spirits. If I pass by some things I do so in no grudging spirit, but in the interests of my hearers. I shall not scruple to use what is best in philosophy and Hellenic culture, to seek out the truth in them, like the nut in the husk. For in a real sense philosophy is a work of the Divine Providence.<sup>2</sup> Its use may be defended on the ground that, even if it were of no use, it would be useful to prove that it was so, that admiration and persuasion are begotten by learning, that truth is wooed and won by a comparison of different opinions. The seeds of knowledge are artfully hidden in the Stromateis, that like the prey of the huntsmen the truth be caught with toil and

<sup>1</sup> i. i. 1.10.<sup>2</sup> i. i. 11.18.

search. "Why arrange your notes so?" Because there is a danger in betraying the secret word of the Christian philosophy to those who speak against everything without just reason. Such scoffers, of whom there are many, jest at the barbaric element in the truth, manufacture objections, and spend their life about the distinction of names, the nature of sentences and their synthesis, more talkative than turtle-doves. Of such the Divine Scripture says, "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise."<sup>1</sup>

The word "wise" is varied in application. Homer calls a craftsman "wise." Hesiod speaks of a harper "skilled in all manner of wisdom." The saying of the Lord to Moses<sup>2</sup> shows that in Scripture every secular art or science is called by the common name of wisdom. There is wisdom in excellence in mechanical arts as well as in the higher departments of work and thought. Rightly, then, the Apostle called the wisdom of God "manifold," which had manifested its own power for the wellbeing of men by art, by science, by faith, by prophecy.<sup>3</sup>

While before the advent of Christ philosophy was necessary to the Greeks for righteousness, now it serves by way of a preliminary discipline. We are warned by the Scripture "not to be much with a strange woman,"<sup>4</sup> that is, we are to make use of secular culture, but not to linger over it, nor abide permanently with it.<sup>5</sup> Such preliminary training contributes readiness for the vision of duty, and re-illuminates the soul. Moral perfection is not the fruit of nature but of instruction. To refute sophistry we must study the art of reasoning.<sup>6</sup>

Greek culture and philosophy came down from God, as showers fall on different soils. The Husbandman was One; the results varied according to place, time, and variety of seed. All arts differ, but all are useful to life. So by philosophy I mean no special school. Some have fallen into well-doing by accident. But faith is essential. The Scriptures were translated into Greek to take away the pretext of ignorance. The paths to righteousness are many, and lead to the authoritative way of truth.<sup>7</sup> Neither in

<sup>1</sup> i. 2-3<sup>19, 24</sup>; Isa. xxix. 14; 1 Cor. i. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Exod. xxxi. 1-5.

<sup>3</sup> i. 4<sup>25-27</sup>; Eph. iii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Prov. v. 20.

<sup>5</sup> i. 5<sup>28, 32</sup>. Here, in close dependence on Philo, follows scriptural proof of the relation between secular culture and the true philosophy.

<sup>6</sup> i. 6<sup>33, 36</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> i. 7<sup>37, 38</sup>.

sophistry, nor in rhetoric, nor in the logic of the schools, is truth at all to be found. The Apostle calls the art of logic a disease. We must not seek to please the multitude. The truth-loving Plato, like one divinely inspired, says, "I obey only the word that seems to me the best."<sup>1</sup>

To disdain philosophy and insist on bare faith alone is opposed to the teaching of the Lord in the Parable of the Vine. In all arts he is truly learned who has learned useful things; so he who takes examples from Greek and barbarian alike is a much-experienced tracker-out of truth and a man "of many devices." The prophets and apostles were ignorant of philosophical arts; but methodical teaching is required for the interpretation of what they said. There is a saving word as well as a saving work. To save those eager to be saved is the best thing, and not the composition of ornamental little phrases. One hearer suffices the gnostic.<sup>2</sup> The philosophy discredited by the Apostle is the Epicurean or any other system which pays high honour to the elements. Deny Providence, and the economy of the Saviour seems a myth. Christianity extends Providence to particular events. Those who worship the elements or posit atoms as first principles may be philosophers in name, but are really atheists.<sup>3</sup> We must sanctify ear as well as tongue if we are to share in the truth. We are not "to cast pearls before swine." What we hear we are to "proclaim on the house-tops"—that is, to expound them in a transcendental and pre-eminent way, and not impart the truth to all absolutely. Truth is one. The sects both of the barbarian and Hellenic philosophy have each a part. He who puts together the separate pieces of truth will behold the Word—the perfect truth.<sup>4</sup>

The form of philosophy among the "seven wise men" of the Greeks was Hebraic and enigmatic. Plato says that the form of brevity was zealously pursued by the Greeks of old.<sup>5</sup> The most of the wise men and philosophers were barbarians by race. Plato admits that he derived the best elements in his system from the barbarians. Zoroaster was a Persian. Numa was a Roman. Wit-

<sup>1</sup> i. 8<sup>39-42</sup>. *ὁ φιλαλήθης Πλάτων οἷον θεοφορούμενος.*

<sup>2</sup> i. 9-10<sup>43, 49</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> i. 11<sup>50-54</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> i. 12<sup>57, 58</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> i. 14<sup>59-65</sup>. Clement discussed some of the sayings of the wise men. Then he gives a summary of the succession of philosophers among the Greeks with the view of showing the higher antiquity of the Hebrew philosophy.

ness, too, the Egyptian prophets, the Druids, the Indian gymnosophists, the disciples of Buddha, regarded by them as divine. By far the oldest of these is the Jewish race. Philo has proved it. As with philosophy, so with almost all arts. The Egyptians introduced astrology and invented geometry. Augury was of barbarian origin. Cadmus was a Phœnician. In navigation, mining, dyeing, music, rhetoric, grammar, the barbarians anticipated the Greeks. The first woman who was a philosopher was Theano of Crotona.<sup>1</sup>

In spite of its limitations philosophy paves the way for the truth that is most kingly. But, is it not written, "all who were before the advent of Christ were thieves and robbers?" "And is it not the case that he who does not prevent an evil is a cause of it?" This is an entirely wrong conception of causality.<sup>2</sup> As for the "all that came," this does not mean all men, but all the false prophets, all that were not authoritatively sent by the Word. And though they were prophets of the liar, they told some true things. For Providence overruled their daring for good.<sup>3</sup> The really wise among the Greeks are not discredited by Scripture, but such as were wise in their own conceit. God has shown their wisdom to be foolish and not true as they supposed. In the Book of Acts Paul shows that God was worshipped by the Greeks in a roundabout way, but that apprehension in the way of knowledge was necessary by the Son. We do not receive all philosophy absolutely but that of which Socrates speaks. "Many, as they say in the mysteries, are bearers of the thyrsus, but the mystics are few." So Plato limits philosophers to "the lovers of the vision of the truth." Philosophy aids in the apprehension of the truth; but the alone authoritative truth is that in which we are taught by the Son of God. This teaching is self-sufficient and in need of nothing.<sup>4</sup>

The most ancient of all forms of wisdom is incontrovertibly the philosophy of the Hebrews. Moses was older than most of the Greek deities.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> i. 15-16 <sup>86, 80</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> See Lecture III.

<sup>3</sup> i. 17 <sup>80, 87</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> i. 18-20 <sup>88, 100</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> i. 21 <sup>101, 147</sup>. Clement gives the times of the prophets who succeeded Moses, beginning with the Judges, followed by the Kings. He holds that Homer and Hesiod were later in date than Elijah; explains the seventy weeks of Daniel; makes curious digressions, as, for example, on the number of dialects in the world, the language used by irrational creatures. He discusses the date of the birth of Christ. He brings down his chronology to the death of Commodus.

The Scriptures both of the Law and the Prophets were translated into Greek in the time of Ptolemy—whether the son of Lagos or Ptolemy Philadelphus. Seventy men of the highest repute with a knowledge of the Greek tongue carried out the task in such a manner that the translation, though separately done, agreed both in meaning and expression. Thus the Hebrew prophecy became a prophecy in Greek. The Scriptures tell of the race, deeds, and life of Moses, the theologian, prophet, and interpreter of sacred laws.<sup>1</sup> He is a prophet, legislator, tactician, general, statesman, and philosopher. Generalship is a section of kingly government. The highest form of the kingly office is that which is according to God and His Holy Son. There are three elements in generalship—caution, daring, and their union. All these things, and how to use them, the Greeks learned from Moses. Plato lays down principles which seem to be interpretations of the Law. Moses was a living law guided by the good Word. He administered a good polity, seeking to train good and noble men. The Lord is the true lawgiver: He not only gave the Law, He is the exegete of the divine commands. Strange that the Greeks say that the gods taught Minos and Lycurgus, while they do not believe that God gave the Law to Moses, and thus disown the archetypes of what is told by their own writers.<sup>2</sup>

The Law inflicts penalties, but it is none the less good. Punishment is a surgery or cautery to the soul. The Providence that administers the world must be both sovereign and good. From a “son of disobedience” you may become a “legal slave,” then a “faithful servant,” and then a “son.” Salvation is the goal of the terror begotten by the Law.<sup>3</sup>

The philosophy of Moses is divided into four parts—the historical, the legislative, the sacrificial, and the theological, that is, the initiation into the immediate vision of God. The true dialectic professes the knowledge not of mortal affairs but of divine; but this is accompanied by a proper use of human affairs in word

<sup>1</sup> i. 22<sup>148,150</sup>. Chap. 23<sup>151,157</sup> contains an account of the birth and life of Moses down to the departure of the people from the land of Egypt. It is taken from Philo, to whose work he once makes allusion, and includes some legendary matter from other sources.

<sup>2</sup> i. 24-26<sup>158,170</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> i. 27<sup>171,175</sup>.



and deed. The true dialectic leads to the true wisdom which knows things that exist as they exist. This needs the Saviour who removes the film of ignorance from the soul, shows us how we are to know ourselves, and reveals the Father of the universe to whomsoever He wills. The apostle says that it was "by revelation" that he knew the mystery.<sup>1</sup> The Egyptian priest in Plato beautifully said that "the Greeks are always children," and that "there is not an old man among the Greeks, nor any science hoary with age." By this he means the barbarian truth of very ancient date.<sup>2</sup>

Book II. As to our plan of work note the following points. We shall show that the Greeks are thieves, that they have plagiarised and adulterated their most weighty opinions in matters of faith, wisdom, the fear of God, and, in particular, the secret part of the barbarian philosophy, the symbolic and enigmatical, which is most essential to a knowledge of the truth. We shall then defend our opinions from the attacks of the Greeks and give a friendly refutation of the more noble of the philosophers—not to avenge ourselves on detractors, but to convert them and take away their vanity.<sup>3</sup>

"In all thy ways acknowledge wisdom."<sup>4</sup> This shows that our actions should be in harmony with reason, and that we should select what is useful out of every discipline. Our philosophy is perfect and true. It leads up to the Governor of the universe, a being difficult to track out, ever withdrawing from him who pursues, but who, though far off in respect of essence, is very near in respect of His power. To search into the deep things of God demands faith. He who believes the Divine Scriptures receives a demonstration that cannot be gainsaid.<sup>5</sup> Faith is not a gift of nature, as Basilides avers. For if so, there is no merit either in faith or unfaith. Faith must be voluntary. To us faith is an irrefragable criterion. We have believed the Word, for the Word is truth. First principles are indemonstrable. Only by faith is it possible to know the First Principle of the universe. We need a new eye, a new ear, and a new heart. Faith and knowledge are indissolubly related. "Unless ye believe, ye will not understand."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> i. 28 <sup>176-179</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Prov. iii. 6.

<sup>2</sup> i. 29 <sup>160, 182</sup>; Timæus, p. 22 B.

<sup>5</sup> ii. 2 <sup>4, 9</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> ii. i <sup>1, 3</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> ii. 3-4 <sup>10, 19</sup>.

That all things belong to the wise man has come down to the Greeks from Moses. As Abraham was called "the friend of God," so by way of imitation Minos was called "the friend of Zeus." Moses was a wise man, king, lawgiver. But our Saviour surpasses all human nature. He is a king, rich, alone the High Priest, the king of truth, a lawgiver, of noble lineage, for God is His Father.<sup>1</sup> Plato proves the universal necessity of faith. Faithfulness embraces summarily the other virtues.<sup>2</sup> "Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God."<sup>3</sup> The word of God, then, is demonstration. Teaching is trustworthy when faith co-operates. There must be receptivity on the part of the learner. Penitence is a work of faith. Hope, too, is constituted by faith. Hope is the expectation of good, and expectation involves faith. "God is faithful," that is, He is worthy to be believed when making an assertion. We believe in Him whom we have trusted, in God whom alone we know. Whether based on fear or love, faith is something divine. It is the foundation of truth.<sup>4</sup>

To attack fear is to run down the Law, and, therefore, God who gave the Law. "But fear is an irrational affection." How so, when the commandment was given through the Word (Reason)? The fear of the Law is a cautious fear; it is a turning aside from that which is truly hurtful, disease of soul. Can the Law be anything but good, which is our Tutor to Christ?<sup>5</sup> The Marcionites call the Law not evil, but just. But the opposite of evil is not just, but good. Fear is a good thing, for it takes away evil. True fear does not fear God, but the falling away from God. "In the fear of the Lord is the hope of strength."<sup>6</sup> Such fear leads to repentance and hope. Faith rests on repentance and hope, and fear upon faith, and endurance and practice, along with instruction, find their goal in love, which is perfected by knowledge. An ignorant man, so long as he is ignorant, cannot philosophise, as he has not grasped the idea of wisdom.<sup>7</sup> By saying, "I am your God," the Scripture admonishes us to seek God, and as far as possible to strive to know Him. Righteous action is inseparable

<sup>1</sup> ii. 5<sup>20,22</sup>.<sup>2</sup> ii. 5<sup>23,24</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Rom. x. 17.<sup>4</sup> ii. 6<sup>25,32</sup>.<sup>5</sup> ii. 7<sup>33,35</sup>. Here follows a criticism of the views of Basilides and Valentinus on fear, ii. 8<sup>36,38</sup>.<sup>6</sup> ii. 8<sup>39,40</sup>; Prov. xiv. 26.<sup>7</sup> ii. 9<sup>41,45</sup>.

from such knowledge.<sup>1</sup> As there is a faith of knowledge and a faith of opinion, so there is a demonstration of knowledge and a demonstration of opinion. The demonstration of opinion is human; the demonstration of knowledge implants faith through comparison and opening up the Scriptures. He who is wise in his own conceit does not touch the truth, but is wavering and unstable; whereas by faith and true knowledge the soul remains the same and unchanged.<sup>2</sup>

In regard to time there is memory in relation to what is past, hope to what is future. We believe that the past has taken place, that the future will take place. Fear is the beginning of love, which by an addition becomes love, then faith. When I fear the Father, I love when I fear. In all our intercourse with men we require faith. As the Shepherd says, "All the virtues are the daughters of faith."<sup>3</sup>

In order that the foundation of faith may be laid, the soul must be cleansed by repentance. For those who sin in the faith a second repentance is granted, but he who continuously repents is closely related to him who sinned wilfully at first. Frequent prayer for pardon for frequent transgressions is but an appearance of repentance. All passions are irrational appetites. That which is involuntary is not judged. This may arise from ignorance or necessity. The Lord shows sins to be in our power by prescribing forms of healing corresponding to the disorders. Pardon does not consist in remission, but in healing.<sup>4</sup>

To interpret the will of the passionless God as akin to our emotions is to interpret the Scriptures carnally. The ascription of joy or pity to Him is a concession to our weakness. Our only relationship to God is that we are the work of His will. Yet in His pity He cares for us. So our relationship to the Lord is not that of essence, but in this that we have been made immortal, and have been called sons. In the gnostic, will, judgment, and discipline are one.<sup>5</sup>

The Greeks derived from Moses the elements of their ideas of the virtues, manliness, wisdom, self-control, and the like, above all, piety. All these virtues are related. We are to be

<sup>1</sup> ii. 10<sup>46, 47</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 11<sup>48, 52</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> ii. 12<sup>53, 55</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> ii. 13-15<sup>56, 71</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> ii. 16-17<sup>72, 77</sup>.

assimilated to the Lord. As God needs nothing, the good man being on the borderland between an immortal and a mortal nature, has few needs. In all its precepts the Law encourages manliness and humanity.<sup>1</sup>

The Gnostic is he who is after "the image and the likeness," imitating God as far as possible, self-controlled, enduring, living righteously, king over his passions, given to impart of what he has. For God's gifts are for the common advantage of men. There is to be a moral change in mouth, heart, hands. Plato said that the goal is likeness to God as far as possible. So the Law says, "Walk after the Lord your God." So to follow creates likeness. The beneficent man who does good by which he himself receives good is the image of God.<sup>2</sup> The divine likeness is also gained by fortitude which reaps as its fruit apathy through endurance. Such endurance the gnostic, so far as he is a gnostic, possesses. Bearing about the cross of the Saviour, he follows the Lord, walking in His footsteps, "as if he were a God," having become a "Holy of Holies." To loose the soul from pleasure is "the study of death."<sup>3</sup> We must, therefore, "put on the panoply of God." Man who is endowed with reason ought not to give way to impulse like the animals.<sup>4</sup> A champion of heresy, calling himself a gnostic, used to say that he fought with pleasure through pleasure. So the Nicolaitanes say that we ought to wither up the attacks of the flesh by abusing it. This were to live like beasts. The affection of pleasure is not an absolute necessity, but only attends by way of consequence certain natural needs. It is not an activity, nor a disposition, nor a part of us, but has been introduced into life for the purpose of service. Peace and freedom are only won by untiring conflict with our passions. Our standard, no doubt, may seem severe to those without tone and feeble, as to the unjust that which befalls them may seem very stringent justice. We must shun things provocative of lust and luxury.<sup>5</sup>

In saying that there was a happiness equal to that of a God in not being hungry or thirsty or cold, Epicurus laid down a precept for dung-eating swine rather than for rational creatures. To live in

<sup>1</sup> ii. 18<sup>78,96</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 19<sup>97,102</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Phædo, 81 A.

<sup>4</sup> Here follows a criticism of the views of Basilides and Valentinus on the passions as appendages, ii. 20<sup>103,117</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> ii. 20<sup>118,126</sup>.

accordance with virtue, to live in harmony with reason, to live in contemplation of the truth and order of the universe, to live according to knowledge, such are philosophical definitions of the chief end. Plato describes the most perfect good as likeness to God, and to be like to God is to be holy, just, and wise.<sup>1</sup> Our aim is to attain the end that knows no end, to live according to the commandments without reproach and in a scientific spirit, through knowledge of the divine will. "Be ye followers of me, as I also of Christ," says the Apostle.<sup>2</sup> Assimilation to God, then, is the aim of faith, and the end is the restitution of the promise that rests on faith.<sup>3</sup>

The question of marriage falls under pleasure and desire. Marriage is a union for the production of lawful children. Should one marry? And when and in what condition should he marry? Some philosophers rejected marriage; some looked on it as a thing indifferent; some as a good. Marriage is to be a school for the highest forms of self-restraint. In regard to marriage the Gospel is not in conflict with the Law, for both come from the one Lord.<sup>4</sup>

Book III. Continence is not concerned merely with sexual desires, but with all things which the soul lusts for in an evil way. As a divine grace it not only teaches self-control, it creates it.<sup>5</sup> To say with the followers of Carpocrates that women should be common is entirely subversive of the Law and the Gospel. No wonder that the agapæ of such are scenes of unbridled lust. It is a misunderstanding of the teaching of Plato to say that he taught the community of women.<sup>6</sup> The Marcionites say that nature is evil, because derived from an inferior God—the just Creator. Hence they abstain from marriage. But though in their hatred of the Creator they will not marry, they use His food and breathe His air. No doubt the Greek poets and thinkers said many things about the hardships that attend existence, and even said that it was better not to come into existence than to be.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Theat., 176 B.

<sup>2</sup> I Cor. xi. 1.

<sup>3</sup> ii. 21-22 <sup>127, 136.</sup>

<sup>4</sup> ii. 23 <sup>137, 147.</sup> See Lecture V. for the main points in Clement's views of marriage.

<sup>5</sup> iii. 1 <sup>1, 4.</sup>

<sup>6</sup> iii. 2 <sup>5, 11.</sup>

<sup>7</sup> iii. 3 <sup>12, 24.</sup>



The self-control of Marcion, if it can be so called, is due to the Creator Himself. All that Nicolaus meant by "abusing the flesh" was that we must master pleasures, and that we cannot serve two masters, pleasure and God. The views of some are a disgrace not merely to philosophy but to humanity. "Ye have not so learned Christ." The followers of Prodicus boast of being "royal sons," but they act not like kings but whipped curs. They are opposed alike to human and divine law. Are they better than men of the world who are like the worst of such? They oppose one precept of the Creator. Why not be consistent and oppose all? He said, "Make no graven image." Why not worship images? They pick out expressions from some prophetic section, patch them together, and interpret literally what was said allegorically. By transposing accents and stops they wrest the Scriptures to their own luxuries.<sup>1</sup>

We may divide the heresies into two types—those which teach the moral indifference of actions, and those which proclaim self-control from impiety and a spirit of contentiousness. As to the former. If any way of life can be chosen, the life of self-control can be chosen. If all things be lawful, self-control is lawful. If the most shameful way of life be indifferent, then we must obey desires in every respect, or we must avoid some desires, and then indifference ceases. But how can the man who is mastered by bodily pleasures be likened unto God or possess the knowledge of God? Those who follow the divine Scriptures must not live indifferently. It is not possible to have knowledge and not be ashamed to pay court to the body. As well call bile sweet, as call slavery to pleasure liberty.<sup>2</sup>

As for the second class. Of them we say, "They went out from us, but they were not of us." The reply of the Lord to Salome<sup>3</sup> only meant that genesis in every case is followed by corruption. If they reject marriage because "they have accepted the resurrection," let them give up eating and drinking also. In saying that they imitate the Lord, they forget that they are entirely different from Him,<sup>4</sup> and that He said, "What God had joined together, let not man put asunder." Unless it spring from love to God, there is no virtue in chastity. Paul condemns those who rejected

<sup>1</sup> iii. 4<sup>25, 39</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iii. 5<sup>40, 44</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> See Appendix G.

<sup>4</sup> See Lecture V.

marriage. Peter and Philip had children.<sup>1</sup> Christian self-control aims at mastery over the very desire of lusting. This demands the grace of God. True continence is better than that taught by philosophers. In regard to marriage or food or the like, we should choose only what is necessary. Self-control is not limited to sexual passion; there is self-control in despising money, or pleasure, or property, or the games, in controlling the tongue, in lording it over evil reasonings. We embrace self-restraint from love to God, sanctifying the temple of God.<sup>2</sup>

By supporters of the doctrine of indifference some passages of Scripture are violently wrested, in particular, the saying, "Sin shall not have dominion over you."<sup>3</sup> But the apostle himself divinely annuls the sophistical art of pleasure. As for the saying of the Lord to Salome, "I came to destroy the works of the female," that means desire and her works. The Lord only abolished love of money, love of strife, madness in lust, dainty living and the like. Why do they not quote the context which teaches that either self-control or marriage is in our power?<sup>4</sup>

The saying, "Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them,"<sup>5</sup> may be interpreted in various ways. In any case, in the number of those with whom the Lord is, those who do not marry from hatred or who from lust abuse the flesh are not found. The counsel of the prophet to "come out from among them and be separate"<sup>6</sup> does not mean to separate ourselves from the married but from the Gentiles and from impure and impious heresies. And the same God spoke through the Law and the Prophets and the Gospel.<sup>7</sup> Paul teaches that both chastity and marriage have each their distinctive ministries for the Lord. Nowhere do the Letters of the Apostle annul marriage, but preserving the sequence of the Law with the Gospel, regard both the married woman and the virgin as holy in the Lord—the one as a wife, the other as a virgin.<sup>8</sup> The saying adduced by Cassianus is not in the Four Gospels handed down by the Church, but in the Gospel according to the Egyptians, and, in any case, should be interpreted allegorically.<sup>9</sup> The saying about the beguiling

<sup>1</sup> iii. 6<sup>45, 56</sup>.<sup>2</sup> iii. 7<sup>57, 60</sup>.<sup>3</sup> Rom. vi. 14.<sup>4</sup> iii. 8-9<sup>61, 66</sup>.<sup>5</sup> Matt. xviii. 20.<sup>6</sup> Isa. lii. 11; 2 Cor. vi. 16.<sup>7</sup> iii. 10-11<sup>67, 78</sup>.<sup>8</sup> iii. 12<sup>79, 90</sup>.<sup>9</sup> iii. 13<sup>91, 93</sup>.

of Eve<sup>1</sup> does not mean that generation was due to deceit, but only that they sought pleasure greedily. The saying, "It is good for a man not to touch a woman,"<sup>2</sup> means that we are not to be carried away by irrational impulses. When Paul speaks of being temperate in all things,<sup>3</sup> that does not mean abstinence from all things, but that he used in a temperate way what he judged should be used. If generation be evil, they must draw the blasphemous conclusion that the Lord, who shared in it, was evil. Thus they slander the will of God and the mystery of creation. Apart from the body the economy of salvation could not have been fulfilled; for He who was its Head passed His life in the flesh. And did He not cure the body as well as the soul from disorders?<sup>4</sup>

A life of chastity may therefore be chosen, but those who are joined in marriage are not to be despised. Both are to give thanks to God in their distinctive spheres. The plain teaching of Paul is that marriage is lawful not only according to the Law but according to the New Covenant. Such as, under the name of knowledge "falsely so-called," have given way to pleasure contrary to the rule of God, have entered on the path which leads to the outer darkness.<sup>5</sup>

Book IV. As to order of treatment. First, we shall discuss martyrdom, who the perfect man is, and relative points such as the universal duty to philosophise. Then we shall treat of faith, inquiry, the debt of Greeks to the barbarian philosophy. Then will follow an exposition of the Scriptures in opposition to Greeks and Jews, with supplementary matter. The physiological views of the Greeks will next be considered. After a brief sketch of theology we shall treat of prophecy, the Scriptures and their divine authority in relation to heretics. Then we shall treat of the true gnostic physiology. But it shall be written as God wills, and as He may inspire.<sup>6</sup> The Stromateis are designedly discursive, and require winnowing in order to pick out the wheat.<sup>7</sup>

The mass of men have a disposition like the storms of winter, unsettled and unreasoning. To disbelieve the truth brings death,

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. xi. 3.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. vii. 1.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. ix. 25.

<sup>4</sup> iii. 14-17<sup>94, 104</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> iii. 18<sup>105, 110</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> iv. 1<sup>1, 3</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> iv. 2<sup>4, 7</sup>.

as to believe brings life. He who was "made a little lower than the angels" is the perfect man and the gnostic. Man is compacted of soul and body. The body tills the ground, the soul reaches forth to God. Death is the fellowship of the soul, being sinful, with the body; life is the separation from sin. All his life the gnostic makes it his study to sever in this sense the soul from the body, and thus creates an eagerness to endure the natural death which dissolves the chains that bind the soul to the body.<sup>1</sup> Hence the gnostic will not from fear of death fall away from the teaching of the Lord. He confirms the truth of the Gospel by his deed. By his precious blood he puts unbelievers to shame. Martyrdom is perfection, because it exhibits the perfect work of love. The soul that has lived in purity along with the knowledge of God is a witness both by life and word, pouring forth faith like blood all his life and even up to his departure. Some heretics say that the knowledge of the only true God is true martyrdom, and that the man who makes confession by death is a self-murderer. We assent to the former statement; and we also censure those who have rushed on death from hatred of the Creator, giving themselves up to a vain death. To live well, we must live. He who in the body has studied the art of living well is being sent forward to immortality.<sup>2</sup> We must exercise care for the body for the sake of the soul. By beneficence like that of the Lord, gnostic love shows itself. Those who act for the sake of the gift promised are called "hired servants" in the Parable of the Two Brothers. The Lord teaches that from love to God we must gnostically despise death. We are not to hate our persecutors, but regard every trial as an opportunity for witnessing.<sup>3</sup> He who denies the Lord denies himself; he denies life. Those who persecute the martyr do not know that to such death is the gateway of life. The gnostic will never put the chief end in fortune, but in being a kingly friend of God; and though he be subjected to dishonour, and exile, and confiscation, and death, he will never be torn away from his freedom and overmastering love to God. Armed with weapons not carnal, he says: "O Lord, grant a critical opportunity and take a demonstration; let the terror approach; I despise dangers from love to

<sup>1</sup> iv. 3<sup>8,12</sup>.<sup>2</sup> iv. 4<sup>13,19</sup>.<sup>3</sup> iv. 5-6<sup>20,41</sup>.

Thee.”<sup>1</sup> Even barbarians have defied tyrants and faced most cruel tortures. The whole church is full of women as well as of men who have made “a study of death”—the death that quickens unto Christ. Young or old, slave or Greek, can philosophise. Both servant and wife will practise the Christian philosophy. The free man, though menaced with death, will never abandon piety; nor will the wife, nor son, nor servant, where husband or father or master is hostile, fail to cling nobly to virtue. There can, surely, be no doubt that it is better to be a member of the brotherhood of God than to choose the darkness of demons. In fighting for virtue we are to think of nothing save the possibility of its being well done.<sup>2</sup>

Consider the sayings of the Lord as to martyrdom. With the great part of the exegesis of Heracleon we agree. He has overlooked this point, that even if some have not by action and life “confessed Christ before men,” their confession at the tribunal and endurance of torture even unto death show that they have believed with the heart. Even the martyrdom of those who make confession at the end of life is a purging away of sins with glory. The Lord drank the cup, and in imitation of Him the Apostles, as being truly gnostics and perfect, suffered for the churches which they founded. So the gnostics who walk in their footsteps ought to drink the cup, if circumstances demand it. The gnostic who bears witness not from hope or fear, but from love, is the truly blessed martyr, surrendering himself wholly for God, giving up as a deposit the “man” who is demanded.<sup>3</sup> When He says, “When they persecute you in one city, flee ye into another,” He does not exhort us to flee as if persecution were an evil thing, nor like men in fear of death to turn and flee; but He wishes us not to be a cause of evil in the persecutor, nor to share in his evil. To expose ourselves to capture from rashness is to be a fellow-worker in the crime of the persecutor. We are not to keep hold of anything that belongs to this life; we are not to embitter by counter-claims those who take us to law, and by our action stir them up to blaspheme the Name.<sup>4</sup> “If God cares for you, why are you persecuted and slain?” This takes place in harmony with the prediction of God, the free-will of

<sup>1</sup> iv. 7<sup>42,55</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iv. 8<sup>56,69</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> iv. 9<sup>70,75</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> iv. 10<sup>76,77</sup>.



the judge, and, in any case, is no real wrong to us.<sup>1</sup> In like conflict with human freedom is the theory of Basilides that the soul is punished here for sins committed previously in another life. If martyrdom be retribution by way of punishment, then the faith and the teaching for which martyrdom takes place are co-operators in punishment. What place, then, is there for love to God, or praise, or censure, or right citizenship? The Lord did not suffer by the will of the Father, nor are those who are persecuted, persecuted by the purpose of God. He does not prevent such things. His Providence is to be regarded as a disciplinary act, in the case of others for their own individual sins, in the case of the Lord and His apostles for ours. For the sake of our sanctification the Lord was not prohibited from suffering.<sup>2</sup>

We are to love the sinner, not as such, but in so far as he is a man and the handiwork of God. We are to love our enemies. Like Paul, we must bear all things lest we should cause hindrance to the Gospel of Christ. We must exhibit a pure example to our disciples.<sup>3</sup> The perfect righteousness both in word and deed is plainly outlined in the Epistle to the Romans. The divine apostle sets forth the gnostic rule thus. He speaks of one salvation in Christ for the righteous of the Old Covenant and for us.<sup>4</sup> "If I give my body and do not love," says the Apostle Paul, "I am become as sounding brass and a clanging cymbal." That is, if I bear witness not from an elect disposition through love, but from fear. If from a reward expected I clang my lips in witness to the Lord, I am a common man, sounding the name of the Lord, not knowing Him. The same work differs according as it is done by fear, or perfected through love, and whether it is wrought through faith or gnostically. Naturally the rewards are different. The gnostic who looks on beauty thinks of beauty of soul, admiring the body as a statue through the beauty of which he transports himself in thought to the artist and to that which is truly beautiful.<sup>5</sup> In this perfection man and woman can equally share. Scripture and history prove it. The temperate wife will, in the first place, seek to induce her husband to share with her in the things that contribute to happiness; and, if that be im-

<sup>1</sup> iv. 11<sup>78,80</sup>.<sup>2</sup> iv. 12<sup>81,88</sup>.<sup>3</sup> iv. 13-15<sup>89,98</sup>.<sup>4</sup> iv. 16<sup>99,104</sup>.<sup>5</sup> iv. 17-18<sup>105,116</sup>.

possible, will herself press on to virtue, obeying her husband in all things save such as have a bearing on virtue and salvation. Without instruction, study, and discipline, advance in virtue is not possible. The wife must remember that God is her helper, and her true comrade and Saviour, and make Him leader and general in every action, and the love of Him as her goal.<sup>1</sup>

One may be perfected in one virtue and one in another. But perfect in all things at once no man is, while he is still a man, save Him alone who for us put on man. According to the mere letter of the Law, perfection might be obtained by abstinence from evil actions. But in the Gospel the gnostic advances not merely by using the Law as a stepping-stone, but by comprehending it as the Lord, who gave the command, delivered it to the apostles. Not till life is ended will he have a claim to the title "perfect." The divine apostle sets forth the differences of the perfect. Prophets, martyrs, teachers, were prominent in their distinctive virtues, but they shared alike in common virtues. "Each has his own gift from God." But the apostles were complete in all. The writings of Paul derive their breath and expression from the Old Covenant.<sup>2</sup>

The gnostic is a man of understanding and insight. His work is not abstinence from evil—whether from fear or hope of reward—he chooses well-doing for the sake of love. He does not aim at the knowledge of God for any special need, nor does he even make choice of knowledge from a wish to be saved. He does good because he judges it right to do good. He has consecrated his body into a holy temple. He is no longer self-controlled, but has attained the state of passionlessness, waiting to be "clothed upon" with the divine form. Such knowledge loves the ignorant and instructs them to honour the whole creation of the Almighty. "Purity is to think holy thoughts." A true and steadfast repentance is sufficient purification to a man. Though we are not to be righteous for the sake of reward, there is a place for hope. But he who obeys the call neither from fear nor from the hope of pleasure, goes on to knowledge. Drawn by the love of him who is the Lover, he cultivates piety.<sup>3</sup> To turn away from things of sense does not of necessity produce close union with intellectual (spiritual) objects, but the reverse is true. It is possible for the gnostic now to

<sup>1</sup> iv. 19-20 <sup>117,129</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iv. 21 <sup>130,134</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> iv. 22 <sup>135,148</sup>.

become God. When deified into the passionless state, man becomes a unit undefiled. "As, then, those at sea when they are attached to the anchor by a tight cable, when they pull at the anchor, draw not the anchor to themselves but themselves to the anchor, so those who in accordance with the gnostic life are drawing God to themselves are unconsciously bringing themselves to God. For he that gives service to God gives service to himself."<sup>1</sup>

To philosophise or not, to believe or not, is in our power. Sins before faith are forgiven by the Lord—not merely involuntary or ignorant sins, as Basilides would have it, as if it were a man and not God who provided so great a gift. Punishment does not undo the sin, but has as its aim that the sinner may sin no more, and that no one may commit like sin.<sup>2</sup>

As God cannot be demonstrated, He cannot be an object of science. But the Son is Wisdom and Science and Truth, and whatsoever things are cognate thereto. He is capable of demonstration and explication. He is the circle of all the powers rolled into one and formed into a unity. Hence to believe in Him is to be monadic, and not to believe is to be divided. We are introduced into the mysteries by the Saviour Himself. God is the first principle of physics, ethics, and logic. Hence the Son alone is the teacher of men.<sup>3</sup>

To run down the creation and vilify the body is unreasonable. The body is the dwelling-place of the soul; the soul of the gnostic deals with it in a grave and austere fashion. He uses the body as one going on a long journey uses the inns on the road. Euripides says, "I shall go into the wide ether to hold converse with Zeus." But I shall pray the Spirit to furnish me with wings to my Jerusalem.<sup>4</sup>

Book V. To limit the sphere of faith to the Son and knowledge to the Father is opposed to the close relation between faith and knowledge as well as the inseparable union between the Father and the Son. The inquiry which goes along with faith, which builds the august knowledge of the truth on the basis of faith, is the best. Set aside inquiry into the obvious, the obscure which will always be so, and questions on which opinions equally valid may be adduced,

<sup>1</sup> iv. 23<sup>147, 152</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> iv. 24<sup>153, 154</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> iv. 25<sup>155, 162</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> iv. 26<sup>163, 172</sup>.

and faith is established. It is God who speaks in Scripture, and it were godless to disbelieve Him. Admit a Providence and the economy of the Saviour must be admitted. Our feebleness made the coming of the Saviour a necessity. To inquire concerning God has a saving influence. We must become intimately united to God, through divine love, that we may listen to the truth without guile.<sup>1</sup> Turn to hope. The man who hopes sees things to be with the mind only. What is just or true is in like manner invisible to the senses. So the Truth—the Word of God—is apprehended by the mind. The Word of God became flesh that He might be seen. He who seeks to walk according to the Word believes, then hopes, then loves.<sup>2</sup>

All the highest truth is expressed in symbol. The mysteries were not exhibited to every one indiscriminately, but only to the perfected and the instructed. The Egyptians had three divisions of the symbolic—that by literal imitation, that by figures of speech, and that by allegorical enigmas. This veiling of the first principles of things is universal. It was so with the oracles of the Greeks, the maxims of the wise men, and the Greek poets. It is so with all our Scripture. Sayings of the Apostle prove it.<sup>3</sup>

There is a secret relationship between the Pythagorean symbols and the barbarian philosophy. To all his sayings there are Scripture parallels. For example, the saying, "Do not step over the balance," is an epitome of the sayings of Moses concerning righteousness. The sphinxes before the Egyptian temples may mean that the discourse about God is enigmatical and obscure, perhaps that we ought to love and fear the Divine Being, to love Him as gracious to the pious, to fear Him as just to the unholy; the two-fold characteristic being indicated by the union of the wild beast and the man.<sup>4</sup>

The oracles of Scripture are delivered in the form of enigmas. The furniture of the tabernacle, the altar of incense, the veil into the Holy of Holies, the four letters that mark the name of God, the golden lamp, the table of shewbread, the ark, the Cherubim, the bells and stones on the robe of the High Priest, all symbolise

<sup>1</sup> v. 1<sup>113</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> v. 2-3<sup>14,19</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> v. 4<sup>20,26</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> v. 5<sup>27-31</sup>. In v. 7<sup>42</sup> he explains the sphinx as a symbol of the union of strength and intelligence. In v. 8<sup>48</sup> he suggests other explanations.

truths. The golden lamp may be a symbol of Christ, as casting light "in diverse portions and diverse manners" on those who believe in Him. The 360 bells on the robe of the High Priest represent the space of a year, "the acceptable year of the Lord," proclaiming and sounding the mighty manifestation of the Saviour. The mitre indicates the most sovereign power of the Lord.<sup>1</sup>

The Egyptians likewise concealed mysteries in enigmas. The hawk, the crocodile, the dog, the ibis, were symbolical of various characteristics in men and God and natural phenomena.<sup>2</sup> The Scythians and the Greeks did the same. Take, for example, the Ephesian Letters and their interpretation. Take the interpretation of the words containing the letters of alphabet as given to children.<sup>3</sup> Even whole books like that of Heraclitus have been uttered in enigmatic form. Such being the case, it was fitting that prophecy should be uttered in secret and symbolic fashion.<sup>4</sup> This form is adopted by the Scriptures for the sake of memory and brevity, and to give a stimulus to the truth. Such veiling is in the interests of the genuine inquirer, as well as of the truth which is only partly revealed and diversely interpreted. For writing out the views of Pythagoras clearly, Hipparchus was expelled from the school. The scholars of Epicurus declare that some of his writings are esoteric. So the founders of the mysteries buried their own doctrines in myths. It was not expedient that the ignorant should fall in with them.<sup>5</sup> The divine apostle shows that the gnosis did not belong to all. Some things were handed down unwritten in tradition to the Hebrews. The "babe" is entrusted with the rudiments. "Day utters speech to day"—that which has been written without disguise; "night to night proclaims knowledge"—that which has been hidden mystically. Paul says, "I have fed you with milk, not with meat." The milk is catechetical instruction—the first food of the soul; meat is the contemplation, the immediate vision of God.<sup>6</sup>

A separation from the body and its passions is a sacrifice acceptable to God. Philosophy has naturally been called the study of death. The true philosophy is pursued by him who leaves out the

<sup>1</sup> v. 6<sup>32,40</sup>. The first part is taken from Philo.

<sup>2</sup> v. 7<sup>41, 42</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Clement gives various interpretations of βέδν, ζάψ, χθάν, πλῆκτρον, σφιγξ, and other forms, v. 8<sup>49</sup>. See note in Kaye, p. 181.

<sup>4</sup> v. 8<sup>43,55</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> v. 9<sup>56,59</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> v. 10<sup>60,66</sup>.



senses in his thinking. Hence the silence enjoined by Pythagoras. The Greeks deify the gnostic life though they have not an intelligent knowledge of it. In the Greek mysteries purifications come first. This is followed by the minor mysteries with their groundwork of instruction, and these by the great mysteries which are taken up with the contemplation of nature and realities. To the first stage corresponds our baptism with confession; in the last stage analysis takes the place of contemplation. In this way we rise to the concept of the Monad, and come to know not what the Almighty is, but what He is not. God cannot be circumscribed. "What house will ye build me, saith the Lord?"<sup>1</sup> Plato says that it is a difficult task to discover the Father and Maker of the universe. Kindred thoughts are expressed in various passages of the Scripture. The reason is that, as the absolutely First Principle, He cannot be demonstrated, nor expressed in ordinary predicates. Only by divine grace can we form any conception of Him.<sup>2</sup> All knowledge of Him, whether due to the direct action of God Himself, or to the exercise of free-will on the part of man, is due to grace. If it is impossible, according to Plato, to disbelieve the children of the gods, though they speak without probable and certain proofs, is not that a proof that the prophets, sons of God, are true witnesses about divine things? It was through His Son that God proclaimed the Scriptures. He who knows that the Son of God is Teacher has confidence that His teaching is true; and such confidence makes faith grow. And this faith is the effective cause of good things and the foundation of right conduct.<sup>3</sup>

The Father and Maker of the universe is known innately, even without teaching. The belief in the sovereignty of God is universal. But even the Greeks with their search after knowledge only came to know God by way of circumlocution, which was true as far as it went. For they do not know what He is, nor how He is Lord and Father and Maker, unless they have been taught by the truth. When the shipmaster said to Jonah,<sup>4</sup> "Call on thy God that He may save us," the expression, "thy God," suggests one

<sup>1</sup> v. 11<sup>67,77</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> v. 12<sup>78,82</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> v. 13<sup>83,88</sup>. Chapter xiv. <sup>89,113</sup> is entirely devoted to illustrations of "theft" from the barbarian philosophy by the Greeks. He has exhibited many interesting parallels and analogies. Cf. pp. 46-49.

<sup>4</sup> Jonah i. 6.

who knew by way of knowledge; the expression, "that God may save us," indicates the common consciousness of the Gentiles, who had applied their mind to the thought of Almighty but had not yet believed. The beneficence of God is eternal. Each one shares in it according as he wills.<sup>1</sup>

Book VI. In the Pædagogus we have set forth the way of life that prepares the soul for the reception of gnostic science. In the delineation of the gnostic we shall show to the Greeks that they are impious in persecuting the man who loves God. The Stromateis are like a variegated meadow, and such of set purpose. For if toil should precede food, much more should it precede gnosis. Our spiritual garden is the Saviour Himself. When transplanted into Him we become fruitful. He is the true gnosis.<sup>2</sup>

That the symbolic form was archaic and all but universal has been proved. The theft of Hellenic thought from the Scriptures has been demonstrated. As further proof we call to witness the Greeks themselves, for they steal from one another, and will, therefore, hardly refrain from what is ours. All the adherents of the various schools in philosophy admit their debt to Socrates for their authoritative tenets.<sup>3</sup> They have not only filched doctrines from the barbarians, but they have transformed the marvels in our records into marvels of Hellenic mythology.<sup>4</sup> Moreover, they took doctrines from the Egyptians, who follow a philosophy of their own, as is shown by their ritual.<sup>5</sup>

Peter says in his "Preaching,"—"Worship God not as the Greeks, but worship Him in a new way through Christ." He shows that the one God was known by the Greeks in a Gentile way, by the Jews in a Judaic way, and in a new and spiritual way by us. The same is shown by the Apostle Paul.<sup>6</sup> To those who were righteous according to Law faith was wanting. But to the righteous according to philosophy not only faith was lacking, but

<sup>1</sup> v. 14<sup>134,141</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vi. 1<sup>1-3</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> vi. 2<sup>4,37</sup>. Clement proceeds to quote parallel passages from Homer, Musæus, Archilochus, the tragedians, philosophers, historians, and rhetoricians. He seeks further to show that they have been guilty of possessing stolen goods *en masse*.

<sup>4</sup> vi. 3. <sup>28,34</sup>.

<sup>5</sup> vi. 4 <sup>35,88</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> vi. 5 <sup>39,43</sup>.

they had to abandon idolatry. The Lord preached the Gospel to those in Hades. He puts forth His might, because to save is His work. If He preached to the Jews only, the apostles, there as well as here, must have preached the Gospel to the heathen. Both Gentile and Jew belong to the holy people. "The ox and the bear," says the Scripture, "shall meet together." The ox is the Jew, the Gentile is indicated by the bear. If in the flood all sinful flesh perished, we must believe that the will of God, which is disciplinary and operative, saves those who turn to Him. Water, which is of gross material, could not injure the soul, which is of finer material.<sup>1</sup>

Wisdom is the steadfast knowledge of things divine and human. This the Lord taught us both through His advent and through the prophets. With us those are called philosophers who love wisdom,—that is, the knowledge of the Son of God,—but among the Greeks, those who take up discussions on virtue. Some dogmas the Greeks have borrowed, some they have misunderstood. Self-love is the cause of all their errors. In this way they miss the truth. Knowledge and science are derived from the instruction of a teacher. You name Pythagoras and others as teachers. Who taught them? Who taught the first generation of men? The First-begotten, the Wisdom of God, is the teacher who from the very beginning of the world has trained and perfected man. As the whole family goes back to the Creator, so the teaching which justifies goes back to the Lord. Some choked the seeds of truth, like the Pharisees. But those who believed in the coming of the Lord gained knowledge of the Law; just as philosophers, when taught by the Lord, learn the true philosophy. Christ taught the apostles at the time of the advent; through this knowledge, as delivered and revealed, cometh wisdom. The gnosis has come down through succession to a few, having been delivered unwritten by the apostles.<sup>2</sup>

Paul does not seem to censure philosophy, though he does not deem it worthy of the man who has attained to the gnostic height to run back to it. So to the Colossians he calls philosophy elementary teaching.<sup>3</sup> The gnostic must be fond of learning. He must be prepared to meet argument with argument. All things

<sup>1</sup> vi. 6<sup>44, 53</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vi. 7<sup>54, 60</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> vi. 8<sup>61, 65</sup>.

profitable for life come from God; but there are tares in Greek philosophy. It, moreover, is elementary; while truly perfect science is conversant with intellectual and transcendent objects, and with objects still more spiritual. The true gnostic—such as James, Peter, John, Paul, and the rest of the apostles—knows all things. He comprehends what seems to others incomprehensible; for nothing is incomprehensible to the Son of God, nor untaught. He who in love suffered for us kept back nothing. Thus faith becomes certain demonstration.<sup>1</sup> No doubt the gnostic is subject to hunger, thirst, and the like, without which the body could not continue. This did not apply to the Saviour. The apostles were not subject to emotions apparently good—courage, joy, tranquillity. The gnostic does not need courage nor cheerfulness, is not angry, does not envy, and loves the Creator in the creatures. He becomes passionless like his teacher. He who feasts on the insatiable gladness of contemplation cannot be delighted with petty things. Why should he run back to the good things of the world who has gained the “light inaccessible”? To him the future is no matter of conjecture; through love it is already present. His gnosis, when perfected, becomes infallible through love. He has apprehended the First Cause. He has learned from the Truth the most exact truth. He models the administration of his own affairs from the archetypes above, as those who sail direct their ship by the stars. He requires few necessities for life, and these not as primary, but because they are essential to his sojourn in life; for to him gnosis is the principal thing.<sup>2</sup> Accordingly, he devotes himself to subjects that serve as a training for gnosis. From music, arithmetic, geometry, astronomy, he takes what they may contribute to the truth. From astronomy, like Abraham, he ascends to the Creator from the creation. So he will utilise dialectics, which has a place in the interpretation of Scripture. To him all branches of study are only a means to an end, the transmission of the truth to others, and a defence against hindrances to the truth. What is craftily used by heretics he uses rightly.<sup>3</sup> The study of arithmetic is illustrated by Abraham. As an example of music take David, at once singing and prophesying. Astronomy helps to provide the soul with a keen vision of truth. Philosophy co-operates in the

<sup>1</sup> vi. 8<sup>66-70</sup>.<sup>2</sup> vi. 9<sup>71-79</sup>.<sup>3</sup> vi. 10<sup>80-93</sup>.

discussions about truth. We have been born by nature for virtue, not so as to have it from birth, but in the sense that we are adapted for acquiring it.<sup>1</sup> The same is true of Adam. He was not perfect as created, but adapted to receive virtue. Aptitude is an impulse in the direction of virtue, but it is not virtue. Much more is gnosis the fruit of toil. The gnostic is pure in deeds and thought and also in word. He does not condemn any particular sin, but all sin absolutely. He circumscribes his desires both in respect of possession and use. He deems it of more importance to live well than to live. He prefers the love of God and righteousness to children or marriage or parents. After the children are begotten he regards his wife as a sister. To those who have repented of their sins but not steadfastly believed, God grants their requests when they pray for them; but to those who live sinlessly He grants their thoughts. The gnostic prays in thought every hour. Having prayed for forgiveness of sin, he will then pray that he may no longer sin, then for the power to do well and to understand the economy of the Lord, that having become pure in heart he may be initiated into the beatific vision. Possessed of true righteousness he is glorified even here, as Moses was, with something of an intellectual effulgence like the glory of the sun. He grows in likeness to God the Saviour, so far as it is possible for human nature.<sup>2</sup> He who has cultivated apathy and grown to the beneficence of gnostic perfection is here equal to the angels. He hastens to the holy abode like the apostles. For those who have lived perfectly and gnostically may be enrolled among the presbyters. Both Greek and Jew meet in the unity of the faith, and the election out of both is one. Of the elect some are more elect.<sup>3</sup> Such will rest in the "holy mount," the church on high, in which are gathered the philosophers of God, the true Israelites, the pure in heart, who devote themselves to the pure vision of the contemplation that is never sated. To be deemed worthy of the highest honour after being saved is more than being saved. Simply to be saved belongs to things intermediate, but to be saved rightly and fittingly is right action. Those who do not accomplish good things do not know what is profitable for them. Being ignorant of what is truly good, they cannot pray so as to receive good

<sup>1</sup> vi. 11 <sup>84, 95</sup>.<sup>2</sup> vi. 12 <sup>96, 104</sup>.<sup>3</sup> vi. 13 <sup>105, 108</sup>.



things from God; nor if they received it would they profit by it, in their ignorance of the proper use of divine things.<sup>1</sup>

The gnostic receives the impression of the more immediate image, the mind of the Master. He teaches "on the house-tops" those who can be taught; he teaches, as he acts, the pattern of the Christian citizenship. It belongs to Him to know when to speak, and how, and to whom. "The wild olive is engrafted into the fatness of the olive." By engrafting worthless shoots are made noble, and the barren fruitful. There are four modes of grafting, and each symbolises a separate class of disciples. Solomon teaches that the love of knowledge makes a man immortal; it should, therefore, be sought so as to be found. With discovery inquiry ends. The discovery concerning God is the teaching given through the Son. We aim at learning from God Himself, with whom the truth is. From the divine oracles we claim to have been taught the truth by the Son of God. "The Saviour spoke all things in parables." They must, therefore, be expounded in accordance with the canon of the Church—that is, the harmony of the Law and the Prophets with the covenant delivered at the advent of the Lord. The prophetic teaching, like the Incarnation itself, was a concession. The Lord possessed all virtue; and to lead man who had been nurtured in the world of sense up to the things of another world, He employed parables. Like all other languages, Hebrew has certain characteristics distinctive of the national genius. But prophecy is not marked by such features. It does not veil the truth for the sake of beauty of phrase, but because the truth does not belong to all. Even those to whom the science of interpretation specially belongs must advance gradually.<sup>2</sup>

The Greek philosophers name God, but do not know Him, for they do not worship God as God. They ascribe to God their own passions. They seek the probable, not the true. We are not to investigate truths in part, but truth itself. For the subject of God is not one thing but ten thousand things. There is a difference between seeking God and the things about God, between things and name, between the expression and the thing signified. Those

<sup>1</sup> vi. 14<sup>109, 114</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vi. 15<sup>115, 132</sup>. Here follows (vi. 16<sup>133, 148</sup>) a gnostic exposition of the decalogue. See pp. 199, 200.

who lay hold of the mere expression are like ravens who imitate the voices of men, but have no conception of what they say. Philosophy was given by God as a preparatory discipline. Its very existence shows its origin. Light cannot produce darkness, nor can vice do anything virtuous. As philosophy makes men virtuous, it must be the work of God, whose only work is to do good. Every benefit related to life proceeds in its ultimate ground from God the Father, who is ruler over all, and it is perfected through the Son.<sup>1</sup>

The gnostic is always engaged in the most essential matters. If he has leisure he turns to Greek philosophy as a recreation or a dessert, though he does not direct his energy to superfluous or insignificant points. For true science, such as the gnostic alone possesses, is a firm hold, leading up through true and sure reason to the knowledge of the cause. To philosophise is absolutely essential. The Greeks must be taught through the Law and the Prophets to worship the only God, who is truly Almighty, then to learn that nothing can be an image of God. From this he must advance through righteousness to knowledge. Those who boast their firm grasp of truth have been taught by men who cannot worthily declare the power of God. Even those taught by God require grace to attain such knowledge as they possess. Myriads of heralds prophesied of the time and place and signs of the advent of the Lord. Greek philosophers are limited to a few scholars or adherents. Christianity is in every race and country. Instead of being crushed by persecution, it grows and lives.<sup>2</sup>

Book VII. Now we show to the Greeks that the gnostic alone is truly pious. We shall use only arguments of a self-evident nature, and give only an outline of Christianity. The gnostic worships God in a manner worthy of God. He honours the Son from whom he has learned to know the First Cause, the Father of the universe. He worships God by continuous cultivation of his soul and by training that which is divine in himself in the form of ceaseless love. Service of men is partly "meliorative," partly "ministerial." The truly devout man serves God in the affairs of men well and unblamably. He is a lover of God. For he who honours God loves God. He discharges a threefold function. He knows

<sup>1</sup> vi. 17 <sup>149, 161</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vi. 18 <sup>162, 168</sup>.

realities, he carries out the injunctions of the Word, he transmits the secret things of truth in a manner worthy of God.<sup>1</sup>

The first stage of faith is to know God, and then in harmony with this knowledge, in no way to commit wrong. The most excellent thing on earth is the most pious man; the most perfect and most royal is the nature of the Son. All men are His, some in the way of knowledge, some as friends, some as faithful servants, some as servants simply. He saves those who are willing. As befits the Lord of all, He cares for all. He is not touched by envy, nor ignorance, nor pleasure. In His love He clothed Himself with flesh for the common salvation of men, and can never neglect His own work. He governs all things from the greatest to the least. Without interfering with freewill, He made all things contribute to virtue, so that from age to age the Almighty was revealed through the Son. The one end of His saving righteousness is the bettering of each one.<sup>2</sup>

By fellowship with God through the great High Priest the gnostic becomes assimilated to the Lord, and then fashions himself and moulds those who hear him. The canons of the gnostic assimilation are gentleness, loving-kindness, and a splendid piety. Such virtues are an acceptable sacrifice with God. The Gospel and the Apostle agree as to the duty of putting ourselves to death. If we so sacrifice ourselves we need no other sacrifice. By such consecration we honour Him who was consecrated for us. God takes pleasure in our salvation alone. He is in need of nothing and is not propitiated by sacrifices. He is revealed to the virtuous alone.<sup>3</sup> The gnostic masters all the causes of evil, and, like God, benefits all men, whatever his sphere be. His soul is a divine image of Him who is the express image of the Almighty Father. Thus master of himself, he gains a firm hold of divine science. He cultivates all forms of manliness. He belongs to this world and yet to a higher world. He is the true wrestler, with the universe for amphitheatre, God as the president, the Son of God as umpire, angels and gods as spectators. The terms are the same for all; the issue depends on our will and choice. For salvation through obedience we owe thanks to God. And our best thanks is to do what is well-pleasing to Him. He accepts our service of men as service of Himself;

<sup>1</sup> vii. 1<sup>1-4</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vii. 2<sup>5-12</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> vii. 3<sup>13-15</sup>.

and He regards the wrongs done to His believers as a dishonour to Himself.<sup>1</sup>

The Greeks represent their gods as human in passions as well as in form. Those who liken the divine nature to the worst of men are atheists. To represent men as injuring the gods implies that the gods are inferior. The ascription of wrath to the gods naturally begets superstition, and their devotees see portents everywhere. They have a dread of grains of salt, of squills, and brimstone. But the true God regards nothing holy but the character of the just man, and nothing accursed save what is unjust.<sup>2</sup>

Do we not rightly refrain from confining in temples made with hands that which contains all things? What work of mechanical art could be called holy? Better, surely, with others, to regard the whole universe as a fitting shrine for Him. Ridiculous that man, "the plaything of God," should make God, or that He should become the play of art. No work of art, however perfect, can be regarded sacred and divine. To localise God is an absurdity. If we give the epithet "holy" to the building as well as to God Himself, why not rather to the church which is the congregation of saints? The soul of the gnostic is a shrine of God—that is, he is one in whom the knowledge of God is consecrated.<sup>3</sup>

God does not need the food of sacrifice as if He hungered. We honour Him by the sacrifice of prayer. The truly holy altar is the righteous soul, and the incense from it is holy prayer. We are to offer God the incense of united prayer.<sup>4</sup> We are commanded to honour the Son and Word whom we recognise as Saviour and Ruler, and through him the Father, not on select days, as feast-days and the like, but continuously throughout our whole life and in every way. If intercourse with a good man ennoble one, much more will fellowship with God. Hence all our life we keep festival. And this applies specially to the gnostic. He is the truly kingly man, the holy priest of God. He does not approach the spectacles, touches not costly wines or wreaths that effeminate the soul. He enjoys all things as divine gifts. He believes that God knows all things and hears our thought. God has not to wait for any voice of ours. The gnostic prays for the things that are really good—the things of the soul; and, as he prays, he works, so that these good

<sup>1</sup> vii. 3<sup>16, 21</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vii. 4<sup>22, 27</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> vii. 5<sup>28, 29</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> vii. 6<sup>30, 34</sup>.

things may be no external ornaments, but that he himself may be good. To pray aright we must pray with a knowledge of God. Prayer is converse with God. Though we open not our lips we cry in our inmost being from the heart. This cry God ever hears. Hence we lift up head and hands and feet at the closing prayer, as if to separate the body from the earth as we speak. Some pray at fixed hours, the gnostic prays all his life. As God can do all that He wills, the gnostic receives whatsoever he may ask. Though God gives good things without asking, the petition is not superfluous. The faith that he will receive is a form of prayer stored up in a gnostic fashion. The holiness of the gnostic is a responsive feeling of loyalty on the part of a friend of God. True worship is characterised both by will and knowledge.<sup>1</sup> God answers our thoughts. Character in relation to duty is tested by prayer. We send up our prayers to God without a voice. As light arises out of the east, we pray towards the east. The gnostic is united to the Spirit by the bond of infinite love. He maintains contemplation without ceasing by self-discipline. He possesses boldness of utterance, and conceals nothing from fear or from a desire to please. He is incapable alike of giving way to corruption or temptation. He is untouched either by pleasure or pain. If reason calls, he is an inflexible judge and walks in the paths of justice. He is persuaded that all things are administered for the best. He has no anxiety about the necessities of life. He prays that he may never fall away from virtue. His knowledge of God is a guarantee that his virtue will not be lost. Hence the gnostic alone is pious. He already possesses the future. As the physician co-operates with the patient for his health, God co-operates with the gnostic for knowledge and right action. Having done his part, like the athlete in the story, he can claim that God should do His. The whole world contributes to the salvation of the gnostic who has conscientiously fulfilled his duty. His whole life is a holy festival. His sacrifices are prayer and praise and the reading of the Scriptures by day and by night. He is one with the divine choir. He prays everywhere without ostentation, for his thought is a prayer.<sup>2</sup> Such an one need not take an oath; his life is a security against falsehood. By his actions he swears faithfully, so that the witness of

<sup>1</sup> vii. 7<sup>35, 42</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vii. 7<sup>43, 49</sup>.



his tongue is a superfluity. He will die under torture rather than lie.<sup>1</sup> He thinks truly and speaks truly, though, when occasion demands it, as a physician to the sick, he may lie, stooping to accommodation for the sake of others. To him a lie is no idle word, but a force for wickedness. He witnesses to the truth both in word and deed. From this summary account of gnostic piety it is plain that the Christian is neither an atheist nor given to impiety.<sup>2</sup>

Knowledge is a perfection, as it were, of man as man, and by it truth is perfected. By faith the knowledge of God grows. This is the foundation of knowledge. Christ is both the foundation and the superstructure. Faith and love cannot be taught; knowledge can be transmitted and taught. Faith, knowledge, love, the heavenly inheritance, are the four ascending grades. By knowledge those fitted for it learn the nature of the life to be, and its purifications and honours, with everlasting contemplation of the Lord and fellowship with Him as its crown. Faith, then, is a summary knowledge of essentials; but knowledge is a firm demonstration of the things received through faith. As the gnostic has advanced from faith to knowledge, and from knowledge to love, so after having reached the highest stage in the flesh, he goes on advancing unto the Father's house.<sup>3</sup> The gnostic has a true conception of the universe. He has a unique understanding of the commandments. He never prefers the pleasant to the expedient. He has an unshaken conviction that whatever may befall him may be a means of salvation. He uses the creatures of God with thanksgiving. He does not dwell on his wrongs, but rather pities his fellows because of their ignorance. He looks to noble examples,—above all, to that of the Lord. Like the body of the athlete, his soul is in tiptop condition. It is an image of the divine power, and becomes a temple of the Holy Spirit. He fears no apparent or external danger. He is not irrationally brave. A true martyr, he does not rush into danger without cause, but taking care of himself in accordance with reason, he willingly surrenders himself at the call of God. He obeys the call of God from no low motive, but simply from love to Him. By love he grows to the "perfect man," and takes rank as a son of God. The vision of God face to face is his highest goal

<sup>1</sup> vii. 8<sup>51</sup>.<sup>2</sup> vii. 9<sup>52, 54</sup>.<sup>3</sup> vii. 10<sup>55, 59</sup>.

and attainment.<sup>1</sup> He is just in all his relations to others. He assists his brother, not giving to all equally but according to desert. He gives even to his enemies. As God is the enemy of no one, so is the gnostic. He is truly continent. He is not merely master of his passions but of what is good; for the scientific possession of good is "the science of things divine and human." He eats and drinks and marries, not as if such things were principal ends, but from necessity. By his knowledge the soul is separated from passion, so that it can say, "I live as thou willest." And he who pleases God is well-pleasing to good men. Only One is free from desire, the Lord who for us became man. We can only gain a like stamp by training. The gnostic gains life by knowledge; ignorance produces atrophy in the soul. All his life is prayer and fellowship with God. What is inexpedient he does not ask; what is expedient he receives at once with his thought. He prays for the repentance of those who hate him. The future is the real to him. He fasts always from the love of money and pleasure, from deeds condemned by the Law and thoughts alien to the Gospel. He honours the resurrection of the Lord in his inner life. He can look on beauty without carnal desire. His brethren are those who choose, learn, remember, hope for the same things as he does. Thought spent on food is to him a robbery of higher things. As a "stranger and pilgrim," he lives in the city as if it were a desert. His surroundings do not affect him. In brief, he makes up for the absence of the apostles by upright living, by accurate knowledge, by help of the deserving, by removing "mountains" from his neighbours. He impoverishes himself for the sake of others, for he has a grasp of realities. By knowledge he becomes, as it were, a partner of the divine will. He prays with angels, as equal to angels. He prays that he may live in the flesh as one free from flesh. In fellowship with Christ hereafter he hopes to become all light himself, and not luminous by sharing in fire. Day and night he rejoices exceedingly, speaking and doing the commandments of the Lord. He is patient under trial.<sup>2</sup> He forgives those who have sinned against him, for he regards all men as the work of One Will. His prayer is a demand, not a request. He prays that the wants of the needy may be supplied, and thus assists them without ostentation or vain-

<sup>1</sup> vii. II<sup>60,68</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> vii. I2<sup>69,80</sup>.

glory, as being only an instrument of the goodness of God. He is the temple of God, God-bearing and God-borne. So much to the Greeks about the gnostic.<sup>1</sup>

Of the apathy of the gnostic—I mean, his progression from faith through love to the perfect man—I note but one scriptural passage, out of many, from the divine apostle in the First Epistle to the Corinthians.<sup>2</sup> From this it is evident that the gnostic should suffer wrong rather than inflict wrong in retaliation, for that were to do wrong himself. How could one “judge angels”—that is, the apostate angels—if himself an apostate from the Gospel precept as to the forgetfulness of wrong? “Ye defraud your brethren.”<sup>3</sup> That is, by praying against them, ye defraud them of the goodness of God.<sup>4</sup> “Wrong-doers shall not inherit the kingdom of God.”<sup>5</sup> That is, those who seek revenge in deed or word or thought. “Ye washed yourselves.”<sup>6</sup> That is, with knowledge you flung aside the passions of the soul. “Ye were sanctified,”<sup>7</sup> as with a holiness higher than this world. “God shall destroy them.”<sup>8</sup> That is, those who live as if they were born to eat. “He that is joined to a harlot (the activity contrary to the covenant) unto one flesh (unto a heathenish life) becomes another body,” which is not holy. “He that is joined to the Lord” is a spiritual body.<sup>9</sup> That is, he is wholly a son, passionless, gnostic, being formed by the teaching of the Lord. So much for those who have ears to hear. We are to be perfect as the Father in heaven, perfect in forgiving sins and forgetting wrongs, perfect as He would have us be. For it is not possible for any one to be perfect as God is.<sup>10</sup>

“We ought not to believe,” you say, “because of the variety and dissonance of the sects.”<sup>11</sup> That is an idle pretext. It cannot be defended on any practical grounds, and is condemned by analogy. It regards as false or unprovable what we regard as fundamental, that there is truth, that it has its own criterion, that the Scriptures are from God, and as such have a demonstration of their own. This is ignored by the heretics who have broken away from the

<sup>1</sup> vii. 13<sup>81,88</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> I Cor. vi.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., vi. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., vi. 8.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., vi. 9.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., vi. 11.

<sup>7</sup> Ib.

<sup>8</sup> Ib., vi. 13.

<sup>9</sup> Ib., vi. 16, 17.

<sup>10</sup> vii. 14<sup>84,88</sup>.

<sup>11</sup> For a fuller statement of Clement's discussion of the question, see Lecture II., pp. 57-60.

authoritative possessor of truth, and in their conceit and muddiness of soul cannot see the light of truth. Ignorance is the characteristic of the heathen, conceit of the heretics, knowledge of the Church. In their love of glory and slothfulness they close their ears to the truth. They ignore the antiquity and unity of the Catholic Church.<sup>1</sup> With some remarks on the distinctive characteristics of Jews and heretics, and on the literary form of the Stromateis, the Seventh Book comes to a close.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> vii. 15-17<sup>89,108</sup>,

<sup>2</sup> viii. 18<sup>109,111</sup>.

## APPENDIX D.

## THE ORDER OF THE WRITINGS OF CLEMENT.

As stated on page 10, the hypothesis that the works of Clement were not written in the order commonly held was first started by Wendland. It is supported by Heussi and Harnack, and accepted, without discussion, by Duchesne and Stählin.<sup>1</sup> It is rejected by Bardenhewer, who accepts the view of Zahn.<sup>2</sup> It is ignored by Mayor. Now, it is plain that a hypothesis so supported is one which, on the face of it, it may seem presumptuous to doubt and an impertinence to criticise. But an examination of the reasons adduced, together with the presentation of some grounds that may be adduced to the contrary, may tend at least to cast doubt on the necessity of an unconditional acceptance of it.

In his 'Quæstiones Musonianæ,' published in 1886, in which he proved the dependence of Clement on Musonius, Wendland expressed the opinion that the reference by Clement to a treatise *Περὶ ἐγκρατείας* was due to the fact that the whole was a quotation from Musonius; that Clement had written no work on that subject, but that he had with extraordinary negligence transcribed the passage from Musonius, "dormitans integrum hoc enunciatum ex Musonio transtulit," and thus had ascribed to himself a writing which was really a writing of Musonius. This incredible hypothesis is of interest as showing the attitude of the critic to Clement, but does not otherwise call for comment. In a review of the work of

<sup>1</sup> Duchesne, 'Histoire ancienne de l'Eglise,' p. 337. Stäh., vol. iii. p. lxiii.

<sup>2</sup> I have not been able to see the article of Zahn to which Harnack makes reference. *Op. cit.*, p. 9, note 5.



de Faye<sup>1</sup> he abandoned this hypothesis, and writes as follows: "In Pæd. ii. 94, καθόλου μὲν οὖν εἰ γαμητέον ἢ γάμου εἰς τὸ παντελὲς καθαραυτέον—ἔχεται γὰρ ζητήσεώς καὶ τοῦτο—ἐν τῷ περὶ ἐγκρατείας ἡμῖν δεδῆλωται. Dies problem findet sich nun Strom. ii. 137, ζητοῦμεν δὲ εἰ γαμητέον . . . ausführlich behandelt innerhalb einer Erörterung über ἐγκρατεία, die von Strom. ii. 103 bis zum Ende von Buch III. reicht, aber auch ins vierte übergreift. Und St. iii. 22 heist es ausdrücklich ὁ δὲ περὶ ἐγκρατείας ἡμῖν προβαίνετο λόγος. (Auf die Auseinandersetzung mit gnostischen Enkratiten St. iii., passt weiter die verweisung Pæd. ii. 52<sup>2</sup>). Endlich beziehe ich auf diese Bucher der St., besonders ii. 137-146; iv. 59-65, 125-129, die mit den wörtern ἐν τῷ γαμικῷ διέξιμεν λόγῳ schliessende Aufzählung Paed. iii. 41. Wer die stellen vergleicht und die antike Citirmethode kennt, kann gar nicht an der Beziehung zweifeln. Beachtet man weiter die Praeterita an den beiden ersten, das Futurum an der letzten Stelle, so ergibt sich dass Clemens, als er den Paed. schrieb, bereits einen theil der St. fertig hatte, deren Ausarbeitung er durch den Paed. unterbrach. Dazu stimmt, dass sich nur in St. vi. und vii. je eine Rückweisung auf Prot. und Paed. findet. Man kann zweifeln, ob man den Paed. doch später ansetzen soll als Neumann, 'Der rom. Staat und die Kirche,' i. 100, oder ob die Stelle über die Verfolgungen, St. ii. 125, späterer Zusatz ist."

Heussi puts the matter thus: "Clemens verweist nämlich Pæd. ii. 94 bei der Besprechung der Ehe auf seine ausführliche Erörterung περὶ ἐγκρατείας . . . δεδῆλωται. Das mit diesen Worten umschriebene Problem finden wir nun St. ii. 137, ζητοῦμεν . . . behandelt, innerhalb einer langer Erörterung über die ἐγκρατεία, die von St. ii. 103 bis ins IV. Buch hinein reicht. Ebenso bezieht sich die Verweisung Pæd. ii. 52, δειλήφμεν . . . τάττεται auf St. iii. Schliesslich finden wir Pæd. iii. 41, ἐν τῷ γαμικῷ διέξιμεν λόγῳ einen Hinweis auf die Ausführungen, St. ii. 137, 146; iv. 59-65, 125-129. Die antike Manier zu cit-

<sup>1</sup> Theol. Lit.-Zeit., 1898.

<sup>2</sup> διειλήφμεν δὲ βαθυτέρῳ λόγῳ ὡς ἄρα οὔτε ἐν τοῖς ὀνόμασιν, οὔδε μὴν ἐν τοῖς συνουσιαστικοῖς μορίοις καὶ τῇ κατὰ γάμον συμπλοκῇ, καθ' ὧν κείται τὰ ὀνόματα τὰ περὶ τὴν συνήθειαν οὐ τετριμμένα, ἢ τοῦ ὄντος αἰσχροῦ προσηγορία τάττεται.

iren lässt es äusser Zweifel, dass Clemens an den genannten Stellen im Paed. nicht auf selbständige Werke *περί ἐγκρατείας* u.s.w., verweist, sondern auf die betreffenden Darlegungen in den Str. Die Praeterita an den beiden ersten Stellen, *δεδήλωται, διειλήφμεν* und das Futurum an den dritten Stelle *διέξιμεν* aber beweisen dass Clemens einen Teil der Str. vor dem Paed. geschrieben haben muss.”<sup>1</sup>

Harnack writes as follows: “Hier ist von der Entdeckung Wendlands ausgehen, die Heussi bestätigt hat, dass die 4 ersten Bücher der Stromateis vor dem Pädagog geschrieben sind. Diese Entdeckung wirft nicht nur die bisherige Chronologie des Schriftstellers Clemens, sonder auch die wichtigsten der bisher geltenden Vorstellungen von seinem schriftstellerischen Absichten über denn Haufen. Die Entdeckung ist zuverlässig; denn liegt kein Grund vor, das Zitat in Paedag. ii. 10, 94 (*καθόλου μὲν οὖν ἡ γαμητέον ἡ γαμου εἰς τὸ παντελὲς καθαρευτέον—ἔχεται γὰρ ζητήσεως καὶ τοῦτο—ἐν τῷ περὶ ἐγκρατείας ἡμῖν δεδήλωται*), auf einen anderen Abschnitt zu beziehen als auf die grosse Ausführung, die von Strom. ii. 20, 103, bis in das 4 Buch hineinreicht, s. bes. ii. 23, 137. Nicht anders ist über das Zitat Paedag. ii. 6, 52, *διειλήφμεν*, &c., zu urteilen; es ist das 3 Buch der Stromateis gemeint, und endlich ist der *γαμικὸς λόγος* auf den Paedag. iii. 8, 41, verwiesen wird, in denselben Ausführungen, nämlich Strom. ii. 23, 137, 146; iv. 8, 59-65; iv. 20, 125-129 zu suchen. Besondere Schriften des Clemens *περὶ ἐγκρατείας* (oder über die Ehe) hat nie jemand genannt; kein Zitat findet sich aus ihnen. Dagegen enthalten die betreffenden Abschnitte der Stromateis das im Pädagog Vorausgesetzte. Nun aber beobachtet man weiter, dass der Protrepticus und Pädagog nur in den späteren Büchern der Stromateis zitiert werden (Strom., vi. 1, 1; vii. 4, 22) Gerade aber in den früheren Büchern musste man Verweisungen auf sie oder doch mindestens auf den Pädagog erwarten, wenn sie früher geschrieben wären und wenn die Stromateis den Zweck verfolgten, das im Pädagog Ausgeführte nun in eine höhere Sphäre zu heben. In diesen früheren Büchern der Stromateis aber wird die Aufgabe so angefasst, dass sie in keinem sinne als Fortsetzung erscheint, vielmehr die Aufgaben mit umfasst, die

<sup>1</sup> Z. für W. Th., 1902, p. 474.

im (Protrepticus und) Pädagog behandelt sind. Als Clemens die Stromateis i.-iv. schrieb, hatte er also jene beiden Bücher weder schon geschrieben noch geplant."<sup>1</sup>

From the similarity of the reasons brought forward, it may be assumed that no more cogent grounds can be submitted. As for the absence of reference in the earlier books of the Stromateis to the Pæd., that does not seem an argument of much weight by itself. It might be asked in reply, Why no reference in Strom. v. or in the Pæd. to the earlier books of the Strom.? Or, why no reference in the Pæd. to some of the subjects promised in the Strom., and never discussed?

The essential points in the passages quoted by Wendland, Heussi, and Harnack are these: (1) At the time that the Pæd. was written, Clement had already written on the subject of *ἐγκρατεία*, with special reference to marriage. (2) In that or a cognate treatise he had discussed somewhat elaborately the specific point noted in Pæd. ii. 52. (3) When he had finished the Pæd. he had still in contemplation a special work on the subject of marriage.

As to the last point. That *διεξίμεν* is to be taken in the ordinary future sense there can be no doubt. If this be so, how can the allusion to the *γαμικὸς λόγος* in Pæd. iii. 41 refer to sections in the Stromateis, when, *ex hypothesi*, they had preceded its composition? If we are to give the natural force to *δεδήλωται*, must we not do the same with *διεξίμεν*? It is plain from many indications that the subject had a special interest for Clement, alike on physiological, ethical, psychological, and exegetical grounds. But is it probable, after the detailed discussion in the Stromateis and the Pædagogus, that he should have thought of returning to the subject? Is it not more likely that the sections in the Strom. are the fulfilment of the proposed *γαμικὸς λογός*, and that accordingly the Pæd. preceded the Stromateis? Harnack, it will be noted, while adopting the other arguments, passes by the distinction of tenses.

As to the second point. In Pæd. ii. 52 he states that he had touched at length on the points there noted. But in none of the

<sup>1</sup> Die Chronologie des alt. Lit., vol. ii. pp. 9, 10.

passages referred to by Heussi does he touch directly on the specific points indicated, even where such a discussion might naturally have taken place.<sup>1</sup> The points are referred to definitely and specifically in some sections of the *Pæd.*,<sup>2</sup> but not in the *Strom.* Does not this suggest that the matters alluded to were discussed in another treatise of which we have no further knowledge?

As to the first point. This is the only argument of importance, and it is weighty. That Clement could refer to a section of another work as a separate treatise is, of course, undoubted. That the questions there discussed cover precisely the same ground as that indicated in *Pæd.* ii. 94 is equally undoubted; so that, if no other explanation of the phenomena were possible, and no evidence could be adduced to the contrary, the hypothesis might be accepted unconditionally. But some general grounds as well as some special considerations may be adduced to the contrary. To begin with, it is certain that Clement conceived of a threefold and progressive activity of the Logos, and that the three works as they stand correspond generally to that conception.<sup>3</sup> He had a clear distinction in his own mind between the *Pædagogic* and the *Didactic* function, and in the *Pæd.* sometimes checks his tendency to digress. Again, in *Strom.* vii. 27, he says that it was his method to begin with the uprooting of evil opinions as a preliminary to the mention of the more important principles, and he seems to ground this on the practices of those who are initiated into the mysteries. The analogy between the three stages represented by the *Prot.*, the *Pæd.*, and the *Strom.*, and the three grades of initiation into the mysteries, has often been noted. If that was his principle, is it not probable that he adopted it in his writings? That the *Pædagogus* was designed to be of the nature of a preliminary discipline, he himself expressly states.<sup>4</sup> Further, at the beginning of *Strom.* iv. he sketches with some detail the plan of work which he proposes to follow, and he carries it out, or at least some stages of it, substantially as he

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Str.*, iii. 4<sup>34</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Pæd.*, ii. 10<sup>92, 93</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> τῇ καλῇ συγχρῆται οἰκονομία ὃ πάντα φιλόανθρωπος λόγος, προτρέπων ἀνωθεν, ἔπειτα παιδαγωγῶν, ἐπὶ πᾶσιν ἐκδιδάσκων. *Pæd.*, i. 1<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> *Str.*, vi. 1<sup>1</sup>.

had planned it. Is it probable that he interrupted his design by so long an interval as the writing of the Pæd. must have involved? Moreover, does not the reference in Pæd. ii. 94 imply on this hypothesis that Strom. i.-iv. had been published separately? Clement repeatedly refers to works which he had in contemplation, and which in all probability he never wrote nor published; but what point was there in referring to a work which had been written but not published? And in that case is it not improbable that he should have delayed the plan which he had sketched for an indefinite period, and entered upon Strom. v. without any reference to the previous sections of the work?

As against the hypothesis, the following points may be urged. The manner in which the gnostic is referred to in the Pæd., as contrasted with the manner in which he is referred to in the Strom., is difficult to account for on the hypothesis under consideration. In each of the first four books of the Strom. the word "gnostic" is a technical term, introduced now as a noun, now as an adjective, now as an adverb, without any qualification or explanation.<sup>1</sup> He is delineated at length in relation to God, to his own body, and to his ethical ideals and motives.<sup>2</sup> Clement draws a distinction between simple and gnostic martyrdom,<sup>3</sup> between the reward promised to the simple believer and the gnostic,<sup>4</sup> interprets Psalm viii. 6 of "the perfect man and the gnostic,"<sup>5</sup> and speaks of the apostles as truly gnostic and perfect,<sup>6</sup> and represents Clement of Rome as well as St Paul as delineating the character of the gnostic.<sup>7</sup> In the Pæd. there are only two allusions, but neither in letter nor in spirit are they in harmony with these conceptions. In Pæd. i. 31 he says, with reference to Valentinus, that there "are not, then, some who are gnostics and others who are psychical, but that all are equal and spiritual before the Lord," quoting in proof the words of St Paul in Galatians.<sup>8</sup> In Pæd. i. 52 he speaks of the audacity of those who dare to call themselves "perfect and gnostic" thinking more highly of themselves than Paul. In view of the dis-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Str., i. 10<sup>49</sup>; iii. 6<sup>58</sup>; ii. 18<sup>80</sup>, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Ib., iv. 22<sup>137</sup>; 22<sup>140</sup>; 25<sup>160</sup>, &c.

<sup>5</sup> Ib., iv. 3<sup>8</sup>.

<sup>6</sup> Ib., iv. 9<sup>75</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Ib., iv. 4<sup>15</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Ib., iv. 18<sup>114</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Ib., iv. 17<sup>105</sup>; 16<sup>100, 101</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> Gal. iii. 26, 27.



cussion and the usage in the Strom., is it sufficient explanation to say that the passage is controversial? If the allusions elsewhere had been incidental, that had been sufficient explanation, but not in view of their detailed character. And, moreover, should we not have expected in that case, not a contrast with the modesty of St Paul, but with those who possessed the true gnosis as opposed "to the gnosis falsely so-called," such as we find more than once in the Strom.? In view of the prominence given to the delineation of the gnostic in Strom. iv., it is hard to understand how such statements could have been made in the Pæd. without some qualification such as Clement was fond of adding.

In Pæd. i. 35-52, Clement gives an altogether fanciful exegesis of 1 Cor. iii. 2, seeking to show with quaint lore that the "milk" to which the apostle referred did not mark a lower stage than "meat," but that they represented the same thing. As it is of the nature of a digression, and its elaborate exegesis is not in harmony with the general trend of the Pæd., it may be held all the more certainly to illustrate his thought at the time. But in Strom. i. 179, v. 26, and v. 66, he interprets the words in their natural sense. Is it not more probable that the former marks the earlier stage? And would it not be strange if, after having given the natural interpretation in Strom. i. and the like in Strom. v., he should in the interval have given the unnatural interpretation to be found in Pæd. i. 33-52?

There is a difficulty, no doubt, in accounting for the disappearance of the treatise on *ἐγκρατεία*, on the supposition that it was a separate work. Yet, in view of the loss of other writings of Clement, this objection has less weight than it seems. Of the works named by Eusebius, for example, nothing survives of the 'Discussions on Fasting'; of the 'Ecclesiastical Canon,' only one passage has been preserved. Heussi asks, "Why did he not refer to the work on *ἐγκρατεία*, instead of transcribing it?" Plainly that assumes the point at issue—the identity of the two. But the question suggests a possible solution. If incorporated in a later work, may not that account for its disappearance? Have not "Q" and the "Logia" disappeared as separate works, because incorporated in the Synoptic Gospels? Moreover, on the assump-

tion that *διέξιμεν* is a future, a like difficulty arises in connection with the disappearance of the *γαμικὸς λόγος*. If, on the other hand, the Pæd. was written before the Strom., it may be regarded as embedded in the relative sections of the Strom., ii.-iv. 1. There are difficulties on either hypothesis; but I venture to submit that the case for reversing the traditional view as to the relation between the Pæd. and the earlier books of the Strom. has not been incontrovertibly demonstrated.

According to de Faye, the Stromateis is not to be regarded as representing the last stage of the plan of work intended by Clement. The crown of the work was to be a treatise designated "The Teacher" (*ὁ διδάσκαλος*), which has hitherto been confounded with the Stromateis. The hypothesis is approved by Mayor (pp. xvi, xvii). It received an exhaustive and adverse criticism from Heussi (*Z. f. W. Th.*, 1902), and his conclusions are accepted and regarded as decisive by Harnack (pp. 13-15).

## APPENDIX E.

## LOST WRITINGS OF CLEMENT.

I. EUSEBIUS (H. E., vi. 13, 14), in his account of the writings of Clement, names, in addition to the Stromateis, the Protrepticus, the Pædagogus, and the Quis Dives, the following:—

- (1) *Αἱ Ὑποτυπώσεις*. See pp. 23-25. (Fragments in Stählin, vol. iii. pp. 195-215.)
- (2) *Περὶ τοῦ πάσχα*. (Fragments in Stählin, vol. iii. pp. 216-218.)
- (3) *Διαλέξεις περὶ νηστείας καὶ περὶ καταλαλιᾶς* (of this nothing survives).
- (4) *Ὁ Προτρεπτικὸς εἰς ὑπομονὴν ἢ πρὸς τοὺς νεωστὶ βεβαπτισμένους*. (Cambridge Texts and Studies, vol. v. pp. 47-49 (1897). Stählin, vol. iii. pp. 221-223.) See Lecture V.
- (5) *Κανὼν ἐκκλησιαστικὸς ἢ πρὸς τοὺς Ἰουδαίζοντας*. (Fragment in Stählin, vol. iii. p. 218.) The Judaisers, in the opinion of Harnack, were such as objected to the allegorical interpretation of the Old Testament. 'History of Dogma,' vol. i. p. 292.

II. Not mentioned by Eusebius are:—

- (a) *Περὶ προνοίας*. (Fragments in Stählin, vol. iii. pp. 219-221.)
- (b) *Εἰς τὸν προφήτην Ἀμώς*. (Stählin, vol. iii. p. lxiii.) It is doubtful whether this was a separate work.

III. Writings referred to by Clement himself:—

- (1) *Περὶ ἐγκρατείας*. See Appendix D.
- (2) *Ὁ λόγος γαμικός*. See Appendix D.
- (3) *Περὶ ἀρχῶν καὶ θεολογίας*. (Q. D. 26. Cf. Str., iii. 2<sup>13</sup>; v. 14<sup>140</sup>, &c.) From a comparison of the terms which

he employs in speaking of this work with those employed in speaking of writings that were contemplated, it seems most natural to infer that the work had been completed.

- (4) Περὶ ἀναστάσεως. (Pæd., i. 6<sup>47</sup>, ii. 10<sup>104</sup>.)
- (5) Περὶ προφητείας. (Str., iv. 1<sup>2</sup>, v. 13<sup>88</sup>.)
- (6) Περὶ ψυχῆς. (Str., ii. 20<sup>113</sup>, v. 13<sup>58</sup>.)
- (7) Περὶ τῆς ἀνθρώπου γενέσεως. (Str., iii. 14<sup>95</sup>.)
- (8) Περὶ τοῦ διαβόλου. (Str., iv. 11<sup>85</sup>.)
- (9) Περὶ τῆς εὐχῆς. (Str., iv. 26<sup>171</sup>.)
- (10) Περὶ γενέσεως κόσμου. (Str., vi. 18<sup>168</sup>.)

In all probability the works enumerated 4-9 were intended to be sections of the Strom., and were never written. (Cf. Stäh., vol. iii. pp. lxiv, lxv.)

## APPENDIX F.

## THE BIBLICAL TEXT IN CLEMENT.

THE Canon and Text of the Septuagint represented in the works of Clement are discussed by Stählin in his '*Clemens Alexandrinus und die Septuaginta*' (1901). With regard to the Text, his conclusions are — (1) That in many passages, particularly in the Prophets, the text used by Clement agrees with the revisers, especially with Theodotion; (2) that throughout there is a difference between his text and that of Codex B.

The text of Ecclesiasticus employed by Clement is shown by Hart to be akin to that of the Old Latin.<sup>1</sup> This accounts for many of the deviations from the current text.

The New Testament Text of the Gospels and Acts is the subject of an exhaustive study by Barnard in the Cambridge Series of Texts and Studies (vol. v., 1899). In an Introduction by Professor Burkitt, it is held that the study confirms the conclusion "that the earliest texts of the Gospels are fundamentally Western."

The following note is meant to set forth some of the more distinctive features of the text used by Clement in the Pauline Epistles. To this end it is important to classify the quotations. They may be divided into four classes: I. Quotations where the name of the Epistle is mentioned. II. Quotations where "The Apostle" or Paul is named. III. Quotations for which scriptural authority is alleged or implied. IV. Quotations introduced without reference. Speaking generally, for textual purposes that is the order of merit; but sometimes the fact that a quotation is made from memory may reduce the value of a quotation from a higher

<sup>1</sup> J. H. A. Hart, *Ecclesiasticus*, 1909, pp. 321-346.



to a lower rank, and sometimes from the fact that it occurs in a long passage or is quoted with a ἕως, a quotation in the lower rank may be raised to a higher rank. The importance of attending to such principles of classification may be seen from the following examples, where Clement may be quoted in support of different readings: Class I.—Rom. i. 17 (Str., ii. 6<sup>29</sup>) δικαιοσύνη γάρ (WH.) Class II. (Str., v. 1<sup>3</sup>) δικαιοσυνή δέ. I. Rom. vi. 22 (Str., ii. 22<sup>134</sup>), νυνί (WH.) II. (Str., iv. 3<sup>11</sup>), νῦν. I. 1 Cor. iv. 15 (Str., iii. 15<sup>99</sup>), ἐν Χριστῷ (WH.) II. (Str., v. 1<sup>15</sup>) ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ. I. Eph. v. 28 (Str., iv. 8<sup>64</sup>) ὡς τὰ ἑαυτῶν σώματα. III. (Pæd., iii. 12<sup>94</sup>) ὡς τὰ ἴδια σώματα. I. Col. iii. 12 (Str., iv. 8<sup>66</sup>) οἰκτιρμοῦ (WH.) IV. (Str., iv. 7<sup>55</sup>) οἰκτιρῶν.

The general features of the text of Clement may be indicated under the following heads: (a) The cases in which Clement supports the readings of WH. as against the Textus Receptus; (b) the cases in which he supports the readings of the Textus Receptus as against WH.; (c) The cases in which he supports A when it differs from B; (d) the cases in which he supports B when it differs from A; (e) the cases in which he supports the Neutral Text when it differs from the Western Text; (f) The cases in which he supports the Western Text when it differs from the Neutral Text. Preserving the classification of readings already suggested, I note the following:—

(a) *Romans*: (I.) 7<sup>23</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>21</sup>, 2<sup>14</sup>, 2<sup>17</sup> (twice), 3<sup>22</sup>, 3<sup>26</sup>, 3<sup>29</sup>, 6<sup>15</sup>, 8<sup>11</sup>, 8<sup>15</sup>, 8<sup>36</sup>, 10<sup>3</sup>, 10<sup>9</sup>, 10<sup>15</sup>, 10<sup>19</sup>, 12<sup>2</sup>, 13<sup>3</sup>, 13<sup>9</sup>, 13<sup>11</sup>, 15<sup>29</sup>; (III.) 12<sup>11</sup>, 15<sup>4</sup>, 15<sup>14</sup>. 1 *Corinthians*: (I.) 4<sup>21</sup>, 6<sup>2</sup>, 6<sup>8</sup>, 13<sup>11</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>22</sup>, 2<sup>7</sup>, 2<sup>10</sup> (twice), 2<sup>13</sup>, 2<sup>15</sup>, 3<sup>2</sup>, 3<sup>3</sup>, 3<sup>12</sup>, 4<sup>9</sup>, 4<sup>13</sup>, 5<sup>7</sup> (twice), 6<sup>10</sup>, 7<sup>9</sup>, 7<sup>12</sup>, 7<sup>35</sup>, 7<sup>38</sup> (twice), 7<sup>39</sup>, 8<sup>2</sup> (five times), 8<sup>8</sup>, 8<sup>9</sup>, 8<sup>11</sup> (twice), 10<sup>1</sup>, 10<sup>23</sup>, 10<sup>24</sup>, 10<sup>30</sup>, 11<sup>11</sup>, 11<sup>31</sup>, 11<sup>32</sup>, 12<sup>9</sup>, 12<sup>13</sup>, 13<sup>2</sup> (twice), 13<sup>3</sup>, 14<sup>10</sup> (twice); (III.) 7<sup>34</sup>, 9<sup>22</sup>, 10<sup>3</sup>; (IV.) 7<sup>3</sup>, 7<sup>7</sup> (twice), 11<sup>27</sup> (twice), 15<sup>49</sup>. 2 *Corinthians*: (I.) 3<sup>14</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>12</sup>, 2<sup>16</sup>, 5<sup>3</sup>, 6<sup>4</sup>, 6<sup>14</sup>, 7<sup>11</sup> (twice), 8<sup>12</sup>, 11<sup>3</sup> (twice); (III.) 4<sup>6</sup>. *Galatians*: (II.) 4<sup>7</sup>, 5<sup>19</sup>, 5<sup>21</sup>. *Ephesians*: (I.) 5<sup>22</sup>, 5<sup>23</sup> (twice), 5<sup>25</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>21</sup>, 3<sup>3</sup>, 5<sup>4</sup>, 5<sup>5</sup>; (III.) 5<sup>14</sup>, 6<sup>5</sup>, 6<sup>9</sup>, 6<sup>12</sup>; (IV.) 3<sup>14</sup>, 4<sup>9</sup>. *Philippians*: (I.) 2<sup>21</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>14</sup>, 1<sup>23</sup>, 1<sup>24</sup>, 1<sup>30</sup>, 2<sup>1</sup>, 2<sup>15</sup>, 3<sup>14</sup>, 4<sup>12</sup>, 4<sup>13</sup>. *Colossians*: (I.) 1<sup>10</sup> (twice), 1<sup>26</sup>, 1<sup>27</sup>, 1<sup>28</sup>, 2<sup>2</sup> (twice), 3<sup>11</sup>,

3<sup>12</sup>, 3<sup>14</sup>, 3<sup>15</sup>, 3<sup>18</sup>, 3<sup>22</sup>, 3<sup>25</sup>, 4<sup>1</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>5</sup>, 3<sup>16</sup> (twice); (IV.) 2<sup>11</sup>.  
 1 *Thessalonians*: (II.) 4<sup>8</sup>; (III.) 5<sup>5</sup>, 5<sup>6</sup>; (IV.) 2<sup>4</sup>. *Hebrews*:  
 (I.) 5<sup>12</sup>; (II.) 10<sup>34</sup> (thrice), 10<sup>35</sup>, 10<sup>38</sup>, 11<sup>3</sup>, 11<sup>26</sup>, 11<sup>32</sup> (thrice),  
 12<sup>15</sup>; (III.) 8<sup>11</sup>, 8<sup>12</sup>. 1 *Timothy*: (I.) 5<sup>21</sup>, 6<sup>20</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>9</sup> (twice),  
 6<sup>5</sup>; (III.) 4<sup>12</sup>. 2 *Timothy*: (I.) 3<sup>15</sup>. *Titus*: (I.) 2<sup>3</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>5</sup>  
 (twice); (III.) 1<sup>10</sup>.

(b) *Romans*: (I.) 7<sup>17</sup>, 7<sup>20</sup>; (II.) 8<sup>2</sup>, 8<sup>9</sup>, 8<sup>11</sup>, 8<sup>14</sup>, 8<sup>24</sup>, 10<sup>14</sup>  
 (thrice), 10<sup>17</sup>, 11<sup>22</sup>, 12<sup>2</sup>, 13<sup>9</sup>. 1 *Corinthians*: (I.) 6<sup>9</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>20</sup>,  
 1<sup>23</sup>, 2<sup>16</sup>, 3<sup>8</sup>, 3<sup>10</sup>, 4<sup>11</sup>, 6<sup>10</sup>, 7<sup>6</sup>, 7<sup>10</sup>, 7<sup>38</sup>, 8<sup>8</sup> (twice), 9<sup>4</sup>, 12<sup>9</sup>,  
 13<sup>3</sup>, 15<sup>50</sup>; (III.) 7<sup>33</sup>. 2 *Corinthians*: (II.) 7<sup>11</sup>, 8<sup>12</sup>, 11<sup>3</sup>; (IV.)  
 5<sup>10</sup>, 6<sup>17</sup>. *Galatians*: (I.) 4<sup>19</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>23</sup>, 5<sup>17</sup>, 5<sup>20</sup> (twice), 5<sup>21</sup>,  
 5<sup>23</sup>; (IV.) 6<sup>16</sup>, 6<sup>14</sup>. *Ephesians*: (I.) 4<sup>14</sup>, 5<sup>24</sup>; (II.) 5<sup>5</sup>; (III.)  
 4<sup>26</sup>; (IV.) 2<sup>3</sup>. *Philippians*: (II.) 2<sup>2</sup>, 3<sup>12</sup>. *Colossians*: (I.) 1<sup>10</sup>,  
 3<sup>12</sup>, 3<sup>20</sup>, 3<sup>23</sup>, 3<sup>24</sup> (twice), 3<sup>25</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>3</sup>, 2<sup>4</sup>, 3<sup>16</sup>. 1 *Thessa-*  
*lonians*: (II.) 2<sup>7</sup> (twice), 4<sup>6</sup>, 4<sup>8</sup> (twice). *Hebrews*: (I.) 5<sup>12</sup>;  
 (II.) 10<sup>34</sup> (twice), 10<sup>37</sup>, 11<sup>32</sup> (twice), 11<sup>37</sup>, 11<sup>38</sup>. 1 *Timothy*:  
 (II.) 2<sup>9</sup>; (IV.) 4<sup>2</sup>, 4<sup>3</sup>. 2 *Timothy*: (I.) 3<sup>16</sup>. *Titus*: (I.) 2<sup>3</sup>,  
 2<sup>5</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>12</sup>.

(c) *Romans*: (I.) 3<sup>8</sup>, 7<sup>20</sup>, 8<sup>11</sup>, 16<sup>19</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>21</sup>, 1<sup>27</sup>, 3<sup>22</sup>,  
 6<sup>21</sup>, 8<sup>28</sup>, 10<sup>15</sup>. 1 *Corinthians*: (I.) 13<sup>11</sup>; (II.) 6<sup>10</sup>, 8<sup>3</sup>, 8<sup>8</sup>,  
 12<sup>9</sup>, 12<sup>10</sup>; (IV.) 2<sup>9</sup>, 15<sup>49</sup>. 2 *Corinthians*: (II.) 1<sup>10</sup>, 5<sup>3</sup>, 7<sup>11</sup>,  
 13<sup>5</sup>; (III.) 6<sup>15</sup>, 6<sup>16</sup>. *Galatians*: (II.) 2<sup>20</sup>, 4<sup>2</sup>, 5<sup>20</sup>; (III.) 6<sup>2</sup>.  
*Ephesians*: (I.) 5<sup>24</sup>; (III.) 4<sup>32</sup>; (IV.) 6<sup>12</sup>. *Philippians*: (I.)  
 2<sup>21</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>9</sup>, 1<sup>24</sup> (twice), 3<sup>15</sup>. *Colossians*: (I.) 1<sup>9</sup>, 3<sup>11</sup>, 3<sup>22</sup>  
 (twice), 3<sup>23</sup>, 4<sup>37</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>16</sup>, 3<sup>17</sup>. 1 *Thessalonians*: (II.) 4<sup>7</sup>, 4<sup>8</sup>;  
 (III.) 5<sup>19</sup>.

(d) *Romans*: (II.) 3<sup>29</sup>, 8<sup>24</sup>, 10<sup>3</sup>, 10<sup>9</sup>, 12<sup>2</sup>, 13<sup>9</sup>, 13<sup>12</sup>;  
 (III.) 15<sup>4</sup>; (IV.) 3<sup>5</sup>, 13<sup>13</sup>. 1 *Corinthians*: (I.) 4<sup>21</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>10</sup>,  
 6<sup>13</sup> (εως), 8<sup>6</sup>, 8<sup>8</sup>, 12<sup>10</sup>, 13<sup>3</sup>, 13<sup>5</sup>, 14<sup>6</sup> (twice); (IV.) 11<sup>27</sup>.  
 2 *Corinthians*: (II.) 1<sup>12</sup>; (IV.) 5<sup>10</sup>, 8<sup>12</sup> (εξῆς). *Galatians*: (II.)  
 3<sup>24</sup>, 3<sup>28</sup> (twice), 4<sup>3</sup>, 4<sup>6</sup>, 5<sup>17</sup>; (III.) 6<sup>2</sup>. *Ephesians*: (II.) 4<sup>24</sup>,  
 5<sup>4</sup>; (III.) 4<sup>25</sup>, 6<sup>1</sup>, 6<sup>5</sup>; (IV.) 2<sup>4</sup>. *Philippians*: (II.) 1<sup>10</sup>, 1<sup>23</sup>,  
 2<sup>2</sup>, 3<sup>12</sup>. *Colossians*: (I.) 1<sup>27</sup>, 3<sup>14</sup>, 3<sup>21</sup>, 3<sup>25</sup>, 4<sup>2</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>7</sup>, 3<sup>5</sup>,  
 3<sup>6</sup>, 3<sup>16</sup>; (IV.) 3<sup>1</sup>, 3<sup>10</sup>. 1 *Thessalonians*: (II.) 2<sup>5</sup>, 4<sup>4</sup>; (III.)  
 5<sup>13</sup>, 5<sup>15</sup>, 5<sup>21</sup>. *Hebrews*: (I.) 5<sup>12</sup>.

(e) *Romans*: (I.) 8<sup>13</sup>, 8<sup>15</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>26</sup>, 3<sup>22</sup>, 8<sup>37</sup>, 8<sup>38</sup>, 9<sup>14</sup>, 13<sup>11</sup>,  
 13<sup>14</sup>, 14<sup>2</sup>; (III.) 12<sup>11</sup>, 12<sup>13</sup>. 1 *Corinthians*: (I.) 6<sup>1</sup>, 13<sup>11</sup>  
 (twice); (II.) 2<sup>10</sup>, 3<sup>2</sup>, 3<sup>3</sup> (twice), 4<sup>13</sup>, 7<sup>10</sup>, 7<sup>12</sup>, 7<sup>14</sup> (εως), 7<sup>23</sup>,

8<sup>2</sup> (twice), 8<sup>13</sup>, 10<sup>20</sup>, 10<sup>31</sup>, 11<sup>21</sup>, 11<sup>32</sup>, 12<sup>10</sup>, 12<sup>11</sup>, 14<sup>10</sup>; (III.) 7<sup>34</sup>; (IV.) 11<sup>23</sup>, 15<sup>50</sup> (twice). 2 *Corinthians*: (I.) 3<sup>14</sup>; (II.) 1<sup>12</sup>, 2<sup>16</sup>, 5<sup>1</sup>, 5<sup>3</sup>; (IV.) 6<sup>16</sup>. *Galatians*: (II.) 3<sup>24</sup>, 5<sup>13</sup>, 5<sup>19</sup>, 5<sup>21</sup>, 5<sup>23</sup>; (III.) 5<sup>25</sup>. *Ephesians*: (II.) 4<sup>19</sup> (twice), 4<sup>24</sup>, 4<sup>29</sup>, 5<sup>4</sup>, 5<sup>14</sup>; (III.) 6<sup>5</sup>; (IV.) 2<sup>4</sup>, 3<sup>14</sup>. *Philippians*: (II.) 1<sup>23</sup>, 3<sup>12</sup>; (IV.) 2<sup>11</sup>, 4<sup>8</sup>. *Colossians*: (I.) 1<sup>27</sup>, 3<sup>11</sup>, 3<sup>18</sup>, 3<sup>19</sup>, 3<sup>21</sup>, 4<sup>1</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>6</sup>, 3<sup>17</sup>. 1 *Thessalonians*: (II.) 2<sup>6</sup>; (III.) 5<sup>5</sup>.

(f) *Romans*: (II.) 1<sup>27</sup>, 5<sup>12</sup>, 14<sup>16</sup>. 1 *Corinthians*: (I.) 15<sup>32</sup>; (II.) 2<sup>10</sup>, 2<sup>15</sup>, 7<sup>38</sup>, 8<sup>8</sup>, 12<sup>10</sup>, 13<sup>3</sup>, 14<sup>11</sup>; (III.) 9<sup>22</sup>; (IV.) 3<sup>19</sup>. *Galatians*: (I.) 4<sup>19</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>19</sup>, 5<sup>23</sup>. *Ephesians*: (I.) 4<sup>13</sup>, 5<sup>23</sup>; (II.) 4<sup>18</sup>, 4<sup>19</sup>; (III.) 4<sup>26</sup>, 4<sup>31</sup>. *Colossians*: (I.) 1<sup>28</sup>; (II.) 3<sup>17</sup>.

From these details it would appear that (a) The text of Clement agrees with that of WH. where it differs from the Textus Receptus  $\pm$  166 times; that it agrees with the Textus Receptus as against WH.  $\pm$  87 times; that it agrees with  $\aleph$ , where it differs from B  $\pm$  47 times; that it agrees with B as against  $\aleph$   $\pm$  58 times; that it agrees with the Neutral Text as against the Western Text  $\pm$  70 times; that it agrees with the Western Text as against the Neutral Text  $\pm$  24 times. Further, it appears that there is a majority for WH. in each of the groups of passages; that there is a majority for B as against  $\aleph$  in all the groups save the first; that there is a majority for the Neutral Text as against the Western Text in all the groups; that in Galatians and 1 Thess. the Textus Receptus exceeds the text of WH., but the fewness of the references impairs the weight of such a comparison; and that the same may be said of the evidence of 2 Tim. and Titus.

How mixed the text of Clement is may be seen from the following illustration. The following is his text of Col. iii. 16-iv. 1 (verses 16, 17 are quoted as from "the Apostle"; vv. iii. 18-iv. 1 are quoted as from the Epistle to the Colossians, and from their length must have been transcribed):—

ὁ γὰρ λόγος ὁ τοῦ κυρίου ἐνοικεῖτω ἐν ὑμῖν πλουσίως, ἐν πάσῃ σοφίᾳ διδάσκοντες καὶ νουθετοῦντες ἑαυτοὺς ψαλμοῖς, ὕμνοις, ᾠδαῖς πνευματικαῖς ἐν τῇ χάριτι, ᾄδοντες ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ ὑμῶν τῷ θεῷ· καὶ πᾶν ὃ τι ἂν ποιῇτε ἢ ἐν λόγῳ ἢ ἐν ἔργῳ, πάντα ἐν ὀνόματι κυρίου Ἰησοῦ, εὐχαριστοῦντες τῷ θεῷ καὶ πατρὶ

αὐτον (Pæd., ii. 4<sup>48</sup>). αἱ γυναῖκες ὑποτάσσεσθε τοῖς ἀνδράσιν, ὡς ἀνήκει ἐν κυρίῳ. οἱ ἄνδρες, ἀγαπάτε τὰς γυναῖκας καὶ μὴ πικραίνεσθε πρὸς αὐτάς· τὰ τέκνα ὑπακούετε τοῖς γονεῦσι κατὰ πάντα. τοῦτο γὰρ εὐάρεστον τῷ κυρίῳ. οἱ πατέρες, μὴ ἐρεθίζετε τὰ τέκνα ὑμῶν ἵνα μὴ ἀθυμῶσιν. οἱ δούλοι, ὑπακούετε κατὰ πάντα τοῖς κατὰ σάρκα κυρίοις, μὴ ἐν ὀφθαλμοδουλείαις ὡς ἀνθρωπάρεσκοι, ἀλλ' ἐν ἀπλότῃ καρδίας φοβούμενοι τὸν κύριον. καὶ πᾶν ὃ ἐὰν ποιῇτε, ἐκ ψυχῆς ἐργάζεσθε ὡς τῷ κυρίῳ δουλεύοντες καὶ οὐκ ἀνθρώποις, εἰδότες ὅτι ἀπὸ κυρίου ἀπολήψεσθε τὴν ἀνταπόδοσιν τῆς κληρονομίας. τῷ γὰρ κυρίῳ Χριστῷ δουλεύετε· ὁ γὰρ ἄδικος κομίζεται ὃ ἡδίκησεν καὶ οὐκ ἔστι προσωποληψία. οἱ κύριοι τὸ δίκαιον καὶ τὴν ἰσότητα τοῖς δούλοις παρέχετε, εἰδότες ὅτι καὶ ὑμεῖς ἔχετε κύριον ἐν οὐρανῷ (Str., iv. 8<sup>65</sup>).

The following points may be noted :—

- (a) Clement agrees with WH. as against the Textus Receptus in the following. He omits *και* before *υμνοις* and *ωδαις*, and reads *τω θεω* for *τω κυριω* (v. 16). He omits *ιδιους* (v. 18), reads *τον κυριον* for *τον θεον* (v. 22), *ο* for *ο τι* (v. 23), *ο γαρ* for *ο δε* (v. 25), *εν ουρανω* for *εν ουρανοις* (iv.<sup>1</sup>).
- (b) He agrees with the Textus Receptus as against WH. in the following. He reads *εν τη καρδια* for *εν ταις καρδιαις* (v. 16), *και πατρι* (v. 17), *τω κυριω* for *εν κυριω* (v. 20), *και παν* (v. 23), *αποληψεσθε* for *απολημψεσθε*, inserts *γαρ* after *τω* (v. 24), and has *προσωποληψια* for *προσωπολημψια* (v. 25).
- (c) He agrees with *κ* as against B in reading *του κυριου* for *του Χριστου* (v. 16), *αν* for *εαν* (v. 17), *εν οφθαλμοδουλειαις* (*κ* *οφθαλμοδουλιας*) for *εν οφθαλμοδουλεια*, *αλλ'* for *αλλα* (v. 22). Unlike B, he does not omit *και* (v. 23).
- (d) He agrees with B as against *κ* in reading *εν τη χαριτι* for *εν χαριτι* (v. 16), *ερεθιζετε* for *παροργιζετε* (v. 21), *κομισεται* for *κομιεται* (v. 25).
- (e) He differs from the Western Text in the following. He puts *και* before *παν* (v. 17). He does not insert *υμων* (v. 18).

He does not insert *υμων* after *γυναικας* (v. 19). He differs from it in reading *ερεθιζετε* (v. 21) and *εν ουρανω* (iv. 1).

(f) He agrees with the Western Text in putting *και* before *πατρι* (v. 17).

He differs from all three types of text in reading *αυτου* for *δι' αυτου* (v. 17), in omitting *εστιν* after *ευαρεστον* (v. 20), in reading *αδικος* for *αδικων* (v. 25), and *παρεχετε* for *παρεχεσθε* (iv. 1).<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This note is based on Tischendorf, but with alterations in accordance with the text of Stählin. V. Soden gives authorities for all the variants last noted, except *αδικος*.



## APPENDIX G.

## NON-CANONICAL SAYINGS IN THE WRITINGS OF CLEMENT.

THE following are the more important or interesting. They may be thus classified:—

## I. Where the authority is cited.

(a) Gospel according to the Hebrews.<sup>1</sup>

1. He that wonders shall reign, and he that reigns shall rest.
2. He that seeketh shall not stop until he finds, and when he has found he shall be astonished; and when he has been astonished he shall reign, and when he has reigned he shall rest.<sup>2</sup>

## (b) Gospel according to the Egyptians.

1. When Salome inquired as to when the matters about which she asked should be known, the Lord said, When ye shall tread under foot the garment of shame, and when the two shall be made one, and the male with the female neither male nor female.<sup>3</sup>
2. To the inquiry of Salome, How long shall death reign? the Lord said, As long as ye women bear children.<sup>4</sup>
3. (Elsewhere this saying is quoted in the form, How

<sup>1</sup> ἢ κὰν τῷ καθ' Ἑβραίους εὐαγγελίῳ, ὃ θαυμάσας βασιλεύσει, γέγραπται, καὶ ὁ βασιλεύσας ἀναπαύσεται (Str., ii. 9<sup>45</sup>).

<sup>2</sup> οὐ παύσεται ὁ ζητῶν ἕως ἂν εὕρῃ· εὕρων δὲ θαμβηθήσεται, θαμβηθεὶς δὲ βασιλεύσει, βασιλεύσας δὲ ἐπαναπαύσεται (Str., v. 14<sup>46</sup>). This saying is found in an imperfect form in the Oxyrhyncus Papyri, vol. iv. p. 4.

<sup>3</sup> πυνθανομένης τῆς Σαλώμης πότε γνωσθήσεται τὰ περὶ ἧν ἤρετο, ἔφη ὁ κύριος· ἕταν τὸ τῆς αἰσχύνης ἐνδυμα πατήσητε καὶ ἕταν γένηται τὰ δύο ἐν καὶ τὸ ἄρρεν μετὰ τῆς θηλείας οὔτε ἄρρεν οὔτε θῆλυ (Str., iii. 13<sup>42</sup>).

<sup>4</sup> τῇ Σαλώμῃ ὁ κύριος πυνθανομένη, μέχρι πότε θάνατος ἰσχύσει· . . . μέχρις ἂν, εἶπεν, ὑμεῖς αἱ γυναῖκες τίκτετε (Str., iii. 6<sup>42</sup>. Cf. Ex. Theod., 67).

long shall men die? and with the addition.) Then when she said, I did well, therefore, in that I have not borne children, the Lord answered, saying, Eat every herb, but that which has bitterness, do not eat.<sup>1</sup>

4. (The heretics say that) the Saviour Himself said, I came to destroy the works of the female.<sup>2</sup>

(c) The Preaching of Peter.<sup>3</sup>

1. Wherefore Peter says that the Lord said to His disciples, If, then, any one of Israel wills to repent and to believe in God through My name, his sins shall be forgiven to him. But after twelve years go ye forth into the world, that no one may say we have not heard.<sup>4</sup>
2. Accordingly, in the Preaching of Peter the Lord says to the disciples after the resurrection, I chose you twelve, having judged you to be disciples worthy of Me.<sup>5</sup>

II. Where the authority is not designated.

1. Not enviously did the Lord announce in a certain Gospel, My mystery is for Me and the sons of My house.<sup>6</sup>
2. Moses said, I am smoke from an earthen pot.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> φαμένης γὰρ αὐτῆς, καλῶς οὖν ἐποίησα μὴ τεκοῦσα, ἀμείβεται λέγων ὁ κύριος· πᾶσαν φάγε βοτάνην, τὴν δὲ πικρίαν ἔχουσιν μὴ φάγῃς (Str., iii. 9<sup>66</sup>).

<sup>2</sup> αὐτὸς εἶπεν ὁ σωτὴρ· ἦλθον καταλῦσαι τὰ ἔργα τῆς θηλείας (Str., iii. 9<sup>68</sup>).

<sup>3</sup> For the Preaching of Peter, see Dobschütz, 'Das Kerugma Petri,' (T. u. U.), vol. xi. 1894.

<sup>4</sup> διὰ τοῦτό φησιν ὁ Πέτρος εἰρηκέναι τὸν κύριον τοῖς ἀποστόλοις· ἐὰν μὲν οὖν τις θελήσῃ τοῦ Ἰσραὴλ μετανοήσας, διὰ τοῦ ὀνόματός μου πιστεῦειν ἐπὶ τὸν θεόν, ἀφεθήσονται αὐτῷ αἱ ἁμαρτίαι· μετὰ δὲ δώδεκα ἔτη ἐξέλθετε εἰς τὸν κόσμον, μή τις εἴπῃ· οὐκ ἠκούσαμεν (Str., vi. 6<sup>43</sup>).

<sup>5</sup> αὐτίκα ἔν τῳ Πέτρου κηρύγματι ὁ κύριός φησι πρὸς τοὺς μαθητὰς μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν· ἐξελεξάμεν ὑμᾶς δώδεκα, μαθητὰς κρίνας ἀξίους ἐμοῦ (Str., vi. 6<sup>48</sup>). This is the form in which the saying is quoted by Potter and Resch, p. 393. Dobschütz, pp. 22, 23, and Stählin include some lines that follow.

<sup>6</sup> οὐ γὰρ φθονῶν, φησί, παρήγγειλεν ὁ κύριος ἐν τινι εὐαγγελίῳ· μυστήριον ἐμὸν ἐμοὶ καὶ τοῖς υἱοῖς τοῦ οἴκου μου (Str., v. 10<sup>63</sup>). See Resch, 'Agrapha,' pp. 167-169; Ropes, 'Die Sprüche Jesu,' pp. 94-96. They compare Isa. xxiv. 16 (LXX., Symmachus and Theodotion).

<sup>7</sup> ἐγὼ δὲ εἰμι ἄτμις ἀπὸ χύτρας (Str., iv. 16<sup>106</sup>). From Clem., '1 Epis.,' c. 17. See note in Lightfoot.

## III. Passages quoted as Scripture.

1. There are those who stretch the looms and weave nothing, says the Scripture.<sup>1</sup>
2. Naturally, then, the Scripture exhorts us, Be ye approved money-changers.<sup>2</sup>
3. Ask, says the Scripture, and I will do; think, and I will give.<sup>3</sup>
4. She has brought forth, and she has not brought forth, says the Scripture.<sup>4</sup>

## IV. Passages quoted as from a prophet or prophecy.

1. They are fighters, strikers with their tails, according to the Prophet.<sup>5</sup>
2. A certain prophecy says, For, then, affairs here turn out ill when men put their trust in images.<sup>6</sup>
3. The land of Jacob was praised above the whole land, says the Prophet.<sup>7</sup>

V. Passages quoted with *φησί*.

1. Thou hast seen thy brother, it is said, thou hast seen thy God.<sup>8</sup>
2. Ask, it is said, the great things, and the small shall be added unto you.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> οὗτοι οἱ τὰ κατάρτια κατασπῶντες καὶ μηθὲν ὑφαίνοντες, φησὶν ἡ γραφή (Str., i. 8<sup>41</sup>). Resch, *op. cit.*, pp. 226, 227; Ropes, *op. cit.*, pp. 31, 32.

<sup>2</sup> εἰκότως ἔρα καὶ ἡ γραφή . . . παραινέει γίνεσθε δὲ δόκιμοι τραπεζίται (Str., i. 28<sup>177</sup>. Cf. ii. 4<sup>16</sup>; vi. 10<sup>81</sup>; vii. 15<sup>90</sup>). Cf. Resch, pp. 233-239; Ropes, pp. 141-143; Westcott, 'Introduction to the Study of the Gospels,' 8 p. 458.

<sup>3</sup> αἰτήσαι, φησὶν ἡ γραφή, καὶ ποιήσω· ἐννοήθητι καὶ δώσω (Str., vi. 12<sup>101</sup>. Cf. vi. 9<sup>78</sup>; vii. 7<sup>41</sup>; vii. 12<sup>73</sup>).

<sup>4</sup> τέτοκεν καὶ οὐ τέτοκεν, φησὶν ἡ γραφή (Str., vii. 16<sup>94</sup>). The saying is quoted as from Ezekiel by Tertullian, 'De Carne Christ,' c. 23. Stählin compares Job xxi. 10.

<sup>5</sup> πολεμισταί, πληκται ταῖς οὐραῖς αὐτῶν (Str., iii. 18<sup>106</sup>. Cf. Rev. ix. 10).

<sup>6</sup> τότε γὰρ φησί τις προφητεία δυστυχήσῃ τὰ τῇδε πράγματα, ὅταν ἀνδριᾶσι πιστεύσωσιν (Prot., x. 98).

<sup>7</sup> ἦν ἡ γῆ τοῦ Ἰακώβ ἐπαίνουμένη παρὰ πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν, φησὶν ὁ προφήτης (Str., iii. 12<sup>86</sup>). Potter refers to Zeph. iii. 19.

<sup>8</sup> εἶδες γάρ, φησί, τὸν ἀδελφόν σου, εἶδες τὸν θεόν σου (Str., i. 19<sup>94</sup>; ii. 15<sup>70</sup>). Resch, p. 296; Ropes, p. 49. Cf. Gen. xxxiii. 10.

<sup>9</sup> αἰτείσθε γάρ, φησί, τὰ μεγάλα, καὶ τὰ μικρὰ ὑμῖν προστεθήσεται (Str., i. 24<sup>158</sup>). Resch, p. 230; Ropes, p. 140. Cf. Matt. vi. 33.

3. In whatsoever things, it is said, I may find you, in those will I also judge you.<sup>1</sup>

#### VI. Sayings of the Lord.

1. Again the Lord says, He that is married, let him not cast away (his wife); and he that is not married, let him not marry.<sup>2</sup>
2. Wherefore the Saviour says, Be saved, thou and thy soul.<sup>3</sup>

#### VII. Of uncertain origin.

1. For those that cleave to them (the saints) shall be sanctified.<sup>4</sup>
2. Behold a man and his works before his face. For behold God and his works.<sup>5</sup>

#### VIII. From the Traditions of Matthias.

1. Wonder at that which is before you.<sup>6</sup>
2. They say in the Traditions that Matthias the Apostle used to say, as opportunity offered, If the neighbour of an elect man sin, the elect man sinned; for if he had conducted himself as the Word dictates, his neighbour would have so revered his life that he would not have sinned.<sup>7</sup>

#### IX. Additions to the Canonical Text.

1. The Apostle of the Lord, exhorting the Macedonians, becomes interpreter of the divine

<sup>1</sup> 'εφ' οἷς γὰρ ἂν εὕρω ὑμᾶς, φησὶν, ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ κρινῶ (Q. D., 40). Ropes, p. 141.

<sup>2</sup> πάλιν ὁ κύριός φησιν· ὁ γήμας μὴ ἐκβαλλέτω καὶ ὁ μὴ γαμήσας μὴ γαμέτω (Str., iii. 14<sup>98</sup>). Resch, p. 429; "perhaps from the Gospel according to the Egyptians" (Stählin). Cf. 1 Cor. vii. 21.

<sup>3</sup> διὰ τοῦτο λέγει ὁ σωτήρ· σώζου σὺ καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ σου (Ex. Theod., 2, from Theodotus).

<sup>4</sup> ὅτι οἱ κολλώμενοι αὐτοῖς ἁγιασθήσονται (Str., v. 8<sup>52</sup>). Cf. note in Lightfoot, 'Clement of Rome,' c. 46; Resch, p. 169; Ropes, p. 22.

<sup>5</sup> ἰδοὺ ἄνθρωπος καὶ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ πρὸ προσώπου αὐτοῦ· ἰδοὺ γὰρ ὁ θεὸς καὶ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ (Str., iv. 26<sup>171</sup>). Resch, p. 265; Ropes, p. 45. Cf. Tert., 'De Idolatria,' c. 20, Rev. xxii. 12.

<sup>6</sup> θαύμασον τὰ παρόντα (Str., ii. 9<sup>45</sup>).

<sup>7</sup> ἐὰν ἐκλεκτοῦ γείτων ἁμαρτήσῃ, ἡμαρτεν ὁ ἐκλεκτός· εἰ γὰρ οὕτως ἑαυτὸν ᾔγινωκεν ὡς ὁ λόγος ὑπαγορεύει, κατηδέσθη ἂν αὐτοῦ τὸν βίον καὶ ὁ γείτων εἰς τὸ μὴ ἁμαρτεῖν (Str., vii. 13<sup>82</sup>).

voice, saying, The Lord is at hand: *take care lest we should be found empty.*<sup>1</sup>

2. The saints of the Lord shall inherit the glory of the Lord and His power. What glory, O blessed one, tell me? That glory which eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, and hath not entered into the heart of man. *And they shall rejoice in the kingdom of their Lord for ever.*<sup>2</sup> Amen.

<sup>1</sup> ὁ κύριος ἤγγικεν, λέγων, εὐλαβεῖσθε μὴ καταληφθῶμεν κενοί (Prot., ix. 87). Cf. Zahn, 'Gesch. d. ntl. Kan.,' vol. i. p. 174.

<sup>2</sup> καὶ χαρήσονται ἐπὶ τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ κυρίου αὐτῶν εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας, ἀμήν (Prot., x. 94). Resch, p. 166; Ropes, p. 19. Cf. 1 Cor. ii. 9. "From the Apocalypse of Elias" (Stählin).



## APPENDIX H.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY.

THE fullest account known to me, in English, is that in Richardson, 'Bibliographical Synopsis,' Buffalo, 1887, pp. 38-42. Bardenhewer, 'Geschichte d. altkirk. Litt.,' vol. ii. pp. 15-66, gives a full list under the various questions discussed. A critical estimate of the literature from 1884 to 1900 is given by Ehrhard, 'Die altchrist. Litt. und ihre Erforschung,' vol. i. pp. 293-320. The more important works are noted in Krüger, 'Early Christian Literature,' pp. 162-173 (English translation).

Of editions of the text may be named: Potter, Oxford, 1715, 2 vols. (the standard edition before that of Stählin); Dindorf, Oxford, 1869, 4 vols. ("In every way disappointing, hastily put together," Westcott); Stählin, 1905, 1906, 1909; Hort and Mayor, Strom., vii., 1902 (notes by Hort and Mayor, valuable introduction and appendices by Mayor); Barnard, 'Quis Dives Salvetur,' "Cambridge Texts and Studies," 1897.

*Clement: His Writings and Teaching generally.*—Of the older literature on the subject the most valuable is the 'Dissertationes . . .' of Le Nourry, 1703 (of which extensive use was made by Lumper, 1784). This is reprinted in Migne, 'Patrolog. Graec.,' vol. ix., and in excerpts in Dindorf, vol. iv. Of the literature that appeared in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, the following may be noted: Guerike, 'De Schola quae floruit Alexandriae Catechetica,' 1824, 1825; Kaye, 'Some Account of the Writings and Opinions of Clement of Alexandria,' 1835; Reinkens, 'De Clemente Presbytero Alexandrino,' 1851; Cognat, 'Clément d'Alexandrie, sa doctrine et sa polémique,' 1859; Freppel, 'Clément d'Alexandrie,' 1865, &c.; Bigg, 'The Christian Platonists of Alexandria,' 1886; Lehmann, 'Die Katechetenschule zu Alexandria,' 1896; E. de Faye, 'Clément

d'Alexandrie,' &c., 1898. The relative sections in the Histories of Doctrine, of Harnack, Seeberg, Schwane, Tixeront, Bethune-Baker. The articles in the Dictionary of Christian Biography (Westcott); Herzog, R.E.<sup>2</sup> (Jacobi), R.E.<sup>3</sup> (Bonwetsch); Vacant-Dictionnaire de Theologie Catholique (A. de la Barre); Pauly-Wissowa (Jülicher); 'Encyclopædia Britannica' (Donaldson); Hastings' 'Encyclop. of Religion and Ethics' (Inge); The Patrologies of Möhler, 1840, pp. 430-485; Bardenhewer, 1898, pp. 141-149; Kihn, 1904, pp. 290-307; Presensé, 'The Early Years of Christianity,' vol. ii. pp. 540-566, iii. pp. 256-295; Allen, 'The Continuity of Christian Thought,' 1895, pp. 38-70; Hort, 'Ante-Nicene Lectures,' 1895, pp. 82-92; Chase, 'Norwich Cathedral Lectures,' 1896, pp. 257-290; Hitchcock, 'Clement' (Fathers for English Readers), 1899; Kling, 'Studien und Kritiken,' 1841; Bratke, 'Studien und Kritiken,' 1894; Overbeck, 'Über die Anfänge der patris. Litt.,' Hist. Zeitschrift, 1882; Courdaveaux, 'Rev. de l'histoire des Religions,' 1892; Thomas, 'Revue de Theologie et Philosophie,' 1899; 'Church Quarterly Review,' 1904. On the literary questions see the works noted on p. 22 *et seq.*; Zahn, 'Supplementum Clementinum,' 1884; Harnack, 'Die Chronologie der altchr. Litt.,' vol. ii. pp. 3-23.

*Theology and Philosophy.*—Ritter, 'Geschichte der Christ. Philosophie,' 1841, vol. i. pp. 421-464; Redepenning, 'Origenes,' vol. i. pp. 83-163; Hébert-Duperron, 'Essai sur le polemique et la philosophie de St Clém. d'Al.,' 1855; Huber, 'Philosophie der Kirchenväter,' 1859, pp. 120-149; Schürmann, 'Die Hellenische Bildung und ihr Verhältniss zur Christlich.,' &c., 1859; Möller, 'Geschichte der Kosmologie in der griechischen Kirche,' 1860, pp. 506-535; Müller, 'Idees dogmatiques de Cl. Al.,' 1861; Merk, 'C. A. in seiner Abhängigkeit von der griech. Philosophie,' 1879; Denis, 'La philosophie d'Origène,' 1884; Pascal, 'La Foi et la Raison dans Cl. d'Al.,' 1901; Wagner, 'Wert und Verwertung der griechischen Bildung im Urtheil des C. v. A.,' 1902; Daskolakis, 'Die eklektischen Anschauungen des C. A.,' 1908.

*Person and Work of Christ.*—Dorner, 'Doctrine of the Person of Christ,' vol. i. pp. 285-303; Vacherot, 'Histoire Critique de l'École d'Alex.,' 1846, vol. i. pp. 247-260; Lämmer, 'Cl. Al. de λογῶν doctrina,' 1855; Ziegler, 'Die Logoschristologie des C. A.,' 1894; Aal, 'Gesch. der Logosidee in der Griech. Philos.,' 1899,

vol. ii. pp. 393-427; Kattenbusch, 'Das apostol. Symbol,' 1900, vol. ii. pp. 102-134; Windisch, 'Taufe und Sünde im ältesten Christentum,' 1908, pp. 437-470; Caspari, 'Zeit f. k. W. u. K. Leben,' 1886; Zahn, 'Glaubensregel,' Herzog, R. E.<sup>3</sup>; Höfling, 'Die Lehre d. Cl. von Al. von Opfer im Leben und Cultus,' 1842; Probst, 'Liturgie der drei ersten christlichen Jahrhunderte,' pp. 130-141; Struckmann, 'Die Gegenwart Christi in d. hl. Euchar. n. d. schriftlich. Quellen d. vornizan. Zeit,' 1905, pp. 115-139; Batiffol, 'L'Eucharistie,'<sup>5</sup> 1913, pp. 248-261; Love, 'Bibliotheca Sacra,' 1888; Atzberger, 'Gesch. d. Christl. Eschatologie,' 1896, pp. 335-363; Anrich, 'Klem. und Orig. als Begründer der Lehre von Fegfeuer,' 1902.

*The Ethical Teaching.*—The Histories of Christian Ethics, Luthardt, Gass, and Ziegler; Reuter, 'Clem. Alex. theolog. moral,' 1853; Winter, 'Die Ethik d. Cl. v. Alex.,' 1882; Basilakes, 'Κλήμεντος τοῦ Ἀλεξανδρέως ἡ ἐθικὴ διδασκαλία,' 1892; Ernesti, 'Die Ethik d. T. F. Clem. v. Al.,' 1900; Capitaine, 'Die Moral d. Cl. v. Al.,' 1903; Funk, 'Tüb. Quar.,' 1871; Markgraf, 'Zeit. f. Kirchengesch.,' 1901; Wagner, 'Der Christ und die Welt nach Cl. v. Al.,' 1903.

*Faith and Gnosis.*—Dähne, 'De γνώσει,' 1831; Lentzen, 'Erkennen und Glauben,' 1848, pp. 68-92, 136 *et seq.*; Preische, 'De γνώσει,' 1871; Knittel, "Pistis und Gnosis," Tübing. Quartalsschrift,' 1873; Ziegler, 'Die Psychol. d. C. A.,' 1894; Scherer, 'Klemens v. Al. und seine Erkenntnisprincipien,' 1907; Inge, 'Faith and its Psychology,' 1910, pp. 24-30.

*Scripture: The Canon of Scripture.*—Stählin, 'Cl. Al. und die Septuag.,' 1901; Siegfried, 'Philo v. Alex.,' 1875, p. 343 *et seq.*; Heinisch, 'Der Einfluss Philos auf die älteste Christ. Exegese,' 1908; Charteris, 'Canonicity,' 1880; Zahn, 'Gesch. d. ntl. Kanon,' 1888, vol. i.; Harnack, 'Das neue Test. um das Jahr 200,' 1889; Leipoldt, 'Entstehung d. ntl. Kan.,' 1907; Jacquier, 'Le Nouveau Test. dans l'Eglise Chretienne,' 1911; Sanday, 'Inspiration,' 1893, p. 65 *et seq.*; Barnard, 'Clement of Alexandria's Biblical Text,' 1899; Hillen, 'Clem. Alex. quid de libris sacris novi testamenti sibi persuasum habuerit,' 1867; Eickhoff, 'Cl. Al. und d. N. T.,' 1890; Dausch, 'Der ntl. Schriftcanons und Cl. v. Al.,' 1894; Kutter, 'Cl. Al. u. das N. T.,' 1897.

# INDEX.

- Aal, 106  
 Acts of the Apostles, 224 f.  
 Acts of John, 239  
 Acts of Paul, 239  
 Adam, 120, 254, 291  
 Alexandria, 1 f.  
 Allegory, 194 f., 207 f.  
 Amos, 215, 220  
 Angels, 47 f., 130  
 Annihilation, 132  
 Anthropomorphism, 82 f., 274, 275  
 Apathy, 162 f.  
 Apostle, The, 237 f.  
 Aristobulus, 27, 48.  
 Aristotle, 26, 41  
 Arnim, v., 21, 23  
 Art, 187  
 Astronomy, 290  
 Atheism, 67 f., 250  
 Athenagoras, 6.  
 Augustine, 80.  
 Banquets, 259  
 Baptism, 124 f., 134  
 Barbarians, inventions of, 269 f.  
 Bardenhewer, 10, 11, 14, 21, 301  
 Barnabas, 198, 243 f.  
 Barnard, 21, 134, 182, 311  
 Baruch, 217  
 Basilides, 88, 272, 282, 284  
 Baths, 264  
 Batiffol, 60, 128  
 Beard, 263  
 Beatitudes, 201 f.  
 Beauty, 262 f.  
 Bel and the Dragon, 217  
 Believer, the simple, 158 f., 161 f.  
 Bernays, 26  
 Bethune-Baker, 105, 106  
 Bigg, 60, 73, 121, 126, 129  
 Body, 142 f., 259, 280, 284, 286  
 Books, writing of, 267  
 Bratke, 7  
 Burnet, 27  
 Caird, E., 166  
 Canon of the New Testament, 221 f., 237 f., 246  
 Canon of the Old Testament, 209 f.  
 Carpocrates, 18, 127, 276  
 Cassianus, 278  
 Cassiodorus, 24  
 Catechetical School, 5 f.  
 Catholic Church, 58 f., 123  
 Causality, 87 f.  
 Chapman, 25  
 Chase, 140  
 Christianity, relation to philosophy, 35 f.; newness of, 43; of divine origin, 52; its proof, 54 f.; prophecy, 54; miracle, 55; its universality, 55; unhindered by persecution, 56; moral influence, 56 f.; its divisions, objections examined, 57 f.; relation to culture and other religions, 60 f.  
 Christ Jesus, The New Song, 43, 249; born of the Virgin, 99, 109; God and man, 109; why baptised, 110; sinless, 110; date of birth, 111; the passion of, 117 f.; the Parousia, 130; why not married, 172. See *The Word, Son of God, Incarnation*.  
 Christ, W., 16  
 Chronicles, I. and II., 122  
 Church, 123  
 Clark, 29  
 Clement, his birth, 7; teachers, 8; death, 9; character, 9; writings, 10 f.; order of writings, 10 f., 301 f.; style, 16 f.; erudition, 26 f.; distinctive claims, 31 f.; attitude towards philosophy, 35 f., 60 f.; knowledge of God,

- 65 f., 95 f.; his Christology, 98 f., 137 f.; his mysticism, 169; his asceticism, 186 f.; his love of allegory, 207; use of non-canonical writings, 246; defence of philosophy and Hellenic culture, 267 f.
- Clement of Rome, 242 f.
- Clothing, 261 f.
- Colossians, 158, 197, 230, 289
- Commodus, 111, 270
- Corinthians, I. and II., 229 f.
- Croiset, 16
- Crowns, 261
- Custom, 253 f.
- Dähne, 114, 141
- Daniel, 217
- David, 36, 194
- Death, 143, 193
- Decalogue, 199 f.
- Deuteronomy, 211
- Devil, 38, 130, 134, 135
- Didache, 242
- Diels, 27
- Dindorf, 26, 134
- Dobschütz, 318
- Docetism, 111 f.
- Dorner, 103, 105
- Drink, 259 f.
- Dualism, 76 f., 95
- Duchesne, 10, 301
- Ears, 263
- Ecclesiastes, 214
- Ecclesiasticus, 215
- Egyptians, 194, 263, 286, 288
- Egyptians, Gospel according to the, 240, 278, 317 f.
- Ehrhard, 22, 23
- Elias, Apocalypse of, 239, 321
- Enoch, Book of, 239
- Ephesians, 230
- Epicurus, 39, 40, 189, 267, 275, 286
- Epiphanius, 7
- Eschatology, 130 f.
- Esdras, 212
- Esther, 215
- Eternal punishment, 133 f.
- Ethical ideal, 185
- Eucharist, 126 f.
- Euripides, 46, 117, 284
- Eusebius, 4, 5, 24, 26, 221, 233, 245, 307, 309
- Evil, 87 f.
- Exhortation to Patience, 182 f.
- Exodus, 210
- Ezekiel, 217
- Ezra, 212
- Faith, insufficiency of bare, 42, 269; the organ of demonstration, 53, 272; a divine thing, 53; the foundation of knowledge, 53, 157, 294; varying conceptions of, 150 f.; definitions of, 151 f.; twofold, 152; relation to knowledge, 155 f., 284
- Faith, man of. See *Simple Believer*
- Favorinus, 27
- Faye, E. de, 21, 25, 32, 308
- Fear, 192, 273
- Fire, in Scripture, 134
- Flint, 71
- Food, 259 f.
- Forgiveness, 83, 122
- Freedom, 54, 144 f.
- Gabrielssen, 27
- Galatians, 230
- Gambling, 265
- Games, 265
- Gass, 142
- Genesis, 210
- Gieseler, 114
- Glaser, 3
- Gnosis, 150 f., 290. See *Knowledge*
- Gnostic, the, 158 f., 160 f., 166, 168, 280, 283, 290 f., 293 f., 295 f., 306
- Gnosticism, 4, 186, 192
- God, doctrine of, 65 f., 95; nature of, 66; Providence, 67, 270; innate knowledge of, 67, 287 f.; causes of unbelief, 67 f.; definitions of, 68 f.; transcendence, 69 f.; immanence, 73; relation to the external world, 73 f.; Creator, 75 f.; unconditional power, 76; relation to matter, 77 f.; The First Principle, 78; Pantheism, 81; anthropomorphism, 82; omniscience, 84; omnipotence, 84; goodness, 85 f.; relation to evil, 87 f.; justice, 90 f.; aim of punishment, 91; relation to man, 92 f.; Trinity, 94; cannot be demonstrated, 284; cannot be circumscribed, 287, 295
- Gore, 110
- Gospel, 237 f.
- Gospels, 221 f., 240
- Gospels, non-canonical, 240 f.
- Grace, 146 f.
- Greeks, plagiarisms of, 45 f., 272, 287, 288
- Gregory Thaumaturgus, 6, 9
- Gymnastic exercises, 264
- Hadrian, 2
- Hair, 263, 265



- Harnack, 10, 11, 16, 21, 23, 25, 60,  
     105, 226, 301 f., 309  
 Hart, 311  
 Hebrews, antiquity of the, 270  
 Hebrews, Epistle to the, 60, 232  
 Hebrews, Gospel according to the,  
     240 f., 317  
 Heracleon, 281  
 Heraclitus, 107, 133, 150, 286  
 Heretics and heresy, 57 f., 197, 231,  
     277  
 Hermas, 26, 225, 244 f.  
 Hesiod, 29, 37  
 Heussi, 10, 301 f., 307  
 Homer, 29, 46, 93, 288  
 Hort, 15, 33  
 Hosea, 215  
 Hypotyposes, 23 f., 26, 102 f., 221, 232  
  
 Incarnation, effect of, 31; a real In-  
     carnation, 111 f.; primary end of,  
     115 f., 249. See *Christ Jesus, Son*  
     *of God, The Word*.  
 Inspiration, 189 f.  
 Interpretation of Scripture, 196 f.,  
     203 f., 289  
 Irenæus, 60  
 Isaac, 117  
  
 James, St, 233 f.  
 Jeremiah, 217  
 Jeremiah, Lamentations of, 217  
 Jerome, 7, 26  
 Jewels, 262  
 Job, 214  
 John, St, Epistles of, 236  
 John, St, Gospel of, 223, 241  
 Joshua, 211  
 Jude, St, 235  
 Judges, 211  
 Judith, 215  
 Justin Martyr, 31, 34, 35, 48, 88,  
     234  
  
 Kattenbusch, 61  
 Kings, I. and II., 212  
 Knowledge, 153 f., 155 f., 162, 284.  
     See *Gnosis*  
 Krüger, 22  
 Kutter, 62  
  
 Lambert, 129  
 Laughter, 260  
 Law, The, 35 f., 191 f., 196 f., 271,  
     292  
 Leipoldt, 224, 240, 243  
 Leviticus, 211  
 Logos. See *Word*  
  
 Loofs, 5  
 Luke, St, 222 f., 224 f., 232  
  
 Maccabees, 218  
 Man, 92 f., 116, 142 f., 254, 280  
 Marcion, 18, 59, 79, 81, 90, 273,  
     276 f.  
 Mark, St, 177, 222  
 Marriage, 169 f., 276, 282 f.  
 Martyrdom, 55 f., 136, 280 f., 297  
 Matter, eternity of, 77 f.  
 Matthew, St, 221 f., 241  
 Matthias, Traditions of, 239, 320  
 Maurice, 10, 208  
 Maximus the Confessor, 73 f.  
 Mayor, 16, 25, 71, 126, 134, 308  
 Merk, 141  
 Metrodorus, 40  
 Micah, 216  
 Milk, 206  
 Miracles, 54 f.  
 Moses, 46, 271, 273, 274. See *The*  
     *Law*  
 Muratorian Canon, 25  
 Music, 187, 260, 290  
 Musonius, 26, 27, 301  
 Myseries, 61, 250  
 Mysticism, 169  
  
 Nehemiah, 212  
 Nicolaus, 277  
 Non-canonical sayings, 317 f.  
 Nourry, le, 115  
 Numbers, 211  
 Numenius, 47  
  
 Obadiah, 218  
 Ointments, 261  
 Origen, 5, 6, 9, 120, 204, 224, 230,  
     239  
 Overbeck, 30  
  
 Pædagogus, 10 f.  
 Pædagogy, 256 f.  
 Paganism, 11, 249 f.  
 Pantænus, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 73  
 Parables, 203  
 Parker, 27  
 Pauline Epistles, 226 f.  
 Paul, St, 36, 42, 45, 153, 158, 186,  
     191, 206, 270, 278, 279, 282, 286  
 Peripatetics, the, 46  
 Persecution, 89  
 Peter, Apocalypse of, 245  
 Peter, I., 234  
 Peter, II., 235  
 Peter, Preaching of, 245 f., 288, 318  
 Philemon, 232

- Philip of Side, 6  
 Philippians, 230  
 Philo, 4, 27, 28, 49, 65, 72, 106 f., 193, 198, 268, 270  
 Philosophy, of divine origin and aim, 35 f., 267; defined, 38 f., 268; relation to Christianity, 40 f.; function of, 41 f., 60 f., 268; limitations of, 44 f.; inferior to Christianity, 45 f., 49 f.; dependent on the Scriptures, 46 f., 272 f.; fragmentary and elementary, 51, 289 f.; lacks moral force of Christianity, 55  
 Photius, 23, 24, 77, 80, 102 f.  
 Plato, 28, 39, 47, 65, 72, 79, 80, 88, 95, 105, 117, 133, 135, 143, 149, 189, 252, 269, 270, 272, 275, 276, 287  
 Plutarch, 27  
 Polytheism, 137, 250  
 Prayer, 296  
 Preuschen, 23  
 Pringle-Pattison, 169  
 Prophecy, 54 f.  
 Prophets, Selections from the, 23  
 Protrepticus, 10, 11 f., 249 f.  
 Proverbs, 213 f.  
 Psalms, 213  
 Punishment, 91 f., 135 f., 137, 257 f.  
 Pythagoras, 46, 52, 194, 285, 287, 289  
 Quis Dives Salvetur, 21 f., 177 f.  
 Reinkens, 141  
 Repentance, 135 f., 274  
 Resch, 318 f.  
 Revelation, 236  
 Ritter, 99, 141  
 Röhricht, 29  
 Romans, 229  
 Ropes, 318 f.  
 Ruth, 212  
 Salome, 277 f., 317  
 Salvation, 121 f., 131 f.  
 Samuel, I. and II., 212  
 Scheck, 27  
 Schwane, 114  
 Scriptures, The, divine origin of, 52 f., 188 f.; unity of, 190 f.; symbolic character of, 195 f., 285; verbal inspiration of, 196; interpretation of, 196 f., 274, 278; how cited by Clement, 209 f., 220. See *Canon of the Old Testament*, *Canon of the New Testament*, *Interpretation*  
 Septuagint, 3, 111, 190, 208, 268, 271  
 Sibyl, 189  
 Siegfried, 27  
 Sin, 119 f., 258  
 Sleep, 261  
 Son of God, eternal generation of, 99 f.; question of subordination, 102 f. See *The Word*  
 Song of Solomon, 218  
 Song of the Three Holy Children, 217  
 Soul, 130, 142 f.  
 Souter, 121  
 Sphinx, 285  
 Spirit, Holy, 81, 94, 124, 190, 209, 221  
 Stählin, *passim*  
 Statues, 251  
 Stoics, 39, 81, 83, 141, 166, 169  
 Stromateis, 15, 17 f., 267 f., 302 f.  
 Struckmann, 126, 128  
 Summaries from Theodotus, 22  
 Summum Bonum, 148 f.  
 Superstition, 250  
 Symbolism, 194 f., 285 f.  
 Tatian, 8, 34, 48, 196  
 Tertullian, 35, 319  
 Text, New Testament, in Clement, 311 f.  
 Text, Old Testament, in Clement, 311  
 Textus Receptus, 312 f.  
 Theodotus, 125, 128  
 Thessalonians, I. and II., 231  
 Timothy, I. and II., 231  
 Titus, 232  
 Tobit, 215  
 Trinity, 47, 94  
 Truth, 36, 50, 61  
 Valentinus, 22, 52, 113, 155, 273  
 Vessels, gold and silver, 260  
 Virtue, 147 f., 157 f.  
 Virtues, relation of, 148 f., 157 f., 273  
 Wealth, 174 f., 264  
 Wendland, 10, 27, 301 f.  
 Westcott, 23, 319  
 Westcott and Hort, 312 f.  
 Western Text, 312 f.  
 Wilamowitz, 26  
 Wine, 260  
 Wisdom, 154, 289  
 Wisdom, Book of, 214  
 Woman, 170, 262  
 Word, The, the perfect teacher, 45, 284; Scriptural teaching as to, 97 f.; the pre-incarnate Word, nature and function, 99 f.; question of the two

- Words, 102 f. ; assumed a real body, 111 f. ; why called the Saviour, 122 ; importance of doctrine of, 137 f. ; man, the image of, 142 ; His three-fold function, 256 ; capable of demonstration, 284. See *Christ Jesus*, *The Incarnation*, *Son of God*
- Zahn, 11, 20, 21, 22, 23, 103 f., 301, 321  
Zeller, 12  
Zephaniah, Apocalypse of, 239  
Zeus, 250  
Ziegler, 106  
Zwingli, 126, 129

THE END.



# PHILOSOPHICAL AND THEOLOGICAL WORKS.

## ADAMSON, PROFESSOR.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF MODERN PHILOSOPHY. With other Lectures and Essays. Edited by Professor W. R. SORLEY, University of Cambridge. In 2 vols., demy 8vo, 18s. net.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF MODERN PHILOSOPHY. Edited by Professor W. R. SORLEY, University of Cambridge. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF GREEK PHILOSOPHY. Edited by Professor SORLEY and R. P. HARDIE, M.A. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

A SHORT HISTORY OF LOGIC. Edited by Professor W. R. SORLEY, University of Cambridge. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

FICHTE. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

## BARBOUR, G. F., D.Phil.

A PHILOSOPHICAL STUDY OF CHRISTIAN ETHICS. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

THE ETHICAL APPROACH TO THEISM. Post 8vo, 3s. net.

## FLINT, PROFESSOR.

PHILOSOPHY AS SCIENTIA SCIENTIARUM. A History of Classifications of the Sciences. By ROBERT FLINT, D.D., LL.D. 10s. 6d. net.

STUDIES ON THEOLOGICAL, BIBLICAL, AND OTHER SUBJECTS. 7s. 6d. net.

HISTORICAL PHILOSOPHY IN FRANCE AND FRENCH BELGIUM AND SWITZERLAND. 8vo, 21s.

THEISM. Twelfth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

ANTI-THEISTIC THEORIES. Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo, 10s. 6d.

VICO. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

## FRASER, PROFESSOR A. CAMPBELL.

PHILOSOPHY OF THEISM. Being the Gifford Lectures delivered before the University of Edinburgh in 1894-96. By ALEXANDER CAMPBELL FRASER, D.C.L. Oxford; Emeritus Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in the University of Edinburgh. Second Edition, Revised. Post 8vo, 6s. 6d. net.

BIOGRAPHIA PHILOSOPHICA. In 1 vol. demy 8vo, 6s. net.

BERKELEY. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

LOCKE. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

## LINDSAY, Rev. JAMES, D.D.

RECENT ADVANCES IN THEISTIC PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION. By Rev. JAMES LINDSAY, M.A., D.D., B.Sc., F.R.S.E., F.G.S. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

THE PROGRESSIVENESS OF MODERN CHRISTIAN THOUGHT. Crown 8vo, 6s.

ESSAYS, LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE OLD TESTAMENT FOR MODERN THEOLOGY. Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

THE TEACHING FUNCTION OF THE MODERN PULPIT. Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

STUDIES IN EUROPEAN PHILOSOPHY. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d.

THE FUNDAMENTAL PROBLEMS OF METAPHYSICS. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

THE PSYCHOLOGY OF BELIEF. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

NEW ESSAYS—LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

LITERARY ESSAYS. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

CHRISTIANITY AND MODERN CULTURE. Crown 8vo, 6d.

A CRITICAL ESSAY ON EUROPEAN LITERATURE. 2s. net.

## MELLONE, SYDNEY HERBERT, M.A., D.Sc.

STUDIES IN PHILOSOPHICAL CRITICISM AND CONSTRUCTION. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

LEADERS OF RELIGIOUS THOUGHT IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

AN INTRODUCTORY TEXT-BOOK OF LOGIC. Sixth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 5s.

ELEMENTS OF PSYCHOLOGY. Second Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 5s.

THE IMMORTAL HOPE. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

FREDERICK NIETZSCHE AND HIS ATTACK ON CHRISTIANITY. Demy 8vo, paper cover, 3d.



# PHILOSOPHICAL AND THEOLOGICAL WORKS—*Continued.*

## **MERZ, JOHN THEODORE.**

A HISTORY OF EUROPEAN THOUGHT IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY. By JOHN THEODORE MERZ, Ph.D., D.C.L., LL.D. Vol. I. Third Impression. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d. net. Vol. II. Second Impression. 15s. net. Vol. III. 15s. net. Vol. IV. 15s. net. *[In the press.]*  
LEIBNIZ. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

## **MOMERIE, Rev. ALFRED WILLIAMS, M.A., D.Sc., LL.D.**

THE ORIGIN OF EVIL; AND OTHER SERMONS. Eighth Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 5s.  
PERSONALITY. The Beginning and End of Metaphysics, and a Necessary Assumption in all Positive Philosophy. Fifth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 3s.  
PREACHING AND HEARING; AND OTHER SERMONS. Fourth Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 5s.  
BELIEF IN GOD. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s.  
THE FUTURE OF RELIGION. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
THE ENGLISH CHURCH AND THE ROMISH SCHISM. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.  
ESSAYS ON THE BIBLE. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.  
CHARACTER. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.  
MODERN SCEPTICISM AND MODERN FAITH. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

## **NICOL, Rev. THOMAS, D.D.**

RECENT ARCHÆOLOGY AND THE BIBLE. Being the Croall Lecture for 1898. By the Rev. THOMAS NICOL, D.D., Professor of Divinity and Biblical Criticism in the University of Aberdeen; Author of 'Recent Explorations in Bible Lands.' Demy 8vo, 9s. net.  
THE FOUR GOSPELS IN THE EARLIEST CHURCH HISTORY. Being the Baird Lecture for 1907. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

## **PRINGLE-PATTISON, A. SETH, LL.D., D.C.L.**

SCOTTISH PHILOSOPHY. A Comparison of the Scottish and German Answers to Hume. Balfour Philosophical Lectures, University of Edinburgh. By A. SETH PRINGLE-PATTISON, LL.D., D.C.L., Fellow of the British Academy, Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in Edinburgh University. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.  
MAN'S PLACE IN THE COSMOS, AND OTHER ESSAYS. Second Edition, Enlarged. Post 8vo, 6s. net.  
TWO LECTURES ON THEISM. Delivered on the occasion of the Sesqui-centennial Celebration of Princeton University. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.  
THE PHILOSOPHICAL RADICALS, AND OTHER ESSAYS, including Chapters reprinted on the Philosophy of Religion in Kant and Hegel. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

## **ROBERTSON, JAMES, D.D.**

EARLY RELIGIONS OF ISRAEL. New and Revised Edition. Crown 8vo. *[In the press.]*  
THE POETRY AND THE RELIGION OF THE PSALMS. The Croall Lectures, 1893-94. By JAMES ROBERTSON, D.D., Professor of Oriental Languages in the University of Glasgow. Demy 8vo, 12s.

## **SETH, PROFESSOR JAMES.**

A STUDY OF ETHICAL PRINCIPLES. By JAMES SETH, M.A., Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Edinburgh. Tenth Edition, Revised. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

## **SORLEY, PROFESSOR, Litt.D., LL.D.**

THE ETHICS OF NATURALISM. By W. R. SORLEY, Litt.D., LL.D., Fellow of the British Academy, Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of Cambridge. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
RECENT TENDENCIES IN ETHICS. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

## **WADDELL, Rev. P. HATELY, D.D.**

ESSAYS ON FAITH. By Rev. P. HATELY WADDELL, D.D. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
THOUGHTS ON MODERN MYSTICISM. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
THE RELIGIOUS SPIRIT. Sermon Notes. Crown 8vo, 2s. net.

---

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD & SONS, EDINBURGH AND LONDON.

**A Catalogue**  
**of**  
**Messrs William Blackwood & Sons'**  
**Publications**

|                           |             |           |
|---------------------------|-------------|-----------|
| <b>General Literature</b> | <b>Page</b> | <b>3</b>  |
| <b>Educational Works</b>  | <b>„</b>    | <b>33</b> |

45 GEORGE STREET  
EDINBURGH

37 PATERNOSTER ROW  
LONDON, E.C.

- BAIRD, J. G. A.**  
THE PRIVATE LETTERS OF THE MARQUESS OF DALHOUSIE. Edited by J. G. A. BAIRD. Second Impression. With Portraits and Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 15s. net. Popular Edition. Demy 8vo, 6s. net.
- BAIRD LECTURES.**  
(See under FLINT, MITCHELL, NICOL, and ROBERTSON.)
- BANKS, D. C.**  
THE ETHICS OF WORK AND WEALTH. By D. C. BANKS. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- BARBOUR, G. F., D.Phil.**  
A PHILOSOPHICAL STUDY OF CHRISTIAN ETHICS. By G. F. BARBOUR, D.Phil. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.
- THE ETHICAL APPROACH TO THEISM. Post 8vo, 3s. net.
- BARBOUR, R. W.**  
THOUGHTS FROM THE WRITINGS OF R. W. BARBOUR. Post 8vo, limp leather, 2s. 6d. net.
- "BARFLEUR."**  
NAVAL POLICY. A PLEA FOR THE STUDY OF WAR. By "BARFLEUR." Demy 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.
- BARRETT, C. R. B.**  
HISTORY OF THE 13th HUSSARS. By C. R. B. BARRETT. 2 vols. small 4to. Illustrated. 21s. net.
- BARRINGTON, MICHAEL.**  
THE KING'S FOOL. By MICHAEL BARRINGTON. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- THE REMINISCENCES OF SIR BARRINGTON BEAUMONT, BART. A Novel. Crown 8vo, 6s
- BARTLETT, E. ASHMEAD.**  
THE PASSING OF THE SHEREEFIAN EMPIRE. By E. ASHMEAD-BARTLETT. Illustrated. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.
- BELLESHEIM, ALPHONS, D.D.**  
HISTORY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH OF SCOTLAND. From the Introduction of Christianity to the Present Day. By ALPHONS BELLESHEIM, D.D., Canon of Aix-la-Chapelle. Translated, with Notes and Additions, by Sir D. OSWALD HUNTER BLAIR, Bart., O.S.B., Monk of Fort Augustus. Cheap Edition. Complete in 4 vols. demy 8vo, with Maps. Price 21s. net.
- BESANT, SIR WALTER.**  
RABELAIS. (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By SIR WALTER BESANT. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- BIRD, RICHARD.**  
THE GAY ADVENTURE. By RICHARD BRD. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

- BLACKBURN, DOUGLAS.**  
A BURGHIER QUIXOTE. By DOUGLAS BLACKBURN, Author of 'Prinsloo of Prinsloosdorp.' Second Impression. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- RICHARD HARTLEY: PROSPECTOR.**  
Crown 8vo, 6s.
- BLACKIE, JOHN STUART.**  
NOTES OF A LIFE. By JOHN STUART BLACKIE. Edited by his Nephew, A. STODART WALKER. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.
- THE LETTERS OF JOHN STUART BLACKIE TO HIS WIFE. With a few earlier ones to his Parents. Selected and edited by his Nephew, A. STODART WALKER. Second Impression. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.
- BLACKWOOD.**  
BLACKWOOD'S MAGAZINE. Monthly, 2s. 6d. Post free for one year, 30s.
- ANNALS OF A PUBLISHING HOUSE.**  
WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND HIS SONS; THEIR MAGAZINE AND FRIENDS. By MRS OLIPHANT. With Four Portraits. Third Edition. Demy 8vo. Vols. I. and II., £2, 2s. Large Paper Edition, £4, 4s. net.
- ANNALS OF A PUBLISHING HOUSE.**  
Vol. III. JOHN BLACKWOOD. By his Daughter, MRS BLACKWOOD PORTER. With Two Portraits and View of Strathclym. Demy 8vo, 21s. Large Paper Edition, £2, 2s. net.
- NEW EDUCATIONAL SERIES.** See separate Educational Catalogue.
- NEW UNIFORM SERIES OF NOVELS** (Copyright).  
Crown 8vo, cloth. Price 3s. 6d. each.
- WENDERHOLME. By P. G. Hamerton.
- THE STORY OF MARGREDEL. By D. Stottar Meldrum.
- A SENSITIVE PLANT. By E. D. Gerard.
- LADY LEE'S WIDOWHOOD. By General Sir E. B. Hamley.
- KATIE STEWART, and other Stories. By Mrs Oliphant.
- VALENTINE AND HIS BROTHER. By the Same.
- SONS AND DAUGHTERS. By the Same.
- MARMORNE. By P. G. Hamerton.
- REATA. By E. D. Gerard.
- BEGGAR MY NEIGHBOUR. By the Same.
- THE WATERS OF HERCULES. By the Same.
- FAIR TO SEE. By L. W. M. Lockhart.
- MINE IS THINE. By the Same.
- DOUBLES AND QUITS. By the Same.
- PICCADILLY. By Laurence Oliphant. With Illustrations.
- LADY BABY. By D. Gerard.
- POOR NELLIE. By A Plain Woman.

**BLACKWOOD—contd.**

STANDARD NOVELS. Uniform in size and binding. Each complete in one Volume.

**FLORIN SERIES.** Illustrated Boards. Bound in Cloth, 2s. 6d.

THE CRUISE OF THE MIDGE. By Michael Scott.

CYRIL THORNTON. By Capt. Hamilton.

THE PROVOST, &c. By John Galt.

SIR ANDREW WYLIE. By the Same.

REGINALD DALTON. By J. G. Lockhart.

PEN OWEN. By Dean Hook.

ADAM BLAIR. By J. G. Lockhart.

LADY LEE'S WIDOWHOOD. By General Sir E. B. Hamley.

THE PERPETUAL CURATE. By Mrs Oliphant.

JOHN! A Love Story. By the Same.

**SHILLING SERIES,** Illustrated Cover. Bound in Cloth, 1s. 6d.

THE RECTOR, and THE DOCTOR'S FAMILY. By Mrs Oliphant.

THE LIFE OF MANSIE WAUCH. By D. M. Moir.

PENINSULAR SCENES AND SKETCHES. By F. Hardman.

SIR FRIZZLE PUMPKIN, NIGHTS AT MESS, &c.

VALERIUS: A Roman Story. By J. G. Lockhart.

**BON GAULTIER'S BOOK OF BALLADS.** Eighteenth Edition, with Autobiographical Introduction by Sir THEODORE MARTIN, K.C.B. With Illustrations by Doyle, Leech, and Crowquill. Small 4to, 5s. net.

**BOWHILL, MAJOR J. H.**

QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS IN THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF MILITARY TOPOGRAPHY. By Major J. H. BOWHILL. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net. Portfolio containing 34 working plans and diagrams, 3s. 6d. net.

**BOWLINE, J., Skipper, and GREGORY, R. R. C.**

YARNS FROM A CAPTAIN'S LOG. By J. BOWLINE, Skipper, and R. R. C. GREGORY. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**BRACKENBURY, GENERAL SIR HENRY, G.C.B.**

SOME MEMORIES OF MY SPARE TIME, 1856-1885. By General the Right Hon. Sir HENRY BRACKENBURY, G.C.B. With Portrait. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**BREADALBANE, THE MARCHIONESS OF.**

THE HIGH TOPS OF BLACK MOUNT. By the MARCHIONESS OF BREADALBANE. Second Impression. With Illustrations from Photographs by Olive Mackenzie. Short demy, 6s. net.

**BRIDGES, PHILIPPA.**

THE GREEN WAVE OF DESTINY. By PHILIPPA BRIDGES. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**BRODRIBB, W. J.**

DEMOSTHENES. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By W. J. BRODRIBB. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**BRUCE, MAJOR CLARENCE DALRYMPLE.**

IN THE FOOTSTEPS OF MARCO POLO. Being the Account of a Journey Overland from Simla to Peking. By MAJOR CLARENCE DALRYMPLE BRUCE. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 21s. net.

**BUCHAN, JOHN.**

THE WATCHER BY THE THRESHOLD, AND OTHER TALES. By JOHN BUCHAN. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

A LODGE IN THE WILDERNESS. Second Impression. Short demy 8vo, 6s.

THE MOON ENDURETH: TALES AND FANCIES. Crown 8vo, 6s.

SOME EIGHTEENTH CENTURY BYWAYS, AND OTHER ESSAYS. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

ANDREW JAMESON, LORD ARDWALL. With Portrait. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**BURTON, JOHN HILL, D.C.L.**

THE HISTORY OF SCOTLAND. From Agricola's Invasion to the Extinction of the last Jacobite Insurrection. By JOHN HILL BURTON, D.C.L., Historiographer-Royal for Scotland. Cheaper Edition. In 8 vols. crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net each.

THE BOOK-HUNTER. A New Edition, with specially designed Title-page and Cover by Joseph Brown. Printed on antique laid paper. Post 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**BUTE, JOHN, MARQUESS OF.**

THE ROMAN BREVIARY. Reformed by Order of the Holy Œcumenical Council of Trent; Published by Order of Pope St Pius V.; and revised by Clement VIII. and Urban VIII.; together with the Offices since granted. Translated out of Latin into English by JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T. New Edition, Revised and Enlarged. In 4 vols. crown 8vo, 42s. net. In 1 vol. crown 4to, 63s. net.

**BUTE, JOHN, MARQUESS OF—*contd.***  
**THE ALTUS OF ST COLUMBA.** With a Prose Paraphrase and Notes. By JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T. In paper cover, 2s. 6d.

**SERMONES, FRATRIS ADÆ, ORDINIS PRÆMONSTRATENSIS, &c.** Twenty-eight Discourses of Adam Scotus of Whithorn, hitherto unpublished; to which is added a Collection of Notes by the same, illustrative of the rule of St Augustine. Edited, at the desire of the late MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., LL.D., &c., by WALTER DE GRAY BIRCH, LL.D., F.S.A., of the British Museum, &c. Royal 8vo, 25s. net.

**CATALOGUE OF A COLLECTION OF ORIGINAL MSS.** formerly belonging to the Holy Office of the Inquisition in the Canary Islands. Prepared under the direction of the late MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., LL.D., by WALTER DE GRAY BIRCH, LL.D., F.S.A. 2 vols. royal 8vo, £3, 3s. net.

**BUTE, MACPHAIL, and LONSDALE.**

**THE ARMS OF THE ROYAL AND PARLIAMENTARY BURGHES OF SCOTLAND.** By JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., J. R. N. MACPHAIL, and H. W. LONSDALE. With 131 Engravings on wood, and 11 other Illustrations. Crown 4to, £2, 2s. net.

**BUTE, STEVENSON, and LONSDALE.**

**THE ARMS OF THE BARONIAL AND POLICE BURGHES OF SCOTLAND.** By JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., J. H. STEVENSON, and H. W. LONSDALE. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 4to, £2, 2s. net.

**CAIRD, EDWARD, LL.D.**

**HEGEL.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By EDWARD CAIRD, LL.D. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**CAIRD, PRINCIPAL.**

**SPINOZA.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By PRINCIPAL CAIRD. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**CALDWELL, PROFESSOR WILLIAM.**

**SCHOPENHAUER'S SYSTEM IN ITS PHILOSOPHICAL SIGNIFICANCE** (THE SHAW FELLOWSHIP LECTURES, 1893). By Professor WILLIAM CALDWELL, D.Sc., M'Gill University, Montreal. Demy 8vo 10s. 6d. net.

**CALLWELL, COL. C. E., C.B.**

**THE EFFECT OF MARITIME COMMAND ON LAND CAMPAIGNS SINCE WATERLOO.** By COL. C. E. CALLWELL, C.B. With Plans. Post 8vo, 6s. net.

**TACTICS OF TO-DAY.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**MILITARY OPERATIONS AND MARITIME PREPONDERANCE: THEIR RELATIONS AND INTERDEPENDENCE.** Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**THE TACTICS OF HOME DEFENCE.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**SERVICE YARNS AND REMINISCENCES.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CALLWELL, J. M.**

**OLD IRISH LIFE.** By J. M. CALLWELL. Illustrated. Demy 8vo, 10s. net.

**CANDLER, EDMUND.**

**THE MANTLE OF THE EAST.** By EDMUND CANDLER. Illustrated. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**THE GENERAL PLAN.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CAREY, WYMOND.**

"No 101." Fifth Impression. By WYMOND CAREY. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**CARLYLE, SIR R. W., K.C.I.E., and A. J., M.A., D.Litt.**

**A HISTORY OF MEDIEVAL POLITICAL THEORY IN THE WEST.** By Sir R. W. CARLYLE, K.C.I.E., Balliol College, Oxford; and A. J. CARLYLE, M.A., D.Litt., Chaplain and Lecturer (late Fellow) of University College, Oxford. In 3 vols. demy 8vo. Vol. I.—A History of Political Theory from the Roman Lawyers of the Second Century to the Political Writers of the Ninth. By A. J. CARLYLE. 15s. net. Vol. II.—Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**"CHASSEUR."**

**A STUDY OF THE RUSSO-JAPANESE WAR.** By "CHASSEUR." Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**CHESNEY, SIR GEORGE, K.C.B.**

**THE DILEMMA.** By General Sir GEORGE CHESNEY, K.C.B. A New Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s.

**CHRISTIE, REV. GEORGE, B.D.**

**THE INFLUENCE OF LETTERS ON THE SCOTTISH REFORMATION.** By Rev. GEORGE CHRISTIE B.D. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.



- CHURCH, REV. A.**  
**OVID.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By Rev. A. CHURCH. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- CHURCH, REV. A., and BRODRIBB, W. J.**  
**PLINY.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By Rev. A. CHURCH and W. J. BRODRIBB. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- CHURCH SERVICE SOCIETY.**  
**A BOOK OF COMMON ORDER:** BEING FORMS OF WORSHIP ISSUED BY THE CHURCH SERVICE SOCIETY. Ninth Edition, carefully revised. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, cloth, 3s. 6d.; French morocco, 5s. Also in 2 vols. crown 8vo, cloth, 4s.; French morocco, 6s. 6d.
- DAILY OFFICES FOR MORNING AND EVENING PRAYER THROUGHOUT THE WEEK.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.
- ORDER OF DIVINE SERVICE FOR CHILDREN.** Issued by the Church Service Society. With Scottish Hymnal. Cloth, 3d.
- CLIFFORD, SIR HUGH, K.C.M.G.**  
**SALEH: A SEQUEL.** By Sir HUGH CLIFFORD, K.C.M.G. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- CLODD, EDWARD.**  
**THOMAS HENRY HUXLEY.** "Modern English Writers." By EDWARD CLODD. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- CLOUSTON, J. STORER.**  
**THE LUNATIC AT LARGE.** By J. STORER CLOUSTON. Ninth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net
- COUNT BUNKER:** Being a Sequel to 'The Lunatic at Large.' Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- THE ADVENTURES OF M. D'HARCOT.** Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 6d.
- OUR LADY'S INN.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- GARMISCATH.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- COLLINS, C. W.**  
**SAINT SIMON.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By C. W. COLLINS. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- SOPHOCLES.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- PLATO.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- COLLINS, W. E. W.**  
**LEAVES FROM THE DIARY OF A COUNTRY CRICKETER.** By W. E. W. COLLINS. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- COLLINS, REV. W. LUCAS.**  
**BUTLER.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Rev. W. L. COLLINS. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- MONTAIGNE.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- LA FONTAINE, AND OTHER FRENCH FABULISTS.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- HOMER, ILIAD—HOMER, ODYSSEY—VIRGIL—CICERO—ARISTOPHANES—PLAUTUS AND TERENCE—LUCIAN—LIVY—THUCYDIDES.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- COMBE, MRS KENNETH.**  
**CELIA KIRKHAM'S SON.** By Mrs KENNETH COMBE. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- SEEKERS ALL.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- COMPTON-BURNETT, I.**  
**DOLORES.** By I. COMPTON-BURNETT. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- CONFESSION OF FAITH, THE.**  
 Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.
- CONRAD, JOSEPH.**  
**LORD JIM: A TALE.** By JOSEPH CONRAD. Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- YOUTH: A NARRATIVE.** Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- COOPER, REV. PROFESSOR.**  
**LITURGY OF 1637, COMMONLY CALLED LAUD'S LITURGY.** Edited by the Rev. Professor COOPER, D.D., Glasgow. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.
- COPELSTON, BISHOP.**  
**ÆSCHYLUS.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By Bishop COPELSTON. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- CORNFORD, L. COPE.**  
**TROUBLED WATERS.** By L. COPE CORNFORD. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- COUNTY HISTORIES OF SCOTLAND.** In demy 8vo volumes of about 350 pp. each. With Maps. Price 7s. 6d. net.
- FIFE AND KINROSS.** By ÆNEAS J. G. MACKAY, LL.D., Sheriff of these Counties

**COUNTY HISTORIES OF SCOTLAND—*contd.***

**DUMFRIES AND GALLOWAY.** By Sir HERBERT MAXWELL, Bart., M.P. Second Edition.

**MORAY AND NAIRN.** By CHARLES RAMPINI, LL.D.

**INVERNESS.** By Sir J. CAMERON LEES, K.C.V.O., D.D.

**ROXBURGH, SELKIRK, AND PEEBLES.** By Sir GEORGE DOUGLAS, Bart.

**ABERDEEN AND BANFF.** By WILLIAM WATT.

**COUTTS, H. B. MONEY.**

**FAMOUS DUELS OF THE FLEET.** By H. B. MONEY COUTTS. With Coloured Frontispiece and Illustrations by N. Wilkinson. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CRAIK, SIR HENRY, K.C.B., M.P.**

**A CENTURY OF SCOTTISH HISTORY.** From the Days before the '45 to those within living Memory. By Sir HENRY CRAIK, K.C.B. With Portraits. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**CRAWFORD, ALEXANDER.**

**KAPAK.** By ALEXANDER CRAWFORD. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MONSIEUR CARNIFEX.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE ALIAS.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CRAWFORD, F. MARION.**

**SARACINESCA.** By F. MARION CRAWFORD. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 1s. net. People's Edition, 6d.

**CROALL LECTURES.**

(See under NICOL and ROBERTSON.)

**CROSS, J. W.**

**IMPRESSIONS OF DANTE AND OF THE NEW WORLD.** By J. W. CROSS. Post 8vo, 6s.

**THE RAKE'S PROGRESS IN FINANCE.** Crown 8vo, 2s. net.

**CROSTHWAITE, SIR CHARLES,**

**K.C.S.I. THAKURPERTAB SINGH,** and other Tales. By Sir CHARLES CROSTHWAITE, K.C.S.I. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CUMMING, C. F. GORDON.**

**MEMORIES.** By C. F. GORDON CUMMING. Demy 8vo. Illustrated, 20s. net.

**AT HOME IN FIJI.** Post 8vo, 6s.

**A LADY'S CRUISE IN A FRENCH MAN-OF-WAR.** Cheap Edition. 6s.

**CUMMING, C. F. GORDON—*contd.***  
**FIRE-FOUNTAINS.** Illustrated, 25s.

**GRANITE CRAGS.** Post 8vo. Illustrated. Cheap Edition. 6s.

**WANDERINGS IN CHINA.** Small post 8vo. Cheap Edition. 6s.

**CURTIS, MARGUERITE.**

**THE BIAS.** By MARGUERITE CURTIS. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MARCIA: A TRANSCRIPT FROM LIFE.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**OH! FOR AN ANGEL.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CUSTANCE, ADMIRAL SIR REGINALD N., G.C.B., K.C.M.G., C.V.O.**

**THE SHIP OF THE LINE IN BATTLE.** By Admiral Sir REGINALD N. CUSTANCE, G.C.B., K.C.M.G., C.V.O. With Diagrams. Demy 8vo, 5s. net.

**DAVIES, J.**

**HESIOD AND THEOGNIS.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By J. DAVIES. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**CATULLUS, TIBULLUS, AND PROPERTIUS.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**DESCARTES.**

**THE METHOD, MEDITATIONS, AND PRINCIPLES OF PHILOSOPHY OF DESCARTES.** Translated from the original French and Latin. With a new Introductory Essay, Historical and Critical, on the Cartesian Philosophy. By Professor VEITCH, LL.D. Fourteenth Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s. 6d.

**"DIES IRAE." The Story of a Spirit in Prison.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d. net. Paper cover, 1s. net.

**DIVER, MAUD.**

**CAPTAIN DESMOND, V.C.** By MAUD DIVER. Ninth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**THE GREAT AMULET.** Seventh Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**CANDLES IN THE WIND.** Sixth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**SUNIA AND OTHER STORIES.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE ENGLISHWOMAN IN INDIA.** Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**DODDS and MACPHERSON.**

THE LICENSING ACTS (SCOTLAND) CONSOLIDATION AND AMENDMENT ACT, 1903. Annotated by J. M. Dodds, C.B., of the Scottish Office; Joint-Editor of the 'Parish Council Guide for Scotland,' and EWAN MACPHERSON, Advocate, Legal Secretary to the Lord Advocate. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**DONNE, W. B.**

EURIPIDES. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By W. B. DONNE. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

TACITUS. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**DOUGLAS, CHARLES, M.A., D.Sc.**

THE ETHICS OF JOHN STUART MILL. By CHARLES DOUGLAS, M.A., D.Sc., late Lecturer in Moral Philosophy, and Assistant to the Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Edinburgh. Post 8vo, 6s. net.

JOHN STUART MILL: A STUDY OF HIS PHILOSOPHY. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net.

**DOUGLAS, CHARLES and ANNE.**

THE SHETLAND PONY. By CHARLES and ANNE DOUGLAS. With an Appendix on THE MAKING OF THE SHETLAND PONY. By J. COSSAR EWART. With Gravure and other Illustrations. Small 4to, 10s. 6d. net.

**DURAND, SIR H. MORTIMER.**

A HOLIDAY IN SOUTH AFRICA. By the Right Hon. Sir H. M. DURAND, G.C.M.G., K.C.S.I., &c. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

LIFE OF THE RIGHT HON. SIR ALFRED LYALL, K.C.B., G.C.I.E., Hon. D.C.L. (Oxon.), Hon. LL.D. (Cantab.) Demy 8vo, 16s. net.

**ECCOTT, W. J.**

FORTUNE'S CASTAWAY. By W. J. ECCOTT. Crown 8vo, 6s.

HIS INDOLENCE OF ARRAS. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE HEARTH OF HUTTON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE RED NEIGHBOUR. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

THE BACKGROUND. Crown 8vo, 6s.

A DEMOISELLE OF FRANCE. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE SECOND CITY. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE MERCENARY. A Tale of the Thirty Years' War. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**ELIOT, GEORGE.**

THE NEW POPULAR EDITION OF GEORGE ELIOT'S WORKS, with Photogravure Frontispiece to each Volume, from Drawings by William Hatherell, R.I., Edgar Bundy, R.I., Byam Shaw, R.I., A. A. Van Anrooy, Maurice Greiffenhagen, Claude A. Shepperson, R.I., E. J. Sullivan, and Max Cowper. Each Work complete in One Volume. Handsomely bound, gilt top. 8s. 6d. net. Ten Volumes in all.

**ADAM BEDE.**

SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE.

THE MILL ON THE FLOSS.

FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL.

MIDDLEMARCH.

SILAS MARNER; BROTHER JACOB;

THE LIFTED VEIL.

ROMOLA.

DANIEL DERONDA.

THE SPANISH GYPSY; JUBAL.

ESSAYS; THEOPHRASTUS SUCH.

GEORGE ELIOT'S LIFE. With Portrait and other Illustrations. New Edition, in one volume. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**LIFE AND WORKS OF GEORGE**

ELIOT (Warwick Edition). 14 volumes, cloth, limp, gilt top, 2s. net per volume; leather, limp, gilt top, 2s. 6d. net per volume; leather, gilt top, with bookmarker, 3s. net per volume.

ADAM BEDE. 826 pp.

THE MILL ON THE FLOSS. 828 pp.

FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL. 718 pp.

ROMOLA. 900 pp.

SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE. 624 pp.

SILAS MARNER; BROTHER JACOB;

THE LIFTED VEIL. 560 pp.

MIDDLEMARCH. 2 vols. 664 and 630 pp.

DANIEL DERONDA. 2 vols. 616 and 636 pp.

THE SPANISH GYPSY; JUBAL.

ESSAYS; THEOPHRASTUS SUCH.

LIFE. 2 vols., 626 and 580 pp.

WORKS OF GEORGE ELIOT (Standard Edition). 21 volumes, crown 8vo. In buckram cloth, gilt top, 2s. 6d. per vol.; or in roxburghe binding, 3s. 6d. per vol.

ADAM BEDE. 2 vols.

THE MILL ON THE FLOSS. 2 vols.

FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL. 2 vols.

ROMOLA. 2 vols.

SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE. 2 vols.

MIDDLEMARCH. 3 vols.

DANIEL DERONDA. 3 vols.

SILAS MARNER. 1 vol.

JUBAL. 1 vol.

THE SPANISH GYPSY. 1 vol.

ESSAYS. 1 vol.

THEOPHRASTUS SUCH. 1 vol.

**ELIOT, GEORGE—contd.**

**LIFE AND WORKS OF GEORGE ELIOT** (Cabinet Edition). 24 volumes, crown 8vo, price £6. Also to be had handsomely bound in half and full calf. The Volumes are sold separately, bound in cloth, price 5s. each.

**NOVELS BY GEORGE ELIOT.** Popular copyright Edition. In new uniform binding, price 3s. 6d. each.

ADAM BEDE.

THE MILL ON THE FLOSS.

SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE.

ROMOLA.

FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL.

SILAS MARNER; THE LIFTED VEIL; BROTHER JACOB.

MIDDLEMARCH.

DANIEL DERONDA.

**NOVELS BY GEORGE ELIOT** (New Cabinet Edition). Cloth gilt, in 17 volumes, price 1s. net. each.

ADAM BEDE. 2 vols.

THE MILL ON THE FLOSS. 2 vols.

FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL. 2 vols.

ROMOLA. 2 vols.

SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE. 2 vols.

MIDDLEMARCH. 3 vols.

DANIEL DERONDA. 3 vols.

SILAS MARNER.

**ESSAYS.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**IMPRESSIONS OF THEOPHRASTUS**

**SUCH.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**THE SPANISH GYPSY.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**THE LEGEND OF JUBAL, AND OTHER POEMS, OLD AND NEW.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**SILAS MARNER.** New Edition, with Illustrations by Reginald Birch. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d. net. Cheap Edition, 2s. 6d.

**SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE.** Cheap Edition, 3s. Illustrated Edition, with 20 Illustrations by H. R. Millar, cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d.; plain cloth, 2s.; paper covers, 1s.

**ADAM BEDE.** New Edition, crown 8vo, paper cover, 1s.; crown 8vo, with Illustrations, cloth, 2s.

**THE MILL ON THE FLOSS.** New Edition, paper covers, 1s.; cloth, 2s.

**WISE, WITTY, AND TENDER SAYINGS, IN PROSE AND VERSE.**

Selected from the Works of GEORGE ELIOT. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**ELLIS, BETH.**

**BLIND MOUTHS.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE MOON OF BATH.** Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**THE KING'S SPY.** Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**A KING OF VAGABONDS.** Cr'n 8vo, 6s.

**ELTON, PROFESSOR.**

**THE AUGUSTAN AGES.** By OLIVER ELTON, M.A., Professor of English Literature, University College, Liverpool. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**EVERARD, H. S. C.**

**HISTORY OF THE ROYAL AND ANCIENT GOLF CLUB, ST ANDREWS.** By H. S. C. EVERARD. With Eight Coloured Portraits. Crown 4to, 21s. net.

**F.**

**STORIES OF THE ENGLISH.** By F. With 50 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**FERRIER, PROFESSOR.**

**PHILOSOPHICAL REMAINS.** Crown 8vo, 14s.

**FERRYMAN, LIEUT. - COLONEL A. F. MOCKLER-**

**THE LIFE OF A REGIMENTAL OFFICER DURING THE GREAT WAR, 1793-1815.** Compiled from the Correspondence of Colonel Samuel Rice, C.B., K.H., 51st Light Infantry, and from other sources. By Lieut.-Colonel A. F. MOCKLER-FERRYMAN. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**FESTING, GABRIELLE.**

**WHEN KINGS RODE TO DELHI.** By GABRIELLE FESTING. Illustrated. Second Impression. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**FETTERLESS, ARTHUR.**

**THE CAREER OF KEMBOLE—NON-CONFORMIST.** By ARTHUR FETTERLESS. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**WILLIE IN THE ISLE OF MAN (AND AFTER).** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE POMANDERS.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FLINT, PROFESSOR,**

**PHILOSOPHY AS SCIENTIA SCIENTIARUM.** A History of Classifications of the Sciences. By ROBERT FLINT, D.D., LL.D. 10s. 6d. net.

**STUDIES ON THEOLOGICAL, BIBLICAL, AND OTHER SUBJECTS.** 7s. 6d. net.

**HISTORICAL PHILOSOPHY IN FRANCE AND FRENCH BELGIUM AND SWITZERLAND.** 8vo, 21s.

**THEISM.** Twelfth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**ANTI-THEISTIC THEORIES.** Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo, 10s. 6d.

**VICO.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**FOREIGN CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS.**

Edited by Mrs OLIPHANT. Price 1s. each net. For List of Vols. see p. 32.

**FORREST, SIR G. W., C.I.E.**

**HISTORY OF THE INDIAN MUTINY.** By Sir G. W. FORREST, C.I.E. Ex-Director of Records, Government of India. 3 vols. demy 8vo, 58s. net.

**LIFE OF FIELD-MARSHAL SIR NEVILLE B. CHAMBERLAIN, G.C.B., G.C.S.I.** With two Photogravure Portraits. Demy 8vo, 18s. net.



**FORSTER, E. M.**

WHERE ANGELS FEAR TO TREAD.

By E. M. FORSTER. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE LONGEST JOURNEY. Second

Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FOULIS, HUGH.**

THE VITAL SPARK. By HUGH FOULIS.

Illustrated. 1s. net.

IN HIGHLAND HARBOURS WITH

PARA HANDY. Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

**FRANKLIN, MILES.**

SOME EVERYDAY FOLK AND DAWN.

By MILES FRANKLIN. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FRASER, PROFESSOR A. CAMPBELL.**

PHILOSOPHY OF THEISM. Being

the Gifford Lectures delivered before

the University of Edinburgh in 1894-

96. By ALEXANDER CAMPBELL FRASER,

D.C.L., Oxford; Emeritus Professor of

Logic and Metaphysics in the University

of Edinburgh. Second Edition, Revised.

Post 8vo, 6s. 6d. net.

BIOGRAPHIA PHILOSOPHICA. In 1

vol. demy 8vo, 6s. net.

BERKELEY. (Philosophical Classics for

English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

LOCKE. (Philosophical Classics for

English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**FRASER, DAVID.**

THE MARCHES OF HINDUSTAN.

The Record of a Journey in Thibet,

Trans-Himalayan India, Chinese Tur-

kestan, Russian Turkestan, and Persia.

By DAVID FRASER. With Illustrations,

Maps, and Sketches. Demy 8vo, £1, 1s.

net.

THE 'SHORT CUT TO INDIA. The

Record of a Journey along the Route of

the Baghdad Railway. With 83 Illustrations.

Second Impression. Demy 8vo,

12s. 6d. net.

PERSIA AND TURKEY IN REVOLT.

With numerous Illustrations. Demy

8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**FRENCH COOKERY FOR ENGLISH**

HOMES. Fourth Impression. Crown

8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d. French morocco, 3s.

**FULTON, T. WEMYSS.**

THE SOVEREIGNTY OF THE SEA.

An Historical Account of the Claims of

England to the Dominion of the British

Seas, and of the Evolution of the Ter-

ritorial Waters: with special reference

to the Rights of Fishing and the Naval

Salute. By T. WEMYSS FULTON,

Lecturer on the Scientific Study of

Fisheries Problems, The University,

Aberdeen. With Charts and Maps.

Demy 8vo, 25s. net.

**FYFE, H. HAMILTON.**

THE NEW SPIRIT IN EGYPT. By

H. HAMILTON FYFE. With Illustrations.

Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**GALT, JOHN.**

THE PROVOST, &amp;c. By JOHN GALT.

Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

SIR ANDREW WYLIE. Illustrated

boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

**GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND.**

SCOTTISH HYMNAL, WITH APPEN-

DIX INCORPORATED. Published for

use in Churches by Authority of the

General Assembly. 1. Large type, cloth,

red edges, 2s. 6d.; French morocco, 4s.

2. Bourgeois type, limp cloth, 1s.;

French morocco, 2s. 5. Nonpareil type,

cloth, red edges, 6d.; French morocco,

1s. 4d. 4. Paper covers, 3d. 5. Sun-

day-School Edition, paper covers, 1d.;

cloth, 2d. No. 1, bound with the Psalms

and Paraphrases, French morocco, 8s.

No. 2, bound with the Psalms and Para-

phrases, cloth, 2s.; French morocco, 3s.

SERVICES OF PRAYER FOR SOCIAL

AND FAMILY WORSHIP. Prepared

by a Special Committee of the General

Assembly of the Church of Scotland.

New Edition, Revised and Enlarged.

Fcap. 8vo, 1s. 6d. net. French morocco,

3s. 6d. net.

PRAYERS FOR FAMILY WORSHIP.

A Selection of Four Weeks' Prayers.

New Edition. Authorised by the General

Assembly of the Church of Scot-

land. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net. French

morocco, 3s. net.

ONE HUNDRED PRAYERS. Prepared

by the Committee on Aids to Devotion.

16mo, cloth limp, 6d. net.

MORNING AND EVENING PRAYERS

FOR AFFIXING TO BIBLES. Pre-

pared by the Committee on Aids to

Devotion. 1d. for 6, or 1s. per 100.

PRAYERS FOR SOLDIERS. Prepared

by the Committee on Aids to Devotion.

Seventieth Thousand. 16mo, cloth limp,

2d. net.

PRAYERS FOR SAILORS AND

FISHER-FOLK. Prepared and Pub-

lished by Instruction of the General

Assembly of the Church of Scotland.

Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**GERARD, E. D.**

REATA: WHAT'S IN A NAME. By

E. D. GERARD. Cheap Edition. Crown

8vo, 3s. 6d.

BEGGAR MY NEIGHBOUR. Cheap

Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE WATERS OF HERCULES.

Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

A SENSITIVE PLANT. Crown 8vo,

3s. 6d.

**GERARD, E.**

HONOUR'S GLASSY BUBBLE. By

E. GERARD. Crown 8vo, 6s.

A FOREIGNER. An Anglo-German

Study. Crown 8vo, 6s.



**GERARD, DOROTHEA.**

ONE YEAR. By DOROTHEA GERARD  
(Madame Longard de Longgarde).  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE IMPEDIMENT. Crown 8vo, 6s.

A SPOTLESS REPUTATION. Third  
Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE WRONG MAN. Second Edition.  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

LADY BABY. Cheap Edition. Crown  
8vo, 3s. 6d.

RECHA. Crown 8vo, 6s.

A FORGOTTEN SIN. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GERARD, REV. J.**

STONYHURST LATIN GRAMMAR.  
By Rev. J. GERARD. Second Edition.  
Fcap. 8vo, 3s.

**GIBBON, PERCEVAL.**

SOULS IN BONDAGE. By PERCEVAL  
GIBBON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE VROUW GROBELAAR'S LEAD-  
ING CASES. Crown 8vo, 6s.

SALVATOR. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GIFFORD LECTURES, EDINBURGH.**  
(See under FRASER and TIELE.)**GILLANDERS, A. T.**

FOREST ENTOMOLOGY. By A. T.  
GILLANDERS, F.E.S. With 351 Illus-  
trations. Second Edition, Revised.  
Crown 8vo, 15s. net.

**GILLESPIE, REV. JOHN, LL.D.**

THE HUMOURS OF SCOTTISH LIFE.  
By the Rev. JOHN GILLESPIE, LL.D.  
Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**GILSON, C. L.**

SCENES FROM A SUBALTERN'S LIFE.  
By C. L. GILSON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GLASGOW BALLAD CLUB.**

BALLADS AND POEMS. By MEMBERS  
OF THE GLASGOW BALLAD CLUB. Second  
Series. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net. Third  
Series, 7s. 6d.

**GLEIG, REV. G. R.**

THE SUBALTERN. By Rev. G. R.  
GLEIG. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**GOUDIE, GILBERT.**

THE CELTIC AND SCANDINAVIAN  
ANTIQUITIES OF SCOTLAND. By  
GILBERT GOUDIE, F.S.A. Scot. Demy  
8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**GRAHAM, HENRY GREY.**

ROUSSEAU. (Foreign Classics for  
English Readers.) By HENRY GREY  
GRAHAM. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**GRAHAM, J. EDWARD, K.C.**

A MANUAL OF THE ACTS RELAT-  
ING TO EDUCATION IN SCOT-  
LAND. (Founded on that of the late  
Mr Craig Sellar.) By J. EDWARD  
GRAHAM, K.C., Advocate. New Edi-  
tion. Demy 8vo, 25s. net.

**GRAHAM, J. EDWARD.—contd.**

MANUAL OF THE ELECTIONS  
(SCOT.) (CORRUPT AND ILLEGAL  
PRACTICES) ACT, 1890. With Analy-  
sis, Relative Act of Sederunt, Appendix  
containing the Corrupt Practices Acts  
of 1883 and 1885, and Copious Index.  
8vo, 4s. 6d.

THE NEW EDUCATION (SCOTLAND)  
ACT. With Notes. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d.  
net.

**GRAHAM, E. MAXTONE, and PAT-  
ERSON, E.**

TRUE ROMANCES OF SCOTLAND.  
By E. MAXTONE GRAHAM and E. PATER-  
SON. Illustrations. Second Impression.  
Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**GRAN, GERHARD.**

JEAN JACQUES ROUSSEAU. By  
GERHARD GRAN. With three Por-  
traits. Demy 8vo 12s. 6d. net.

**GRANT, SIR ALEX.**

XENOPHON. (Ancient Classics for Eng-  
lish Readers.) By Sir ALEX. GRANT.  
Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

ARISTOTLE. (Ancient Classics for Eng-  
lish Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**GRANT, LIEUT.-COLONEL M. H.  
("LINESMAN.")**

THE MAKERS OF BLACK BASALTES.  
By LIEUT.-COLONEL M. H. GRANT  
("LINESMAN"). Illustrating nearly  
300 pieces. Demy 4to, 42s. net.

**GREY, DULCIBELLA ETHEL.**

POEMS. By DULCIBELLA ETHEL GREY.  
With a Prefatory Note by H. Cholmon-  
deley Pennell. Demy 8vo. Vellum,  
12s. 6d. net; half vellum, 7s. 6d. net.

**GRIER, SYDNEY C.**

HIS EXCELLENCY'S ENGLISH GOV-  
ERNESS. By SYDNEY C. GRIER.  
Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

AN UNCROWNED KING: A ROMANCE  
OF HIGH POLITICS. Third Impression.  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

PEACE WITH HONOUR. Third Im-  
pression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

A CROWNED QUEEN: THE ROMANCE  
OF A MINISTER OF STATE. Third Im-  
pression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

LIKE ANOTHER HELEN. Second  
Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE KINGS OF THE EAST: A  
ROMANCE OF THE NEAR FUTURE. Fourth  
Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE PRINCE OF THE CAPTIVITY.  
Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GRIER, SYDNEY C.**—*contd.*

**THE GREAT PROCONSUL.** The Memoirs of Mrs Hester Ward, formerly in the family of the Hon. Warren Hastings, Esq., late Governor-General of India. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE HEIR.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE POWER OF THE KEYS.** With Illustrations by A. Pearce. Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**THE HERITAGE.** Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE PATH TO HONOUR.** Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE PRIZE.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE KEEPERS OF THE GATE.** With Illustrations by A. PEARCE. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE ADVANCED GUARD.** Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

**ONE CROWDED HOUR.** With Cover Design and Coloured Frontispiece by A. PEARCE. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**A YOUNG MAN MARRIED.** Illustrated Edition by A. PEARCE. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**WRIT IN WATER.** With Illustrations by ALFRED PEARCE. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THE LETTERS OF WARREN HASTINGS TO HIS WIFE.** Demy 8vo, 6s. net.

**GRIERSON, PROFESSOR H. J. C.**  
**THE FIRST HALF OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.** (Periods of European Literature.) By Professor H. J. C. GRIERSON. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**GRIERSON, LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR J. M., K.C.B., K.C.M.G.**  
**RECORDS OF THE SCOTTISH VOLUNTEER FORCE, 1859-1908.** By Major-General Sir J. M. GRIERSON, K.C.B., K.C.M.G. With 47 Coloured Plates. Crown 4to, 25s. net.

**HAMERTON, P. G.**  
**WENDERHOLME.** By P. G. HAMERTON. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**MARMORNE.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**HAMILTON, CAPTAIN.**  
**CYRIL THORNTON.** By Captain HAMILTON. Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

**HAMILTON, MARY, D.Litt.**  
**GREEK SAINTS AND THEIR FESTIVALS.** By MARY HAMILTON, D.Litt. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**HAMLEY, GENERAL SIR EDWARD BRUCE, K.C.B., K.C.M.G.**  
**THE OPERATIONS OF WAR EXPLAINED AND ILLUSTRATED.** By General Sir EDWARD BRUCE HAMLEY, K.C.B., K.C.M.G.

A NEW EDITION, brought up to the latest requirements. By Brigadier-General L. E. KIOELL, C.B. 4to, with Maps and Plans, 30s.

**THOMAS CARLYLE: AN ESSAY.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**ON OUTPOSTS.** Second Edition. 8vo, 2s.

**LADY LEE'S WIDOWHOOD.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.; New Edition, crown 8vo, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

**VOLTAIRE.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**HANNAY, DAVID.**  
**THE LATER RENAISSANCE.** "Periods of European Literature." By DAVID HANNAY. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**SHIPS AND MEN.** With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**HARDEN, MAXIMILIAN.**  
**WORD PORTRAITS: CHARACTER SKETCHES OF FAMOUS MEN AND WOMEN.** By MAXIMILIAN HARDEN: In a Translation from the German by JULIUS GABE. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**HARDMAN, F.**  
**PENINSULAR SCENES AND SKETCHES.** By F. HARDMAN. Illustrated cover, 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**HARRADEN, BEATRICE.**  
**SHIPS THAT PASS IN THE NIGHT.** By BEATRICE HARRADEN. Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. Velvet Calf Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**THE FOWLER.** Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**UNTOLD TALES OF THE PAST.** With 40 Illustrations by H. R. MILLAR. Square crown 8vo, gilt top, 5s. net.

**KATHARINE FRENESHAM.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**HARTLEY, GILFRID W.**  
**WILD SPORT WITH GUN, RIFLE, AND SALMON-ROD.** By GILFRID W. HARTLEY. With numerous Illustrations in photogravure and half-tone from drawings by G. E. LODGE and others. Demy 8vo, 6s. net.

**WILD SPORT AND SOME STORIES.** With Illustrations Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

- HASELL, E. J.**  
**CALDERON.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By E. J. HASELL. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.  
**TASSO.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- HASSALL, ARTHUR.**  
**HISTORY OF BRITISH FOREIGN POLICY.** By ARTHUR HASSALL. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.
- HAY, BISHOP.**  
**THE WORKS OF THE RIGHT REV. DR GEORGE HAY,** Bishop of Edinburgh. Edited under the supervision of the Right Rev. Bishop STRAIN. With Memoir and Portrait of the Author. 5 vols. crown 8vo, 21s.
- HAY, IAN.**  
**"PIP."** By IAN HAY. Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.  
**"THE RIGHT STUFF."** Some Episodes in the Career of a North Briton. Fifth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.  
**A MAN'S MAN.** Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.  
**A SAFETY MATCH.** Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.  
**HAPPY-GO-LUCKY.** With Frontispiece in Colours and other Illustrations by Charles E. Brock. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- HAYWARD, A., Q.C.**  
**GOETHE.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By A. HAYWARD, Q.C. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- HEMANS, MRS.**  
**SELECT POEMS OF MRS HEMANS.** Fcap., cloth, gilt edges, 3s.
- HENDERSON, P. A. WRIGHT.**  
**THE LIFE AND TIMES OF JOHN WILKINS,** Warden of Wadham College, Oxford; Master of Trinity College, Cambridge; and Bishop of Chester. By P. A. WRIGHT HENDERSON. With Illustrations. Pott 4to, 5s. net.
- HENDERSON, RICHARD.**  
**THE YOUNG ESTATE MANAGER'S GUIDE.** By RICHARD HENDERSON, Member (by Examination) of the Royal Agricultural Society of England, the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland, and the Surveyors' Institution. With an Introduction by Professor WRIGHT, Glasgow and West of Scotland Technical College. With Plans and Diagrams. Crown 8vo, 5s.
- HENSON, H. HENSLEY, D.D.**  
**THE RELATION OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND TO THE OTHER REFORMED CHURCHES** (ROBERT LEE LECTURE, 1911). By Canon H. HENSLEY HENSON, D.D. Demy 8vo, 1s. net.
- HERFORD, PROFESSOR.**  
**BROWNING.** "Modern English Writers." By C. H. HERFORD, Litt.D., Professor of English Literature, University of Manchester. 2s. 6d.
- HERKLESS, PROFESSOR, and HANNAY, ROBERT KERR.**  
**THE COLLEGE OF ST LEONARD'S.** By JOHN HERKLESS, Professor of Ecclesiastical History in the University of St Andrews; and ROBERT KERR HANNAY, Curator of Historical Department, Register House, Edinburgh. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.  
**THE ARCHBISHOPS OF ST ANDREWS.** 4 vols. demy 8vo, each 7s. 6d. net.
- HINTS ON HOCKEY.** With Plans and Rules. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 1s.
- HOBART-HAMPDEN, E.**  
**THE PRICE OF EMPIRE.** By E. HOBART-HAMPDEN. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- HOLLAND, BERNARD, C.B.**  
**VERSE.** By BERNARD HOLLAND, C.B. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- HOOK, DEAN.**  
**PEN OWEN.** By Dean HOOK. Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.
- HOPE, JAMES F., M.P.**  
**A HISTORY OF THE 1900 PARLIAMENT.** By JAMES F. HOPE, M.P. In two volumes. Vol. I. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.
- HUME, DAVID.**  
**DIALOGUES CONCERNING NATURAL RELIGION.** By DAVID HUME. Reprinted, with an Introduction by BRUCE M'EWEN, D.Phil. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.
- HUME, E. DOUGLAS.**  
**THE MULTIPLICITIES OF UNA.** By E. DOUGLAS HUME. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- HUNT, C. M. G.**  
**A HANDY VOCABULARY: ENGLISH-AFRIKANDER, AFRIKANDER-ENGLISH.** By C. M. G. HUNT. Small 8vo, 1s.
- HUTCHINSON, HORACE G.**  
**HINTS ON THE GAME OF GOLF.** By HORACE G. HUTCHINSON. Twelfth Edition, Revised. Fcap. 8vo, cloth, 1s.
- HUTTON, EDWARD.**  
**ITALY AND THE ITALIANS.** By EDWARD HUTTON. With Illustrations. Second Edition. Large crown 8vo, 6s.
- INGLIS, JOHN.**  
**GEORGE WENDERN GAVE A PARTY.** By JOHN INGLIS. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- INNES, A. TAYLOR, LL.D.**  
**FREE CHURCH UNION CASE.** Judgment of the House of Lords. With Introduction by A. TAYLOR INNES, LL.D. Demy 8vo, 1s. net.

**INNES, A. TAYLOR, LL.D.**—*contd.*  
**THE LAW OF CREEDS IN SCOTLAND.** A Treatise on the Relations of Churches in Scotland, Established and not Established, to the Civil Law. Demy 8vo, 10s. net.

**INTELLIGENCE OFFICER.**  
**ON THE HEELS OF DE WET.** By THE INTELLIGENCE OFFICER. Sixth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
**THE YELLOW WAR.** Crown 8vo, 6s.  
**A SUBALTERN OF HORSE.** Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**JAMES, ANDREW.**  
**NINETY-EIGHT AND SIXTY YEARS AFTER.** By ANDREW JAMES. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**JAMES, LIONEL.**  
**SIDE-TRACKS AND BRIDLE-PATHS.** By LIONEL JAMES (Intelligence Officer). Crown 8vo, 6s.

**JAMES, LIEUT.-COL. WALTER H.**  
**MODERN STRATEGY.** By Lieut.-Col. WALTER H. JAMES, P.S.O., late R.E. With 6 Maps. Third Edition, thoroughly revised and brought up to date. Royal 8vo, 16s. net.

**THE CAMPAIGN OF 1815, CHIEFLY IN FLANDERS.** With Maps and Plans. Demy 8vo, 18s. net.

**THE PROGRESS OF TACTICS FROM 1740 TO THE PRESENT DAY.** Demy 8vo. [*In the press.*]

**JOHNSTON.**  
**ELEMENTS OF AGRICULTURAL CHEMISTRY.** An entirely New Edition from the Edition by Sir CHARLES A. CAMERON, M.D. Revised and in great part rewritten by C. M. AIKMAN, M.A., D.Sc., F.R.S.E., F.I.C., Professor of Chemistry, Glasgow Veterinary College. 21st Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s. 6d.

**CATECHISM OF AGRICULTURAL CHEMISTRY.** An entirely New Edition from the Edition by Sir CHARLES A. CAMERON. Revised and enlarged by C. M. AIKMAN, D.Sc., &c. 95th Thousand. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s.

**JOHNSTON, CHRISTOPHER N., K.C., LL.D.**  
**AGRICULTURAL HOLDINGS (SCOTLAND) ACTS, 1883 to 1900; and the GROUND GAME ACT, 1880.** With Notes, and Summary of Procedure, &c. By CHRISTOPHER N. JOHNSTON, K.C., LL.D. Sixth Edition. Demy 8vo, 6s. net.

**MAJOR OWEN, AND OTHER TALES.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**JOKAI, MAURUS.**  
**TIMAR'S TWO WORLDS.** By MAURUS JOKAI. Authorised Translation by Mrs HEGAN KENNARD. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**JORDAN, HUMFREY.**  
**MY LADY OF INTRIGUE.** By HUMFREY JORDAN. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
**THE JOYOUS WAYFARER.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**KENDIM, BEN.**  
**EASTERN SONGS.** By BEN KENDIM. With Frontispiece in Colours by Lady AILEEN WELLESLEY. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**KENNION, LIEUT.-COLONEL R. L.**  
**SPORT AND LIFE IN THE FURTHER HIMALAYA.** By LIEUT.-COLONEL R. L. KENNION. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.

**BY MOUNTAIN, LAKE, AND PLAIN.** Being Sketches of Sport in Eastern Persia. With Coloured Frontispiece and 75 Illustrations from Photographs by the AUTHOR. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**KER, PROFESSOR W. P.**  
**THE DARK AGES.** "Periods of European Literature." By Professor W. P. KER. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**KERR, JOHN, LL.D.**  
**MEMORIES: GRAVE AND GAY.** By JOHN KERR, LL.D. With Portrait and other Illustrations. Cheaper Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.  
**OTHER MEMORIES: OLD AND NEW.** Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

**KINGLAKE, A. W.**  
**HISTORY OF THE INVASION OF THE CRIMEA.** By A. W. KINGLAKE. Complete in 9 vols. crown 8vo. Cheap reissue at 3s. 6d. each.

— Abridged Edition for Military Students. Revised by Lieut.-Col. Sir GEORGE SYDENHAM CLARKE, G.C.M.G., G.C.I.E. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

— Atlas to accompany above. Folio, 9s. net.

**EOTHEN.** Cheap Edition. With Portrait and Biographical Sketch of the Author. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**KINGSBURGH, THE RIGHT HON. LORD, K.C.B.**  
**FIFTY YEARS OF IT: THE EXPERIENCES AND STRUGGLES OF A VOLUNTEER OF 1859.** By The Right Hon. LORD KINGSBURGH, K.C.B. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**KNEIPP, SEBASTIAN.**  
**MY WATER-CURE.** As Tested through more than Thirty Years, and Described for the Healing of Diseases and the Preservation of Health. By SEBASTIAN KNEIPP. With Illustrations. Authorised English Translation from the Thirtieth German Edition, by A. de F. With an Appendix, containing the Latest Developments of Pfarrer Kneipp's System, and a Preface by E. Gerard. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.



**KNIGHT, PROFESSOR.**

HUME. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Professor KNIGHT. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**KYNNERSLEY, E. M. SNEYD.**

TOM, VRON. By E. M. SNEYD KYN-  
NERSLEY. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**LANG, ANDREW.**

A HISTORY OF SCOTLAND FROM  
THE ROMAN OCCUPATION. By  
ANDREW LANG. Complete in Four Vol-  
umes. Demy 8vo, £3, 3s. net.

Vol. I. With a Photogravure Frontis-  
piece. 15s. net.

Vol. II. With a Photogravure Frontis-  
piece. 15s. net.

Vol. III. With a Photogravure Frontis-  
piece. 15s. net.

Vol. IV. With a Photogravure Frontis-  
piece. 20s. net.

TENNYSON. "Modern English Writers."  
Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

A SHORT HISTORY OF SCOTLAND.  
Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**LAPWORTH, PROFESSOR.**

INTERMEDIATE TEXT-BOOK OF  
GEOLOGY. By CHARLES LAPWORTH,  
LL.D., Professor of Geology, Univer-  
sity, Birmingham. 5s.

**LAWSON, W. R.**

BRITISH ECONOMICS. By W. R.  
LAWSON. Second Edition. Crown 8vo,  
6s. net.

AMERICAN FINANCE. Second Edi-  
tion. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

JOHN BULL AND HIS SCHOOLS.  
Crown 8vo, 5s. net. New Edition,  
Paper Cover, 2s. net.

CANADA AND THE EMPIRE. Crown  
8vo, 6s. net.

MODERN WARS AND WAR TAXES.  
A Manual of Military Finance. Crown  
8vo, 6s. net.

**LEATHAM, A. E.**

SPORT IN FIVE CONTINENTS. By  
A. E. LEATHAM. With Illustrations.  
Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**LEHMANN, R. C.**

CRUMBS OF PITY, AND OTHER VERSES;  
TO WHICH ARE ADDED SIX LIVES OF  
GREAT MEN. By R. C. LEHMANN,  
author of 'Anni Fugaces,' &c. Crown  
8vo, 5s. net.

LIGHT AND SHADE: AND OTHER  
POEMS. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**LEIGHTON, GERALD R., M.D.**

THE LIFE-HISTORY OF BRITISH  
SERPENTS, AND THEIR LOCAL  
DISTRIBUTION IN THE BRITISH  
ISLES. By GERALD R. LEIGHTON,  
M.D. With 50 Illustrations. Crown  
8vo, 5s. net.

**LEISHMAN, VERY REV. T., D.D.**

THE WESTMINSTER DIRECTORY.  
Edited, with an Introduction and  
Notes, by the Very Rev. T. LEISHMAN,  
D.D. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

**LEWIS, ARTHUR.**

THE PILGRIM. By ARTHUR LEWIS.  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

**LINDSAY, REV. JAMES, D.D.**

RECENT ADVANCES IN THEISTIC  
PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION. By  
Rev. JAMES LINDSAY, M.A., D.D., B.Sc.,  
F.R.S.E., F.G.S. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d.  
net.

THE PROGRESSIVENESS OF  
MODERN CHRISTIAN THOUGHT.  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

ESSAYS, LITERARY AND PHILOSO-  
PHICAL. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE OLD  
TESTAMENT FOR MODERN THEO-  
LOGY. Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

THE TEACHING FUNCTION OF THE  
MODERN PULPIT. Crown 8vo, 1s.  
net.

STUDIES IN EUROPEAN PHILOS-  
OPHY. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

THE FUNDAMENTAL PROBLEMS OF  
METAPHYSICS. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

THE PSYCHOLOGY OF BELIEF.  
Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

NEW ESSAYS—LITERARY AND  
PHILOSOPHICAL. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

LITERARY ESSAYS. Crown 8vo, 8s.  
6d. net.

CHRISTIANITY AND MODERN CUL-  
TURE. Crown 8vo, 6d.

**"LINESMAN."**

THE MAKERS OF BLACK BASALTES.  
By "LINESMAN." With nearly 300 Illus-  
trations. Demy 4to, 42s. net.

**LITURGIES AND ORDERS OF  
DIVINE SERVICE (CHURCH  
SERVICE SOCIETY).**

THE SECOND PRAYER BOOK OF  
KING EDWARD THE SIXTH (1552).  
With Historical Introduction and Notes  
by the Rev. H. J. WOTHERSPOON, M.A.,  
of St Oswald's, Edinburgh; and THE  
LITURGY OF COMPROMISE. Used in the  
English Congregation at Frankfurt.  
From an Unpublished MS. Edited by  
the Rev. G. W. SPROTT, D.D. 4s. net.  
BOOK OF COMMON ORDER. Com-  
monly called Knox's Liturgy. Edited  
by Rev. G. W. SPROTT, D.D. 4s. 6d.  
net.

SCOTTISH LITURGIES OF THE  
REIGN OF JAMES VI. Edited by  
Rev. G. W. SPROTT, D.D. 4s. net.

LITURGY OF 1637. Commonly called  
LAUD'S LITURGY. Edited by the Rev.  
Professor COOPER, D.D. 7s. 6d. net.

THE WESTMINSTER DIRECTORY.  
Edited by Very Rev. T. LEISHMAN, D.D.  
4s. net.

EUCHOLOGION. A Book of Common  
Order: Being Forms of Prayer, and  
Administration of the Sacraments, and  
other Ordinances of the Church. Edited  
by the Rev. G. W. SPROTT, D.D. 4s. 6d.  
net.



- LOBBAN, J. H., M.A.**  
AN ANTHOLOGY OF ENGLISH VERSE FROM CHAUCER TO THE PRESENT DAY. By J. H. LOBBAN, M.A. Crown 8vo, gilt top, 6s.  
THE SCHOOL ANTHOLOGY OF ENGLISH VERSE. Part I., Chaucer to Burns, cloth, 1s. net. Part II., Wordsworth to Newbolt, cloth, 1s. net. In One Volume complete, cloth, 2s. net.
- LOCKHART, J. G.**  
REGINALD DALTON. By J. G. LOCKHART. Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.  
ADAM BLAIR. Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.  
VALERIUS: A ROMAN STORY. Illustrated cover, 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.
- LOCKHART, LAURENCE W. M.**  
DOUBLES AND QUITS. By LAURENCE W. M. LOCKHART. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
FAIR TO SEE. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
MINE IS THINE. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.
- LUCAS, ST JOHN.**  
SAINTS, SINNERS, AND THE USUAL PEOPLE. By ST JOHN LUCAS. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
THE LADY OF THE CANARIES. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- LYNDEN-BELL, LIEUT.-COLONEL.**  
A PRIMER OF TACTICS, FORTIFICATION, TOPOGRAPHY, AND MILITARY LAW. By Lieut.-Colonel C. P. LYNDEN-BELL. With Diagrams. Crown 8vo, 3s. net.
- MABIE, HAMILTON WRIGHT.**  
ESSAYS ON NATURE AND CULTURE. By HAMILTON WRIGHT MABIE. With Portrait. Fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
BOOKS AND CULTURE. Fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.
- MCCARTHY, MICHAEL J. F.**  
THE NONCONFORMIST TREASON; OR, THE SALE OF THE EMERALD ISLE. By MICHAEL J. F. MCCARTHY. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
THE IRISH REVOLUTION. The Murdering Time, from the Land League to the first Home Rule Bill. Vol. I. With numerous Portraits. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.
- M'CONACHIE, WILLIAM, B.D.**  
IN THE LAP OF THE LAMMERMOORS. By WILLIAM M'CONACHIE, B.D. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- MACCUNN, FLORENCE.**  
SIR WALTER SCOTT'S FRIENDS. By FLORENCE MACCUNN. With Portraits. Third Impression. Demy 8vo, 10s. net.
- MACDONALD, NORMAN DORAN.**  
A MANUAL OF THE CRIMINAL LAW (SCOTLAND) PROCEDURE ACT, 1887. By NORMAN DORAN MACDONALD. Revised by the LORD JUSTICE-CLERK. 8vo, 10s. 6d.
- MACDOUGALL, J. PATTEN, C.B., and J. M. DODD, C.B.**  
A MANUAL OF THE LOCAL GOVERNMENT (SCOTLAND) ACT, 1894. THE PARISH COUNCIL GUIDE FOR SCOTLAND. By J. PATTEN MACDOUGALL, C.B., and J. M. DODD, C.B. New and Revised Edition. [In preparation.]
- M'IVER, IVER.**  
AN IMPERIAL ADVENTURE. By IVER M'IVER. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
CAUGHT ON THE WING. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.
- MACKAY, LYDIA MILLER.**  
THE RETURN OF THE EMIGRANT. By LYDIA MILLER MACKAY. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- MACKENZIE, LORD.**  
STUDIES IN ROMAN LAW. With Comparative Views of the Laws of France, England, and Scotland. By LORD MACKENZIE, one of the Judges of the Court of Session in Scotland. Edited by JOHN KIRKPATRICK, M.A., LL.D., Advocate, Professor of History in the University of Edinburgh. 8vo, 21s.
- MACKENZIE, W. A.**  
ROWTON HOUSE RHYMES. By W. A. MACKENZIE. Crown 8vo, 3s. net.
- MACKINLAY, J. M.**  
INFLUENCE OF THE PRE-REFORMATION CHURCH ON SCOTTISH PLACE-NAMES. By J. M. MACKINLAY, F.S.A. (Scot.) Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.
- MACLEOD, OLIVE.**  
CHIEFS AND CITIES OF CENTRAL AFRICA. Across Lake Chad by way of British, French, and German Territories. By OLIVE MACLEOD. With 250 Illustrations and 3 Maps. Royal 8vo, 16s. net.
- MACMUNN, MAJOR G. F. D.S.O., R.F.A.**  
PIKE AND CARRONADE. By Major G. F. MACMUNN, D.S.O., R.F.A. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- MACNAMARA, RACHEL SWETE.**  
THE TRANCE. By RACHEL SWETE MACNAMARA. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
THE SIBYL OF VENICE. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
SEED OF FIRE. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
SPINNERS IN SILENCE. Cr. 8vo, 6s.

**MACPHERSON, HECTOR.**

BOOKS TO READ AND HOW TO READ THEM. By HECTOR MACPHERSON. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

A CENTURY OF POLITICAL DEVELOPMENT. 3s. 6d. net.

SCOTLAND'S DEBT TO PROTESTANTISM. With Portrait. Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

**MACPHERSON, HECTOR, Jun.**

A CENTURY'S PROGRESS IN ASTRONOMY. By HECTOR MACPHERSON, jun. Short demy 8vo, 6s. net.

THROUGH THE DEPTHS OF SPACE: A PRIMER OF ASTRONOMY. Crown 8vo, 2s. net.

**MACRAE, J. A.**

FOR KIRK AND KING. By J. A. MACRAE. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**MAHAFFY, PROFESSOR.**

DESCARTES. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Professor MAHAFFY. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**MAIR, REV. WILLIAM, D.D.**

A DIGEST OF LAWS AND DECISIONS, Ecclesiastical and Civil, relating to the Constitution, Practice, and Affairs of the Church of Scotland. With Notes and Forms of Procedure. By the Rev. WILLIAM MAIR, D.D. Fourth Edition, Revised to date (1912). In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

SPEAKING; OR, FROM VOICE PRODUCTION TO THE PLATFORM AND PULPIT. Fourth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d. net.

**MALLOCK, W. H.**

LUCRETIUS. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By W. H. MALLOCK. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**MARSHMAN, JOHN CLARK, C.S.I.**

HISTORY OF INDIA. From the Earliest Period to the Present Time. By JOHN CLARK MARSHMAN, C.S.I. Third and Cheaper Edition. Post 8vo, 6s.

**MARTIN, SIR THEODORE, K.C.B.**

HORACE. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By SIR THEODORE MARTIN, K.C.B. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

POEMS OF GIACOMO LEOPARDI. Translated. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

THE ÆNEID OF VIRGIL. Books I.-VI. Translated. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

GOETHE'S FAUST. Part I. Translated into English Verse. Second Edition, crown 8vo, 6s. Ninth Edition, fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

GOETHE'S FAUST. Part II. Translated into English Verse. Second Edition, Revised. Fcap. 8vo, 6s.

**MARTIN, SIR THEODORE—contd.**

POEMS AND BALLADS OF HEINRICH HEINE. Done into English Verse. Third Edition. Small crown 8vo, 5s.

THE SONG OF THE BELL, AND OTHER TRANSLATIONS FROM SCHILLER, GOETHE UHLAND, AND OTHERS. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

MADONNA PIA: A TRAGEDY; AND THREE OTHER DRAMAS. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

THE 'VITA NUOVA' OF DANTE. Translated with an Introduction and Notes. Fourth Edition. Small crown 8vo, 5s.

ALADDIN: A DRAMATIC POEM. By ADAM OEHLenschLAEGER. Fcap. 8vo, 5s.

CORREGGIO: A TRAGEDY. By OEHLenschLAEGER. With Notes. Fcap. 8vo, 3s.

HELENA FAUCIT (LADY MARTIN). By SIR THEODORE MARTIN, K.C.B., K.C.V.O. With Five Photogravure Plates. Second Edition. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

POEMS AND BALLADS OF GOETHE. By SIR THEODORE MARTIN and Professor AYTOUN. Third Edition. With Introduction by SIR THEODORE MARTIN. Small crown 8vo, 6s. net.

QUEEN VICTORIA AS I KNEW HER. Square crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**MARTIN, HELENA FAUCIT, LADY.**

ON SOME OF SHAKESPEARE'S FEMALE CHARACTERS. By HELENA FAUCIT, LADY MARTIN. *Dedicated by permission to Her Most Gracious Majesty the Queen.* With a Portrait by Lehmann. Seventh Edition, with a new Preface. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**MASSON, PROFESSOR.**

MEMORIES OF LONDON IN THE FORTIES. By DAVID MASSON. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**MATHESON, REV. GEORGE, D.D.**

CAN THE OLD FAITH LIVE WITH THE NEW? OR, THE PROBLEM OF EVOLUTION AND REVELATION. By the Rev. GEORGE MATHESON, D.D. Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

THE PSALMIST AND THE SCIENTIST; OR, MODERN VALUE OF THE RELIGIOUS SENTIMENT. Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

SPIRITUAL DEVELOPMENT OF ST PAUL. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

THE DISTINCTIVE MESSAGES OF THE OLD RELIGIONS. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

SACRED SONGS. Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**MAXWELL, GEORGE.**  
IN MALAY FORESTS. By GEORGE  
MAXWELL. Second Edition. Crown  
8vo, 6s. net.

**MAXWELL, RIGHT HON. SIR  
HERBERT, BART.**  
DUMFRIES AND GALLOWAY. By  
Right Hon. Sir HERBERT MAXWELL,  
Bart. Being one of the Volumes of the  
County Histories of Scotland. With  
Four Maps. Second Edition. Demy  
8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**MEAKIN, ANNETTE M. B.**  
WHAT AMERICA IS DOING. Letters  
from the New World. By ANNETTE M.  
B. MEAKIN. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**MELDRUM, DAVID S.**  
THE CONQUEST OF CHARLOTTE.  
By DAVID S. MELDRUM. Third Impres-  
sion. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE STORY OF MARGRÉDEL: Be-  
ing a Fireside History of a Fife-shire  
Family. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo,  
3s. 6d.

GREY MANTLE AND GOLD FRINGE.  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MELLONE, SYDNEY HERBERT,  
M.A., D.Sc.**

STUDIES IN PHILOSOPHICAL CRITI-  
CISM AND CONSTRUCTION. By  
SYDNEY HERBERT MELLONE, M.A.  
Lond., D.Sc. Edin. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d.  
net.

LEADERS OF RELIGIOUS THOUGHT  
IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.  
Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

AN INTRODUCTORY TEXT-BOOK  
OF LOGIC. Sixth Edition, Revised.  
Crown 8vo, 5s.

ELEMENTS OF PSYCHOLOGY.  
Second Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo,  
5s.

THE IMMORTAL HOPE. Crown 8vo,  
2s. 6d.

FREDERICK NIETZSCHE AND HIS  
ATTACK ON CHRISTIANITY. Demy  
8vo, paper cover, 3d.

**MERZ, JOHN THEODORE.**

A HISTORY OF EUROPEAN  
THOUGHT IN THE NINETEENTH  
CENTURY. By JOHN THEODORE  
MERZ, Ph.D., D.C.L., LL.D. Vol. I.  
Third Impression. Post 8vo, 10s. 6d.  
net. Vol. II. Second Impression. 15s.  
net. Vol. III. 15s. net. Vol. IV. 15s.  
net. [In the press.]

LEIBNIZ. (Philosophical Classics for  
English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**MEYNELL, MRS.**

JOHN RUSKIN. "Modern English  
Writers." By Mrs MEYNELL. Third  
Impression. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**MICKLETHWAIT, ST J. G., M.A.,  
B.C.L.**

THE LICENSING ACT, 1904. By  
St J. G. MICKLETHWAIT, M.A., B.C.L.,  
Barrister-at-Law. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.  
net.

**MILL, GARRETT.**

CAPTAIN GRANT'S DESPATCH. By  
GARRETT MILL. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MILLAR, PROFESSOR J. H.**

THE MID-EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.  
"Periods of European Literature." By  
J. H. MILLAR. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**MITCHELL, ALEXANDER F., D.D.,  
LL.D.**

THE SCOTTISH REFORMATION. Be-  
ing the Baird Lecture for 1899. By the  
late ALEXANDER F. MITCHELL, D.D.,  
LL.D. Edited by D. HAY FLEMING,  
LL.D. With a Biographical Sketch of  
the Author, by JAMES CHRISTIE, D.D.  
Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MODERN ENGLISH WRITERS.** In  
handy crown 8vo volumes, tastefully  
bound, price 2s. 6d. each.

MATTHEW ARNOLD. By Professor  
SAINTSBURY. Second Impression.

JOHN RUSKIN. By Mrs MEYNELL.  
Third Impression.

TENNYSON. By ANDREW LANG.  
Second Impression.

HUXLEY. By EDWARD CLODD.

THACKERAY. By CHARLES WHIBLEY.

BROWNING. By Professor C. H.  
HERFORD.

**MOIR, D. M.**

LIFE OF MANSIE WAUCH, TAILOR  
IN DALKEITH. By D. M. MOIR.  
With Cruikshank's Illustrations.  
Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

— Another Edition. Illustrated cover,  
1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**MOMERIE, REV. ALFRED WIL-  
LIAMS, M.A., D.Sc., LL.D.**

THE ORIGIN OF EVIL; AND OTHER  
SERMONS. By Rev. ALFRED WILLIAMS  
MOMERIE, M.A., D.Sc., LL.D., late  
Fellow of St John's College, Cambridge.  
Eighth Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo,  
5s.

PERSONALITY. The Beginning and  
End of Metaphysics, and a Necessary  
Assumption in all Positive Philosophy.  
Fifth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 3s.

**MOMERIE, REV. A. W.—contd.**

PREACHING AND HEARING; AND OTHER SERMONS. Fourth Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 5s.

BELIEF IN GOD. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s.

THE FUTURE OF RELIGION. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE ENGLISH CHURCH AND THE ROMISH SCHISM. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

ESSAYS ON THE BIBLE. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

CHARACTER. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

MODERN SCEPTICISM AND MODERN FAITH. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**MOMERIE, MRS.**

DR ALFRED MOMERIE. His Life and Work. By Mrs MOMERIE. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**MORICE, REV. F. D.**

PINDAR. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By Rev. F. D. MORICE. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**MORISON, SIR THEODORE, K.C.I.E., and HUTCHINSON, GEORGE P.**

LIFE OF SIR EDWARD FITZGERALD LAW, K.C.S.I., K.C.M.G. By Sir THEODORE MORISON, K.C.I.E., and GEORGE P. HUTCHINSON. With portraits. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**MUNRO, NEIL.**

THE DAFT DAYS. By NEIL MUNRO. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Uniform Edition, 3s. 6d. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

FANCY FARM. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s. net.

*Uniform Edition Novels.*

JOHN SPLENDID. The Tale of a Poor Gentleman and the Little Wars of Lorn. Sixth Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

CHILDREN OF TEMPEST: A TALE OF THE OUTER ISLES. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

SHOES OF FORTUNE. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE LOST PIBROCH, AND OTHER SHEILING STORIES. Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

DOOM CASTLE: A ROMANCE. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

GILIAN THE DREAMER. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE DAFT DAYS. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

FANCY FARM. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**MUNRO, ROBERT, M.A., M.D., LL.D., F.R.S.E.**

RAMBLES AND STUDIES IN BOSNIA-HERZEGOVINA AND DALMATIA. By ROBERT MUNRO, M.A., M.D., LL.D., F.R.S.E. Second Edition, Revised and Enlarged. With numerous Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

PREHISTORIC PROBLEMS. With numerous Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 10s. net.

**MUNRO, WILLIAM, M.A.**

ON VALUATION OF PROPERTY. By WILLIAM MUNRO, M.A., Her Majesty's Assessor of Railways and Canals for Scotland. Second Edition, Revised and Enlarged. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**MYRES, PROFESSOR JOHN L.**

A MANUAL OF CLASSICAL GEOGRAPHY. By JOHN L. MYRES, M.A., Professor of Ancient History, Oxford. Crown 8vo. [*In the press.*]

**NEAVES, LORD.**

GREEK ANTHOLOGY. (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By Lord NEAVES. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**NEWBOLT, HENRY.**

THE NEW JUNE. By HENRY NEWBOLT. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE TWYMANS. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**NICHOL, PROFESSOR.**

BACON. (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Professor NICHOL. Fcap. 8vo, Part I, 1s. net; Part II, 1s. net.

**NICHOLSON, PROFESSOR H. ALLEYNE, and LYDEKKER, RICHARD, B.A.**

A MANUAL OF PALEONTOLOGY, for the use of Students. With a General Introduction on the Principles of Palæontology. By Professor H. ALLEYNE NICHOLSON and RICHARD LYDEKKER, B.A. Third Edition, entirely Rewritten and greatly Enlarged. 2 vols. 8vo, £3. 3s.

**NICOL, REV. THOMAS, D.D.**

RECENT ARCHÆOLOGY AND THE BIBLE. Being the Croall Lecture for 1898. By the Rev. THOMAS NICOL, D.D., Professor of Divinity and Biblical Criticism in the University of Aberdeen; Author of 'Recent Explorations in Bible Lands.' Demy 8vo, 9s. net.

THE FOUR GOSPELS IN THE EARLIEST CHURCH HISTORY. Being the Baird Lecture for 1907. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.



**NISBET, JOHN D.Cc.**

**THE FORESTER: A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON BRITISH FORESTRY AND ARBORICULTURE, FOR LANDOWNERS, LAND AGENTS, AND FORESTERS.** By JOHN NISBET, D.Cc. In 2 volumes, royal 8vo, with 285 illustrations, 42s. net.

**THE ELEMENTS OF BRITISH FORESTRY.** A Handbook for Forest Apprentices and Students of Forestry. Crown 8vo, 5s. 6d. net.

**NOBLE, EDWARD.**

**WAVES OF FATE.** By EDWARD NOBLE. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FISHERMAN'S GAT: A STORY OF THE THAMES ESTUARY.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**NOYES, ALFRED.**

**DRAKE: AN ENGLISH EPIC.** By ALFRED NOYES. Books I.-III. Crown 8vo, 5s. net. Books IV.-XII. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

— The Complete Work in 1 vol. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net.

**FORTY SINGING SEAMEN.** Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**THE ENCHANTED ISLAND, AND OTHER POEMS.** Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**THE FOREST OF WILD THYME.** Illustrated by Claude A. Shepperson. Small 4to, 6s. net. Velvet Calf Edition, 10s. 6d. net.

**COLLECTED POEMS.** 2 vols. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 10s. net. Vols. sold separately, 5s. net. each.

**ROBIN HOOD.** Crown 8vo. [*In the Press.*]

**TALES OF THE MERMAID TAVERN.** Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**THE WINEPRESS.** A Tale of War. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net.

**O'BRIEN, AUBREY, and BOLSTER, REGINALD.**

**CUPID AND CARTRIDGES.** By AUBREY O'BRIEN and REGINALD BOLSTER. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 10s. net. Edition for India and the Colonies, 5s. net.

**"OLE LUK-OIE."**

**THE GREEN CURVE.** By "OLE LUK-OIE." Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 1s net.

**OLIPHANT, C. F.**

**ALFRED DE MUSSET.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By C. F. OLIPHANT. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**OLIPHANT, LAURENCE.**

**PICCADILLY.** By LAURENCE OLIPHANT. With Illustrations by Richard Doyle. 4s. 6d. New Edition, 3s. 6d. Cheap Edition, boards, 2s. 6d.

**OLIPHANT, MRS.**

**ANNALS OF A PUBLISHING HOUSE.** William Blackwood and his Sons; Their Magazine and Friends. By MRS OLIPHANT. With Four Portraits. Third Edition. Demy 8vo. Vols. I. and II. £2, 2s.

**A WIDOWS TALE, AND OTHER STORIES.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**KATIE STEWART, AND OTHER STORIES.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth, 3s. 6d. Illustrated Boards, 2s. 6d.

**VALENTINE AND HIS BROTHER.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**SONS AND DAUGHTERS.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**DANTE.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**CERVANTES.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**THE PERPETUAL CURATE.** Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

**JOHN: A LOVE STORY.** Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

**THE RECTOR AND THE DOCTOR'S FAMILY.** Illustrated cover, 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

**OLIPHANT, MRS. and TARVER, F.**

**MOLIERE.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By MRS OLIPHANT and F. TARVER. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**OMOND, T. S.**

**THE ROMANTIC TRIUMPH.** "Periods of European Literature." By T. S. OMOND. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**O'NEILL, MOIRA.**

**SONGS OF THE GLENS OF ANTRIM.** By MOIRA O'NEILL. Fourteenth Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**PAGE, ARTHUR.**

**IMPERIALISM AND DEMOCRACY** Unionist Principles applied to Modern Problems. By ARTHUR PAGE. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**PAGE AND LAPWORTH.**

**INTERMEDIATE TEXT-BOOK OF GEOLOGY.** By Professor LAPWORTH. Founded on Dr Page's 'Introductory Text-Book of Geology.' Crown 8vo, 5s.

**ADVANCED TEXT-BOOK OF GEOLOGY.** New Edition. Revised and Enlarged by Professor LAPWORTH. Crown 8vo. [*In the press.*]

**INTRODUCTORY TEXT-BOOK OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY.** Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY EXAMINATOR.** Crown 8vo, sewed, 9d.

**PARRY, MARK GAMBIER.**

**MADAME NECKER.** Her Family and her Friends, with some Account of her Husband's three Administrations. By MARK GAMBIER PARRY. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.



**PATERSON, JOHN W., Ph.D.**

**A MANUAL OF AGRICULTURAL BOTANY.** From the German of Dr A. B. Frank, Professor in the Royal Agricultural College, Berlin. With over 100 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**PATTISON, R. P. DUNN.**

**HISTORY OF THE 91st ARGYLL-SHIRE HIGHLANDERS.** By R. P. DUNN PATTISON. With Maps and Illustrations. Demy 4to, 42s. net.

**PAUL, SIR JAMES BALFOUR.**

**HISTORY OF THE ROYAL COMPANY OF ARCHERS, THE QUEEN'S BODY-GUARD FOR SCOTLAND.** By Sir JAMES BALFOUR PAUL, Advocate of the Scottish Bar. Crown 4to, with Portraits and other Illustrations. £2, 2s.

**PEARSE, COLONEL.**

**MEMOIR OF THE LIFE AND MILITARY SERVICES OF VISCOUNT LAKE, BARON LAKE OF DELHI AND LASWARRE, 1744-1808.** By Colonel HUGH PEARSE. With Portraits, &c. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**PERIODS OF EUROPEAN LITERATURE.** Edited by Professor SAINTS-BURY. *For List of Vols., see p. 32.*

**PHILOSOPHICAL CLASSICS FOR**

**ENGLISH READERS.** Edited by WILLIAM KNIGHT, LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of St Andrews. Cheap Re-issue in Shilling Volumes net. *For List of Vols., see p. 32.*

**PIELE, LIEUT.-COLONEL S. C. F.**

**LAWN TENNIS AS A GAME OF SKILL.** By Lieut.-Col. S. C. F. PIELE. Seventh Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 1s.

**POLLOK, ROBERT, A.M.**

**THE COURSE OF TIME: A POEM.** By ROBERT POLLOK, A.M. New Edition. With Portrait. Fcap. 8vo, gilt top, 2s. 6d.

**PORTER, MARY BLACKWOOD.**

**JOHN BLACKWOOD, EDITOR AND PUBLISHER.** By MARY BLACKWOOD PORTER. With Two Portraits and view of Strathclyde. Demy 8vo, 21s.

**POTTS, A. W., M.A., LL.D., and**

**DARNELL, REV. C., M.A.**  
**ADITUS FACILIORES.** An Easy Latin Construing Book, with Vocabulary. By A. W. POTTS, M.A., LL.D., Late Headmaster of the Fettes College, Edinburgh, and sometime Fellow of St John's College, Cambridge; and the Rev. C. DARNELL, M.A., Late Headmaster of Cargilfield Preparatory School, Edinburgh, and Scholar of Pembroke and Downing Colleges, Cambridge. 1s. 6d. net.

**POTTS and DARNELL—contd.**

**ADITUS FACILIORES GRÆCI.** An easy grade construing book. With complete vocabulary. Fcap 8vo, 3s.

**POTTS, A. W., M.A., LL.D., and**

**HEARD, W. A., M.A., LL.D.**  
**CAMENARUM FLOSCULOS** in Usum Fettesianorum decerptos notis quibusdam illustraverunt A. GUL. POTTS, M.A., LL.D.; GUL. A. HEARD, M.A., LL.D. New Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**PRINGLE-PATTISON, A. SETH, LL.D., D.C.L.**

**SCOTTISH PHILOSOPHY.** A Comparison of the Scottish and German Answers to Hume. Balfour Philosophical Lectures, University of Edinburgh. By A. SETH PRINGLE-PATTISON, LL.D., D.C.L., Fellow of the British Academy, Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in Edinburgh University. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**MAN'S PLACE IN THE COSMOS, AND OTHER ESSAYS.** Second Edition, Enlarged. Post 8vo, 6s. net.

**TWO LECTURES ON THEISM.** Delivered on the occasion of the Sesquicentennial Celebration of Princeton University. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**THE PHILOSOPHICAL RADICALS, AND OTHER ESSAYS,** including Chapters reprinted on the Philosophy of Religion in Kant and Hegel. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**PUBLIC GENERAL STATUTES AFFECTING SCOTLAND from 1707 to 1847, with Chronological Table and Index.** 3 vols. large 8vo, £3, 3s. Also Published Annually, with General Index.

**PURVIS, SIR ROBERT, M.A., LL.D.**

**SIR WILLIAM ARROL.** A Memoir. By Sir ROBERT PURVIS, M.A., LL.D. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**"Q" (SIR A. T. QUILLER-COUCH).**

**HOCKEN AND HUNKEN.** By "Q" (Sir A. T. QUILLER-COUCH). Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**RANJITSINHJI, PRINCE.**

**THE JUBILEE BOOK OF CRICKET.** By PRINCE RANJITSINHJI.

*Popular Edition.* With 107 full-page Illustrations. Sixth Edition. Large crown 8vo, 6s.

**REEVE, HENRY, C.B.**

**PETRARCH.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By HENRY REEVE, C.B. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**REYNARD, CAPTAIN F.**

**THE HISTORY OF THE NINTH LANCERS FROM 1715 to 1903.** By Capt. F. REYNARD. Royal 8vo, 42s. net.

- RICHARDS, H. GRAHAME.**  
**RICHARD SOMERS.** By H. GRAHAME RICHARDS. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- LUCREZIA BORGIA'S ONE LOVE.**  
 Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- CENTENE.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- RICHARDSON, MAJOR E. H.**  
**WAR, POLICE, AND WATCH DOGS.**  
 By Major E. H. RICHARDSON. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- RIVETT-CARNAC, J. H., C.I.E.**  
**MANY MEMORIES OF LIFE IN INDIA, AT HOME, AND ABROAD.**  
 By J. H. RIVETT-CARNAC, C.I.E. With Portraits. Second Impression. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.
- ROBERTSON, PROFESSOR CROOM.**  
**HOBBS.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Professor CROOM ROBERTSON. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- ROBERTSON, JAMES, D.D.**  
**EARLY RELIGIONS OF ISRAEL.** New and Revised Edition. Crown 8vo.  
*[In the press.]*
- THE POETRY AND THE RELIGION OF THE PSALMS.** The Croall Lectures, 1893-94. By JAMES ROBERTSON, D.D., Professor of Oriental Languages in the University of Glasgow. Demy 8vo, 12s.
- ROBERTSON, JOHN G., Ph.D.**  
**A HISTORY OF GERMAN LITERATURE.** By JOHN G. ROBERTSON, Ph.D., Professor of German, University of London. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.
- OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF GERMAN LITERATURE.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.
- SCHILLER AFTER A CENTURY.**  
 Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.
- RONALDSHAY, EARL OF, M.P.**  
**ON THE OUTSKIRTS OF EMPIRE IN ASIA.** By the EARL OF RONALDSHAY, M.P. With numerous Illustrations and Maps. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.
- SPORT AND POLITICS UNDER AN EASTERN SKY.** With numerous Illustrations and Maps. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.
- A WANDERING STUDENT IN THE FAR EAST.** With Maps and 60 Illustrations. 2 vols. short demy 8vo, 21s. net.
- AN EASTERN MISCELLANY.** Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.
- RUTHERFORD, J. H.**  
**THE HISTORY OF THE LINLITHGOW AND STIRLINGSHIRE HUNT.** From 1775 to the present. By J. H. RUTHERFORD. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 25s. net.
- RUTLAND, DUKE OF, G.C.B.**  
**NOTES OF AN IRISH TOUR IN 1846.**  
 By the DUKE OF RUTLAND, G.C.B. (LORD JOHN MANNERS). New Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- RUTLAND, DUCHESS OF.**  
**THE COLLECTED WRITINGS OF JANETTA, DUCHESS OF RUTLAND.**  
 By the DUCHESS OF RUTLAND (LADY JOHN MANNERS). With Portrait and Illustrations. 2 vols. post 8vo, 15s. net.
- IMPRESSIONS OF BAD-HOMBURG.**  
 Comprising a Short Account of the Women's Associations of Germany under the Red Cross. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.
- SOME PERSONAL RECOLLECTIONS**  
 of the Later Years of the Earl of Beaconsfield, K.G. Sixth Edition. 6d.
- SOME OF THE ADVANTAGES OF**  
 Easily Accessible Reading and Recreation Rooms and Free Libraries. With Remarks on Starting and Maintaining them. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 1s.
- ENCOURAGING EXPERIENCES OF**  
 Reading and Recreation Rooms, Aims of Guilds, Nottingham Social Guide, Existing Institutions, &c., &c. Crown 8vo, 1s.
- ST QUINTIN, COLONEL T. A.**  
**CHANCES OF SPORTS OF SORTS.**  
 By Colonel T. A. ST QUINTIN. Illustrated. Demy 8vo, 16s. net.
- SAINTSBURY, PROFESSOR.**  
**A HISTORY OF CRITICISM AND LITERARY TASTE IN EUROPE.**  
 From the Earliest Texts to the Present Day. By GEORGE SAINTSBURY, M.A. (Oxon.), Hon. LL.D. (Aberd.), Professor of Rhetoric and English Literature in the University of Edinburgh. In 3 vols. demy 8vo. Vol. I.—Classical and Mediæval Criticism. 16s. net. Vol. II.—From the Renaissance to the Decline of Eighteenth Century Orthodoxy. 20s. net. Vol. III.—Nineteenth Century. 20s. net.
- MATTHEW ARNOLD.** "Modern English Writers." Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- THE FLOURISHING OF ROMANCE AND THE RISE OF ALLEGORY (12TH AND 13TH CENTURIES).** "Periods of European Literature." Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- THE EARLIER RENAISSANCE.**  
 "Periods of European Literature." Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- THE LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY.** "Periods of European Literature." Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- A HISTORY OF ENGLISH CRITICISM.** Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**SALMON, ARTHUR L.**

SONGS OF A HEART'S SURRENDER.

By ARTHUR L. SALMON. Crown 8vo, 2s.

LIFE OF LIFE, AND OTHER POEMS.

Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

LYRICS AND VERSES. Crown 8vo,

2s. 6d.

A BOOK OF VERSES. Crown 8vo,

2s. 6d. net.

WEST COUNTRY VERSES. Crown

8vo, 3s. net.

A LITTLE BOOK OF SONGS. Fcap.

8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

A NEW BOOK OF VERSE. Fcap. 8vo,

2s. 6d. net.

**SCHOOL CATECHISM.**Issued by a CONFERENCE OF MEMBERS  
OF THE REFORMED CHURCHES IN SCOT-  
LAND. 18mo,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.**SCOBIE, LIEUT. I. H. MACKAY.**

AN OLD HIGHLAND FENCIBLE

CORPS. The History of the Reay

Fencible Highland Regiment of Foot,

or Mackay's Highlanders, 1794-1802.

By Lieut. I. H. MACKAY SCOBIE. Crown

4to, 21s. net.

**"SCOLOPAX."**

A BOOK OF THE SNIPE. By

"SCOLOPAX." Illustrated. Crown 8vo,

5s. net.

**SCOTT, SIR J. GEORGE, K.C.I.E.**

CURSED LUCK. By Sir J. GEORGE

SCOTT, K.C.I.E. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**SCOTT, MICHAEL.**

TOM CRINGLE'S LOG. By MICHAEL

SCOTT. New Edition. With 19 Full-

page Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

THE CRUISE OF THE MIDGE.

Illustrated boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.

**SCOTTISH TEXT SOCIETY PUBLI-**CATIONS. *For List of Vols., see p. 29.***SCOTTISH BANKERS MAGAZINE.**

The Journal of the Institute of Bankers

in Scotland. Quarterly, 1s. net.

**SCUDAMORE, CYRIL.**

BELGIUM AND THE BELGIANS.

By CYRIL SCUDAMORE. With Illustra-

tions. Square crown 8vo, 6s.

**SELLAR, E. M.**

RECOLLECTIONS AND IMPRES-

SIONS. By E. M. SELLAR. With

Eight Portraits. Fourth Impression.

Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**SELLAR, EDMUND.**

MUGGINS OF THE MODERN SIDE.

By EDMUND SELLAR. Crown 8vo, 6s.

GLENTYRE. Crown 8vo, 6s.

WHERE EVERY PROSPECT PLEASES.

Crown 8vo, 6s.

**SETH, PROFESSOR JAMES.**

A STUDY OF ETHICAL PRINCIPLES.

By JAMES SETH, M.A., Professor of

Moral Philosophy in the University of

Edinburgh. Tenth Edition, Revised.

Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**SHARPLEY, H.**

ARISTOPHANES—PAX. Edited, with

Introduction and Notes, by H. SHARP-

LEY. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**SHAW, WILLIAM.**

SECURITIES OVER MOVEABLES.

Four Lectures delivered at the Request

of the Society of Accountants in Edin-

burgh, the Institute of Accountants

and Actuaries in Glasgow, and the

Institute of Bankers in Scotland in

1902-3. Demy 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**SHEEPSHANKS, RICHARD.**

HECTOR AND ACHILLES: A TALE

OF TROY. Illustrated by J. FINNE-

MORE. Rendered into English after the

Chronicle of Homer by RICHARD

SHEEPSHANKS. Square crown 8vo, 5s.

net.

**SIME, JAMES, M.A.**

SCHILLER. (Foreign Classics for Eng-

lish Readers.) By JAMES SIME, M.A.

Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**SIMPSON, PROFESSOR J. Y., D.Sc.**

SIDE-LIGHTS ON SIBERIA. Some

Account of the Great Siberian Iron

Road: The Prisons and Exile System.

By Professor J. Y. SIMPSON, D.Sc.

With numerous Illustrations and a

Map. Demy 8vo, 16s.

**SIMPSON, VIOLET A.**

IN FANCY'S MIRROR. By VIOLET A.

SIMPSON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**SINCLAIR, EDITH.**

HIS HONOUR AND HIS LOVE. By

EDITH SINCLAIR. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**SINCLAIR, ISABEL G.**

THE THISTLE AND FLEUR DE LYS.

By ISABEL G. SINCLAIR. Crown 8vo,

3s. net.

**SKELTON, SIR JOHN, K.C.B.**

THE HANDBOOK OF PUBLIC

HEALTH. A New Edition. Revised by

JAMES PATTEN MACDOUGALL, C.B., Ad-

vocate, Secretary to the Local Govern-

ment Board for Scotland, Joint-Author

of 'The Parish Council Guide for Scot-

land,' and ABIJAH MURRAY, Chief Clerk

of the Local Government Board for

Scotland. 3s. 6d. net.

**SKRINE, F. H.**

FONTENOY, AND GREAT BRITAIN'S

SHARE IN THE WAR OF THE AUSTRIAN

SUCCESSION. By F. H. SKRINE. With

Map, Plans, and Illustrations. Demy

8vo, 21s. net.

**SLATER, FRANCIS CAREY.**

FROM MIMOSA LAND. By FRANCIS CAREY SLATER. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**SMITH, PROFESSOR G. GREGORY.**

THE TRANSITION PERIOD. "Periods of European Literature." By G. GREGORY SMITH, M.A. (Oxon.), Professor of English Literature, Belfast University. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

SPECIMENS OF MIDDLE SCOTS. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**SNELL, F. J.**

THE FOURTEENTH CENTURY. "Periods of European Literature." By F. J. SNELL. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**"SON OF THE MARSHES, A."**

WITHIN AN HOUR OF LONDON TOWN: AMONG WILD BIRDS AND THEIR HAUNTS. Edited by J. A. OWEN. Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

WITH THE WOODLANDERS AND BY THE TIDE. Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

ON SURREY HILLS. Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

ANNALS OF A FISHING VILLAGE. Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**SORLEY, PROF., Litt.D., LL.D.**

THE ETHICS OF NATURALISM. By W. R. SORLEY, Litt.D., LL.D., Fellow of the British Academy, Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of Cambridge. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

RECENT TENDENCIES IN ETHICS. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**SPROTT, GEORGE W., D.D.**

THE WORSHIP AND OFFICES OF THE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND. By GEORGE W. SPROTT, D.D. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE BOOK OF COMMON ORDER OF THE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND, Commonly known as JOHN KNOX'S LITURGY. With Historical Introduction and Illustrative Notes. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net.

SCOTTISH LITURGIES OF THE REIGN OF JAMES VI. Edited with an Introduction and Notes. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

EUCHOLOGION. A Book of Common Order. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net.

**ST ANDREWS UNIVERSITY CALENDAR.**

Printed and Published for the Senatus Academicus. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**ST ANDREWS UNIVERSITY L.L.A. CALENDAR.**

Printed and Published for the Senatus Academicus. Crown 8vo, 1s.

**STEEVENS, G. W.**

THINGS SEEN: IMPRESSIONS OF MEN, CITIES, AND BOOKS. By the late G. W. STEEVENS. Edited by G. S. STREET. With a Memoir by W. E. HENLEY, and a Photogravure reproduction of Collier's Portrait. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

FROM CAPETOWN TO LADYSMITH, and EGYPT IN 1898. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

IN INDIA. With Map. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

THE LAND OF THE DOLLAR. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

GLIMPSES OF THREE NATIONS. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

MONOLOGUES OF THE DEAD. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**STEPHENS.**

THE BOOK OF THE FARM; dealing exhaustively with every Branch of Agriculture. Edited by JAMES MACDONALD, F.R.S.E., Secretary of the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland. With over 700 Illustrations and Animal Portraits. In Six Divisional Volumes at 10s. 6d. net each; or Three Volumes of over 500 pages each, price 21s. net per Volume. Each Volume sold separately.

LAND AND ITS EQUIPMENT. With 346 Illustrations and 8 Plans of Farm Buildings. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.

FARM CROPS. With 354 Illustrations. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.

FARM LIVE STOCK. With 77 Illustrations and 84 Animal Portraits. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.

**STEVENSON, G. H.**

THE SILVER SPOON. By G. H. STEVENSON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**STEWART, CHARLES.**

HAUD IMMOR. Reminiscences of Legal and Social Life in Edinburgh and London, 1850-1900. By CHARLES STEWART. With 10 Photogravure Plates. Royal 8vo, 7s. 6d.



**STEWART and CUFF.**

**PRACTICAL NURSING.** By ISLA STEWART, Matron of St Bartholomew's Hospital, London; and HERBERT E. CUFF, M.D., F.R.C.S., Medical Officer for General Purposes to the Metropolitan Asylums' Board, London; late Medical Superintendent, North-Eastern Fever Hospital, Tottenham, London. Revised by H. E. CUFF; assisted by B. CUTLER, Assistant Matron of St Bartholomew's Hospital. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s. net. Also in 2 volumes, each 3s. 6d. net.

**STODDART, ANNA M.**

**LIFE and LETTEES OF HANNAH E. PIPE.** By ANNA M. STODDART. With Portraits and Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**STORMONTH, REV. JAMES.**

**ETYMOLOGICAL and PRONOUNCING DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE.** Including a very Copious Selection of Scientific Terms. For use in Schools and Colleges, and as a Book of General Reference. The Pronunciation carefully revised by the Rev. P. H. PHELPS, M.A. Cantab. A New Edition. Edited by WILLIAM BAYNE. Crown 8vo, pp. 1082. 5s. net.

**HANDY SCHOOL DICTIONARY, PRONOUNCING and EXPLANATORY.** Thoroughly Revised and Enlarged by WILLIAM BAYNE. 16mo, 7d. net.

**SWAYNE, G. C.**

**HERODOTUS.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By G. C. SWAYNE. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**SYLLABUS OF RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION FOR PUBLIC SCHOOLS.**

Issued by a CONFERENCE OF MEMBERS OF THE REFORMED CHURCHES IN SCOTLAND. 18mo, 1d.

**SYNGE, M. B.**

**THE STORY OF THE WORLD.** By M. B. SYNGE. With Coloured Frontispieces and numerous Illustrations by E. M. SYNGE, A.R.E., and Maps. 2 vols., 3s. 6d. each net.

**TABLE OF FEES FOR CONVEYANCING, &c.**

4to. Roxburgh, 3s. 6d.; sewed, 2s. 6d.

**THACKERAY, MISS.**

**MADAME DE SEVIGNÉ.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By Miss THACKERAY. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**THEOBALD, FRED. V., M.A. (Cantab.)**

**A TEXT-BOOK OF AGRICULTURAL ZOOLOGY.** By FRED. V. THEOBALD. With numerous Illustrations. Second and Revised Edition. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**THOMSON, COLONEL AN-STRUTHER.**

**HISTORY OF THE FIFE LIGHT HORSE.** By Colonel ANSTRUTHER THOMSON. With numerous Portraits. Small 4to, 21s. net.

**THOMSON, DAVID.**

**HANDY BOOK OF THE FLOWER-GARDEN.** By DAVID THOMSON. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**THOMSON, WILLIAM.**

**A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON THE CULTIVATION OF THE GRAPE VINE.** By WILLIAM THOMSON, Tweed Vineyards. Tenth Edition. 8vo, 5s.

**THOMSON, LIEUT.-COLONEL S. J.**

**THE SILENT INDIA.** Being Tales and Sketches of the Masses. By Lieut.-Colonel S. J. THOMSON, C.I.E., I.M.S. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**THORBURN, S. S.**

**ASIATIC NEIGHBOURS.** By S. S. THORBURN. With Two Maps. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**THE PUNJAB IN PEACE AND WAR.** Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**INDIA'S SAINT AND THE VICEROY.** A Novel. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**THURSTON, KATHERINE CECIL.**

**THE CIRCLE.** By KATHERINE CECIL THURSTON. Ninth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**JOHN CHILCOTE, M.P.** Fifteenth Impression, crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition 1s. net. People's Edition, 6d.

**THE MYSTICS.** With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**THE FLY ON THE WHEEL.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**TIELE, PROFESSOR, Litt.D., &c.**

**ELEMENTS OF THE SCIENCE OF RELIGION.** Part I.—Morphological. Part II.—Ontological. Being the Gifford Lectures delivered before the University of Edinburgh in 1896-98. By C. P. TIELE, Theol.D., Litt.D. (Bonon.), Hon. M.R.A.S., &c., Professor of the Science of Religion in the University of Leiden. In 2 vols. post 8vo, 7s. 6d. net each.

**TIME, MARK.**

**A DERELICT EMPIRE.** By MARK TIME. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE HIGHLAND AND AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY OF SCOTLAND.** Published Annually, price 5s.



- TRAVERS, GRAHAM** (Margaret Todd, M.D.)  
**THE WAY OF ESCAPE.** A Novel. By GRAHAM TRAVERS (Margaret Todd, M.D.) Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- WINDYHAUGH.** Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- FELLOW TRAVELLERS.** Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- TROLLOPE, ANTHONY.**  
**CÆSAR.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By ANTHONY TROLLOPE. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- TROLLOPE, HENRY M.**  
**CORNEILLE AND RACINE.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By HENRY M. TROLLOPE. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- TRUSCOTT, L. PARRY.**  
**THE MARRIAGE OF AMINTA.** By L. PARRY TRUSCOTT. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- TULLOCH, PRINCIPAL.**  
**PASCAL.** (Foreign Classics for English Readers.) By Principal TULLOCH. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- TURNER, STANLEY HORSFALL, M.A.**  
**THE HISTORY OF LOCAL TAXATION IN SCOTLAND.** By STANLEY HORSFALL TURNER, M.A. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- VAUGHAN, PROFESSOR C. E.**  
**THE ROMANTIC REVOLT.** By Professor C. E. VAUGHAN. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- VEITCH, PROFESSOR.**  
**HAMILTON.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Professor VEITCH. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- VERNÈDE, R. E.**  
**AN IGNORANT IN INDIA.** By R. E. VERNÈDE. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- VOYAGE OF THE "SCOTIA," THE.** Being the Record of a Voyage of Exploration in Antarctic Seas. By THREE OF THE STAFF. Demy 8vo, 21s. net.
- WADDELL, REV. P. HATELY, D.D.**  
**ESSAYS ON FAITH.** By Rev. P. HATELY WADDELL, D.D. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.
- THOUGHTS ON MODERN MYSTICISM.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.
- WAKE, LUCY.**  
**LADY WAKE'S REMINISCENCES.** By LUCY WAKE. With Portraits and Illustrations. Second Impression. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.
- WALFORD, E.**  
**JUVENAL.** (Ancient Classics for English Readers.) By E. WALFORD. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- WALLACE, PROFESSOR.**  
**KANT.** (Philosophical Classics for English Readers.) By Professor WALLACE. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.
- WARREN, SAMUEL.**  
**DIARY OF A LATE PHYSICIAN.** By SAMUEL WARREN. Cloth, 2s. 6d.; boards, 2s.; paper cover, 1s.
- NOW AND THEN.** The Lily and the Bee. Intellectual and Moral Development of the Present Age. 4s. 6d.
- WATSON, GILBERT.**  
**THE SKIPPER.** By GILBERT WATSON. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- WATT, MACLEAN.**  
**BY STILL WATERS.** By MACLEAN WATT. 1s. 6d.; leather, 2s.
- WEIGALL, ARTHUR E. P.**  
**TRAVELS IN THE UPPER EGYPTIAN DESERTS.** By ARTHUR E. P. WEIGALL. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.
- THE LIFE AND TIMES OF AKH-NATON, PHARAOH OF EGYPT.** Illustrated. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.
- THE TREASURY OF ANCIENT EGYPT.** Chapters on Ancient Egyptian History and Archaeology. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.
- WENLEY, PROFESSOR, D.Sc., D.Phil.**  
**ASPECTS OF PESSIMISM.** By R. M. WENLEY, M.A., D.Sc., D.Phil., Professor of Philosophy in the University of Michigan, U.S.A. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- WHIBLEY, CHARLES.**  
**THACKERAY.** "Modern English Writers." By CHARLES WHIBLEY. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- WILLIAM PITT.** With Portraits and Caricatures. Crown 8vo, 6s. net
- AMERICAN SKETCHES.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- WHISPER, A.**  
**KING AND CAPTIVE.** By A. WHISPER. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- THE SINISTER NOTE.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- WHITE, REV. JAMES.**  
**SIR FRIZZLE PUMPKIN, NIGHTS AT MESS, &c.** By Rev. JAMES WHITE. Illustrated cover, 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.
- WHYTE, ADAM GOWANS.**  
**THE TEMPLETON TRADITION.** By ADAM GOWANS WHYTE. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- YELLOW SANDS.** Crown 8vo, 6s.
- WILSON, CHRISTOPHER.**  
**THE MISSING MILLIONAIRE.** By CHRISTOPHER WILSON. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- THE HEART OF DELILAH.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**WILSON, LADY.**

LETTERS FROM INDIA. By LADY  
WILSON. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**WINRAM, JAMES.**

VIOLIN PLAYING and VIOLIN  
ADJUSTMENT. By JAMES WINRAM.  
Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**WORSLEY, PHILIP STANHOPE, M.A.**

HOMER'S ODYSSEY. Translated into  
English Verse in the Spenserian Stanza.  
By PHILIP STANHOPE WORSLEY, M.A.  
New and Cheaper Edition. Post 8vo,  
7s. 6d. net.

**WOTHERSPOON, H. J., M.A.**

KYRIE ELEISON ("LORD, HAVE  
MERCY"). A Manual of Private Prayers.  
With Notes and Additional Matter. By  
H. J. WOTHERSPOON, M.A., of St Os-  
wald's, Edinburgh. Cloth, red edges,  
1s. net; limp leather, 1s. 6d. net.

**WOTHERSPOON, H. J.—contd.**

BEFORE AND AFTER. Being Part I.  
of 'Kyrie Eleison.' Cloth, limp, 6d.  
net.

THE SECOND PRAYER BOOK OF  
KING EDWARD THE SIXTH (1552),  
ALONG WITH THE LITURGY OF COM-  
PROMISE. Edited by Rev. G. W.  
SPROTT, D.D. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

**YATE, LIEUT.-COLONEL, M.P.**

KHURASAN AND SISTAN. By Lieut.-  
Colonel C. E. YATE, C.S.I., C.M.G.  
With numerous Illustrations and Map.  
Demy 8vo, 21s.

NORTHERN AFGHANISTAN; OR, LET-  
TERS FROM THE AFGHAN BOUNDARY  
COMMISSION. With Route Maps. Demy  
8vo, 18s.

## BLACKWOODS' Shilling Editions of Popular Novels.

Bound in Cloth. With Coloured Illustration on Wrapper.

**THE DAFT DAYS.**

By NEIL MUNRO.

**THE LUNATIC AT LARGE.**

By J. STORER CLOUSTON.

**CAPTAIN DESMOND, V.C.**

By MAUD DIVER.

**THE GREAT AMULET.**

By MAUD DIVER.

**CANDLES IN THE WIND.**

By MAUD DIVER.

**SARACINESCA.**

By F. MARION CRAWFORD.

**THE MOON OF BATH.**

By BETH ELLIS.

**JOHN CHILCOTE, M.P.**

By KATHERINE CECIL THURSTON.

**THE POWER OF THE KEYS.**

By SYDNEY C. GRIER.

**A SAFETY MATCH.**

By IAN HAY.

**"PIP": A Romance of Youth.**

By IAN HAY.

**THE RED NEIGHBOUR.**

By W. J. ECCOTT.

**THE GREEN CURVE.**

By OLE LUK-OIE.

**THE RIGHT STUFF.**

By IAN HAY.

**IN HIGHLAND HARBOURS  
WITH PARA HANDY.**

By HUGH FOULIS.

**A MAN'S MAN.**

By IAN HAY.

**FANCY FARM.**

By NEIL MUNRO.

**THE ADVANCED-GUARD.**

By SYDNEY C. GRIER.

**"No. 101."**

By WYMOND CAREY.

# The Scottish Text Society.

THIS SOCIETY was founded in 1882 for the purpose of printing and editing texts in Early and Middle Scots. Two parts or volumes, extending to not less than 400 pages, are published annually; but additional parts or volumes are issued when the funds permit. They are printed in uniform style, octavo, and are issued (a) in paper covers, or (b) bound in half-leather (maroon), with cloth sides, gilt top, and gilt lettering. The Annual Subscription is £1, 1s. (One Guinea), payable in advance. Specimen Volumes may be seen at the Society's Printers, Messrs William Blackwood & Sons, 45 George Street, Edinburgh, and 37 Paternoster Row, London, or in any of the libraries in Great Britain and abroad.

*Note.*—The volumes have been issued in half-leather since 1897. Earlier volumes are in paper covers only; but they may be bound to the Society's pattern at the cost of 1s. 6d. per volume. Most of the back volumes are in print, and may be purchased by subscribers. Particulars of price, &c., may be had on application to the Treasurer.

## LIST OF PUBLICATIONS.

**The Kingis Quair**, together with A Ballad of Good Counsel. By King James I. Edited by the Rev. Professor W. W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. pp. 113 and lv.

**The Poems of William Dunbar.** Part I. Edited by John Small, M.A. pp. 160 and iv.

**The Court of Venus**, By Iohne Rolland, 1575. Edited by the Rev. Walter Gregor, M.A., LL.D. pp. 231 and xxxii.

**The Poems of William Dunbar.** Part II. Edited by John Small, M.A. pp. 169 and vi.

**Leslie's Historie of Scotland.** Part I. Translated into Scottish from the original Latin by Father James Dalrymple. Edited by the Rev. E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 130 and iv.

**Schir William Wallace, Knight of Ellerslie.** Part I. By Henry the Minstrel, commonly known as Blind Harry. Edited by James Moir, M.A. pp. 181.

**The Wallace.** Part II. Edited by James Moir, M.A. pp. 198.

**Sir Tristrem.** With Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. Edited by G. P. M'Neill, M.A. pp. 148 and xlviii.

**The Poems of Alexander Montgomerie.** Part I. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 176 and vii.

**The Poems of Alexander Montgomerie.** Part II. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 160 and iv.

**The Poems of Alexander Montgomerie.** Part III. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 96 and lvii.

**Gau's Richt Vay to the Kingdome of Heuine.** Edited by the Rev. Professor Mitchell, D.D. pp. 130 and lviii.

**Legends of the Saints** (Fourteenth Century). Part I. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 224 and v.

**Leslie's Historie of Scotland.** Part II. Edited by the Rev. E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 270 and xvi.

**Niniane Winjet's Works.** Vol. I. Edited by the Rev. J. King Hewison. pp. 140 and cxx.

## PERIODS OF EUROPEAN LITERATURE: A Complete and CONTINUOUS HISTORY OF THE SUBJECT. Edited by PROFESSOR SAINTS- BURY. In 12 crown 8vo vols., each 5s. net.

THE DARK AGES. By Prof. W. P. Ker.  
THE FLOURISHING OF ROMANCE AND THE  
RISE OF ALLEGORY. (12th and 13th  
Centuries.) By Prof. Saintsbury.  
THE FOURTEENTH CENTURY. By F. J. Snell.  
THE TRANSITION PERIOD. By Prof. G.  
Gregory Smith.  
THE EARLIER RENAISSANCE. By Prof.  
Saintsbury.  
THE LATER RENAISSANCE. By David  
Hannay.

THE FIRST HALF OF THE SEVENTEENTH  
CENTURY. By Prof. H. J. C. Grierson.  
THE AUGUSTAN AGES. By Prof. Oliver  
Elton.  
THE MID-EIGHTEENTH CENTURY. By  
Prof. J. H. Millar.  
THE ROMANTIC REVOLT. By Prof. C. E.  
Vaughan.  
THE ROMANTIC TRIUMPH. By T. S. Omond.  
THE LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY. By  
Prof. Saintsbury.

## PHILOSOPHICAL CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS. Edited by WILLIAM KNIGHT, LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of St Andrews. *Re-issue in Shilling Volumes net.*

DESCARTES . . . Prof. Mahaffy.  
BUTLER . . . Rev. W. L. Collins.  
BERKELEY . . . Prof. Campbell Fraser.  
FICHTE . . . Prof. Adamson.  
KANT . . . Prof. Wallace.  
HAMILTON . . . Prof. Veitch.  
HEGEL . . . Prof. Edward Caird.  
LEIBNIZ . . . John Theodore Merz.

VICO . . . Prof. Flint.  
HOBBS . . . Prof. Croom Robertson.  
HUME . . . Prof. Knight.  
SPINOZA . . . Principal Caird.  
BACON—Part I. . . Prof. Nichol.  
BACON—Part II. . . Prof. Nichol.  
LOCKE . . . Prof. Campbell Fraser.

## FOREIGN CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS. Edited by MRS OLIPHANT. CHEAP RE-ISSUE. In limp cloth, fcap. 8vo, price 1s. each net.

DANTE . . . Mrs Oliphant.  
VOLTAIRE General Sir E. B. Hamley, K.C.B.  
PASCAL . . . Principal Tulloch.  
PETRARCH . . . Henry Reeve, C.B.  
GOETHE . . . A. Hayward, Q.C.  
MOLIÈRE . . . Editor and F. Traver, M.A.  
MONTAIGNE . . . Rev. W. L. Collins.  
RABELAIS . . . Sir Walter Besant.  
CALDERON . . . E. J. Hasell.  
SAINT SIMON . . . C. W. Collins.

CERVANTES . . . Mrs Oliphant.  
CORNEILLE AND RACINE Henry M. Trollope.  
MADAME DE SÉVIGNÉ . . . Miss Thackeray.  
LA FONTAINE AND OTHER } Rev. W. Lucas  
FRENCH FABULISTS . . . } Collins, M.A.  
SCHILLER . . . James Sime, M.A.  
TASSO . . . E. J. Hasell.  
ROUSSEAU . . . Henry Grey Graham.  
ALFRED DE MUSSET . . . C. F. Oliphant.

## ANCIENT CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS. Edited by the REV. W. LUCAS COLLINS, M.A. CHEAP RE-ISSUE. In limp cloth, fcap. 8vo, price 1s. each net. *Contents of the Series—*

HOMER: ILIAD . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
HOMER: ODYSSEY . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
HERODOTUS . . . G. C. Swayne.  
CÆSAR . . . Anthony Trollope.  
VIRGIL . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
HORACE . . . Sir Theodore Martin.  
ÆSCHYLUS . . . Bishop Copleston.  
XENOPHON . . . Sir Alex. Grant.  
CICERO . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
SOPHOCLES . . . C. W. Collins.  
PLINY . . . { Rev. A. Church and  
W. J. Brodribb.  
EURIPIDES . . . W. B. Donne.  
JUVENAL . . . E. Walford.  
ARISTOPHANES . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.

HESIOD AND THEOGNIS . . . J. Davies.  
PLAUTUS AND TERENCE . . . Rev. W. L. Collins.  
TACITUS . . . W. B. Donne.  
LUCIAN . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
PLATO . . . C. W. Collins.  
GREEK ANTHOLOGY . . . Lord Neaves.  
LIVY . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
OVID . . . Rev. A. Church.  
CATULLUS, TIBULLUS, AND } J. Davies.  
PEOPERTIUS . . . }  
DEMOSTHENES . . . W. J. Brodribb.  
ARISTOTLE . . . Sir Alex. Grant.  
THUCYDIDES . . . Rev. W. Lucas Collins.  
LUCRETIVS . . . W. H. Mallock.  
PINDAR . . . Rev. F. D. Morice.

# WM. BLACKWOOD & SONS'

## EDUCATIONAL WORKS

---

### CONTENTS.

|                               | PAGE |                                | PAGE |
|-------------------------------|------|--------------------------------|------|
| ENGLISH . . . .               | 35   | PALÆONTOLOGY . . . .           | 54   |
| HISTORY . . . .               | 42   | PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY . . . .     | 55   |
| LATIN AND GREEK . . . .       | 42   | PSYCHOLOGY AND LOGIC . . . .   | 55   |
| MODERN LANGUAGES . . . .      | 49   | FORESTRY . . . .               | 55   |
| MATHEMATICS . . . .           | 52   | ELEMENTARY SERIES . . . .      | 56   |
| GEOGRAPHY . . . .             | 53   | WRITING AND COPY BOOKS . . . . | 64   |
| CHEMISTRY AND POPULAR SCIENCE | 54   | UNIVERSITY CALENDARS . . . .   | 64   |
| GEOLOGY . . . .               | 54   |                                |      |





# EDUCATIONAL WORKS.

---

\* \* *The Publishers will be glad to consider applications  
from Teachers for Specimen Copies.*

## ENGLISH.

### A History of English Criticism.

By GEORGE SAINTSBURY, M.A. (Oxon.), Hon. LL.D. (Aberd.), Professor of Rhetoric and English Literature in the University of Edinburgh. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

---

### WORKS BY J. LOGIE ROBERTSON, M.A.

#### A History of English Literature.

For Secondary Schools. By J. LOGIE ROBERTSON, M.A., First English Master, Edinburgh Ladies' College. With an Introduction by Professor MASSON, Edinburgh University. Sixth Edition, revised, 3s. ; and in 3 parts, 1s. 4d. each.

**Daily Chronicle.**—"The exposition is fresh and independent, and high above the level of the ordinary work of this class.....The book should prove a great boon not only to secondary schools and colleges but also to private students."

#### Outlines of English Literature.

For Young Scholars, with Illustrative Specimens. By the SAME AUTHOR. Third Edition, revised. 1s. 6d.

**Spectator.**—"To sketch English literature from Beowulf down to Lord Macaulay in a hundred and fifty pages without falling into the style of a catalogue, is an achievement of which Mr Robertson may well be proud."

#### English Verse for Junior Classes.

By the SAME AUTHOR. In Two Parts. 1s. 6d. net each.

PART I.—Chaucer to Coleridge.

PART II.—Nineteenth-Century Poets.

**School Guardian.**—"Of the high literary quality of this selection there can be no question. There is nothing here that is not classical in the strictest sense of the word."

**English Prose for Junior and Senior Classes.**

By the SAME AUTHOR. In Two Parts. 2s. 6d. each.

PART I.—Malory to Johnson. | PART II.—Nineteenth Century.

**Educational Times.**—"We do not remember to have seen a better prose collection on the same scale, and the book should be very useful to teachers who like to work on the lines of genuine literature."

**Mr R. Blair, Education Officer.**—"I have to inform you that the Committee of the London County Council concerned have decided to add the book entitled 'English Exercises for Junior and Senior Classes' (J. L. Robertson, 1s.) to the Council's supplementary list of books for evening schools."

**English Exercises for Junior and Senior Classes.**

By the SAME AUTHOR. 1s.

**Schoolmaster.**—"These exercises have the high recommendation of being the gradual growth of a course of practical work in an English class-room..... The manual cannot fail to be of service even to experienced teachers."

**Headmaster, Council Central Secondary School.**—"As an English teacher and lecturer of long experience, I may say unreservedly that I am delighted with the book. I shall certainly use it in my classes. The suggestions under each extract are extremely good, and will be valuable to teachers and students alike."

**High School Headmaster.**—"The exercises are admirably drawn up, and are most suitable for classes preparing for Leaving Certificate or University examinations. I have great pleasure in adopting the book as a class-book, and intend to use it systematically throughout the session."

**English Drama.**

By the SAME AUTHOR. 2s. 6d.

**Spectator.**—"This capital selection.....Not only is it a text-book with excellent notes, but a neat and handy collection of English dramatic masterpieces."

**The Select Chaucer.**

Edited and Elucidated by the SAME AUTHOR. Crown 8vo, 3s. ; and in Two Parts—Part I., 2s. ; Part II., 1s. 6d.

**Athenæum.**—"A very successful attempt to enlarge the range of Chaucer reading in schools. We wish we could believe that the book will have the circulation it deserves."

**Paraphrasing, Analysis, and Correction of Sentences.**

By D. M. J. JAMES, M.A., Gordon Schools, Huntly. 1s.

*Also in Two Parts:—*

**Passages for Paraphrasing.** Verse and Prose. 6d.

**Exercises in Analysis, Parsing, and Correction of Sentences.** 6d.

**Athenæum.**—"The pieces are well calculated to improve the grammar and style of the rising generation in an age which is not distinguished for lucidity or logic."

*Part I., Chaucer to Burns, cloth, 1s. net.*

*Part II., Wordsworth to Newbolt, cloth, 1s. net.*

*In One Volume complete, cloth, 2s. net.*

*Prize Edition, 5s.*

## The School Anthology of English Verse.

A Selection of English Verse  
from Chaucer to the Present Day.

EDITED BY

**J. H. LOBBAN, M.A.,**

Lecturer in English Literature, Birkbeck College, London;

Editor of 'The Granta Shakespeare,' &c.

**Athenæum.**—"We have here such poetry as rings morally sound and exalts the soundest instincts and feelings of human nature."

**Guardian.**—"The work is worthy of nothing less than absolutely unqualified approval, and we cordially wish it the hearty welcome it deserves."

**Journal of Education.**—"One of the best small anthologies we have seen for some time. The selection is made with great good taste and care."

### Elementary Grammar and Composition.

Based on the ANALYSIS OF SENTENCES. With a Chapter on WORD-BUILDING and DERIVATION, and containing numerous Exercises. 1s.

**Schoolmaster.**—"A very valuable book. It is constructive as well as analytic, and well-planned exercises have been framed to teach the young student how to use the elements of his mother-tongue."

### A Working Handbook of the Analysis of Sentences.

With NOTES ON PARSING, PARAPHRASING, FIGURES OF SPEECH, AND PROSODY. New Edition, Revised. 1s. 6d.

**Schoolmaster.**—"The book deserves unstinted praise for the care with which the matter has been arranged, the depth of thought brought to bear upon the discussion of the subject.....One of the best and soundest productions on analysis of sentences we have met with yet."

STORMONTH'S  
ENGLISH DICTIONARIES,  
PRONOUNCING, ETYMOLOGICAL, AND EXPLANATORY.

SCHOOL AND COLLEGE EDITION.

New Edition. Crown 8vo, 1080 pp. 5s. net.

BLACKWOOD'S  
SEVENPENNY  
DICTIONARY

"At such a price nothing better could be asked: good clear print, concise yet ample explanations, and accurate etymology. Just such a handy volume as schools need. Has evidently been prepared with great care. It justifies its record for reliability."—*The School Guardian*.

STORMONTH'S  
HANDY SCHOOL DICTIONARY

PRONOUNCING AND EXPLANATORY

*Thoroughly Revised and Enlarged by*

WILLIAM BAYNE

**7d. net**



**The George Eliot Reader.**

By ELIZABETH LEE, Author of 'A School History of English Literature,' &c. With an Introduction and Portrait. 2s.

Academy.—"A fascinating little volume."

**English Words and Sentences.**

BOOK I. FOR THE JUNIOR DIVISION. 6d.

BOOK II. FOR THE INTERMEDIATE DIVISION. 8d.

**Practical Teacher.**—"These books contain numerous well-graduated exercises in English, and should be popular with teachers of the subject."

**Story of the World Readers.** See p. 57.**Blackwood's Literature Readers.** See p. 56.**Specimens of Middle Scots.**

WITH HISTORICAL INTRODUCTION AND GLOSSARIAL NOTES. By G. GREGORY SMITH, M.A., Professor of English Literature, University of Belfast. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**English Prose Composition.**

By JAMES CURRIE, LL.D. Fifty-seventh Thousand. 1s. 6d.

**Short Stories for Composition.**

FIRST SERIES. WITH SPECIMENS OF LETTERS, AND SUBJECTS FOR LETTERS AND ESSAYS. Seventh Impression. 112 pages. 1s.

**Short Stories for Composition.**

SECOND SERIES. WITH LESSONS ON VOCABULARY. Third Edition. 112 pages. 1s.

**Educational News.**—"These stories are fresh, short, and pithy. They possess a novelty that will arrest attention, and a kernel that will tax to some measure the thinking faculty."

**Short Stories, Fables, and Pupil-Teacher Exercises for Composition.**

WITH INSTRUCTIONS IN THE ART OF LETTER AND ESSAY WRITING, PARAPHRASING, FIGURES OF SPEECH, &c. 1s. 3d.

**BLACKWOODS' SCHOOL SHAKESPEARE.**

Edited by R. BRIMLEY JOHNSON. Each Play complete, with Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. In crown 8vo volumes. Cloth, 1s. 6d.; paper covers, 1s. each.

**The Merchant of Venice.**

**Richard II.**

**Julius Cæsar.**

**The Tempest.**

**As You Like It.**

**Henry V.**

**Macbeth.**

**Twelfth Night.**

*Other Volumes in preparation.*

## BLACKWOODS' ENGLISH CLASSICS.

With Portraits. In Fcap. 8vo volumes, cloth.

General Editor—J. H. LOBBAN, M.A.,

Editor of 'The School Anthology'; Lecturer in English Literature, Birkbeck College, London; Editor of 'The Granta Shakespeare,' &c.

**Journal of Education.**—"This Series has, we believe, already won the favourable notice of teachers. It certainly deserves to do so. Its volumes are edited with scholarly care and sound literary judgment. They are strongly and neatly bound, and extremely well printed."

**Saturday Review.**—"The print is good, and the introductions both short and to the point, while the notes strike a happy medium between misplaced erudition and trivial scrappiness."

**School Board Chronicle.**—"There are no more thorough and helpful annotated editions than those of the series of Blackwoods' English Classics."

**Cowper—The Task, and Minor Poems.**

By ELIZABETH LEE, Author of 'A School History of English Literature. 2s. 6d.

**Guardian.**—"Miss Elizabeth Lee scores a distinct success. Her introduction is to the point and none too long; her notes are apt and adequate."

**Scott—Lady of the Lake.**

By W. E. W. COLLINS, M.A. 1s. 6d.

**Saturday Review.**—"Like some other members of this series of 'English Classics' we have noticed recently, this volume is a good piece of work."

**Johnson—Lives of Milton and Addison.**

By Professor J. WIGHT DUFF, D.Litt., Durham College of Science, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. 2s. 6d.

**Educational News.**—"A scholarly edition. The introduction contains things as good as are to be found in Macaulay's essay or Leslie Stephen's monograph."

**Milton—Paradise Lost, Books I.-IV.**

By J. LOGIE ROBERTSON, M.A., First English Master, Edinburgh Ladies' College. 2s. 6d.

**Saturday Review.**—"An excellent edition."

**Macaulay—Life of Johnson.**

By D. NICHOL SMITH, M.A., Goldsmith's Reader in English, University of Oxford. 1s. 6d.

**Journal of Education.**—"Mr Smith's criticism is sound, simple, and clear. Annotated with care and good sense, the edition is decidedly satisfactory."

**Carlyle—Essay on Burns.**

By J. DOWNIE, M.A., U.F.C. Training College, Aberdeen. 2s. 6d.

**Guardian.**—"A highly acceptable addition to our stock of school classics. We congratulate Mr Downie on having found a field worthy of his labours, and on having accomplished his task with faithfulness and skill."

BLACKWOODS' ENGLISH CLASSICS—*continued.*

**Goldsmith—Traveller, Deserted Village, & other Poems.**

By J. H. LOBBAN, M.A., Lecturer in English Literature, Birkbeck College, London. 1s. 6d.

*Literature.*—"If Goldsmith touched nothing that he did not adorn, Mr Lobban and his publishers have adorned Goldsmith."

**Pope—Essay on Criticism, Rape of the Lock, and other Poems.**

By GEORGE SOUTAR, M.A., Litt.D., Lecturer in English Language and Literature, University College, Dundee. 2s. 6d.

*Guardian.*—"The selection is made with taste, and the commentary is sound, adequate, and not overburdened with superfluous information."

**Hazlitt—Essays on Poetry.**

By D. NICHOL SMITH, M.A., Goldsmith's Reader in English, University of Oxford. 2s. 6d.

*Athenæum.*—"The introduction is a capital piece of work."

**Wordsworth, Coleridge, and Keats.**

By A. D. INNES, M.A., Editor of 'Julius Cæsar,' &c., &c. 2s. 6d.

*Academy.*—"For Mr Innes's volume we have nothing but praise."

**Scott—Marmion.**

By ALEXANDER MACKIE, M.A., Examiner in English, University of Aberdeen; Editor of 'Warren Hastings,' &c. 1s. 6d.

*Guardian.*—"The volume is worthy to take its place with the best of its kind."

**Lamb—Select Essays.**

By AGNES WILSON, Editor of Browning's 'Strafford,' &c.; late Senior English Mistress, East Putney High School. 2s. 6d.

*Athenæum.*—"Miss Wilson's edition is well equipped."

**Milton—Samson Agonistes.**

By E. H. BLAKENEY, M.A., Headmaster, King's School, Ely. 2s. 6d.

*School World.*—"Everything testifies to excellent scholarship and editorial care.....The notes are a joy to the critic."

**Byron—Selections.**

By Professor J. WIGHT DUFF, D.Litt., Armstrong College, in the University of Durham, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. 3s. 6d.

*Academy and Literature.*—"Nothing has been done perfunctorily; Professor Duff is himself interested in Byron, and passes on to his reader, in consequence, some of the emotion he himself has felt."

Mr G. K. Chesterton in 'The Daily News.'—"Mr Wight Duff has made an exceedingly good selection from the poems of Byron, and added to them a clear and capable introductory study."

Professor R. Wulker in 'Englische Studien.'—"Wight Duff's Byron wird sicherlich dazu beitragen des Dichters Werke in England mehr zu verbreiten, als dies bisher geschehen ist. Aber auch in Deutschland ist das Buch allen Freunden Byron's warm zu empfehlen."

## HISTORY.

### A Short History of Scotland.

By ANDREW LANG. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

## LATIN AND GREEK.

### Higher Latin Prose.

With an Introduction by H. W. AUDEN, M.A., Principal, Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master, Fettes College, Edinburgh; late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, and Bell University Scholar. 2s. 6d.

*\* \* \* A Key (for Teachers only), 5s. net.*

**Educational Times.**—"Those who are in need of a short practical guide on the subject will find Mr Auden's little work well worth a trial.....The passages chosen are well suited for translation."

**School Guardian.**—"This is an excellent Latin prose manual. The hints on composition are first-rate, and should be of considerable use to the student of style who has mastered the ordinary rules of prose writing.....Altogether, this is a very valuable little book."

### Lower Latin Prose.

By K. P. WILSON, M.A., Assistant-Master, Fettes College, Edinburgh. 2s. 6d.

*\* \* \* A Key (for Teachers only), 5s. net.*

**Journal of Education.**—"A well-arranged and helpful manual. The whole book is well printed and clear. We can unreservedly recommend the work."

### Higher Latin Unseens.

For the Use of Higher Forms and University Students. Selected, with Introductory Hints on Translation, by H. W. AUDEN, M.A., Principal, Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master, Fettes College, Edinburgh; late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, and Bell University Scholar. 2s. 6d.

**Educational News.**—"The hints on translation given by Mr Auden are the most useful and judicious we have seen in such small bulk, and they are illustrated with skilful point and aptness."

### Lower Latin Unseens.

Selected, with Introduction, by W. LOBBAN, M.A., Classical Master, High School, Glasgow. 2s.

**Athenæum.**—"More interesting in substance than such things usually are."

**Journal of Education.**—"Will be welcomed by all teachers of Latin."

**School Guardian.**—"The introductory hints on translation should be well studied; they are most valuable, and well put."

Now issued at 1s. 6d. net to meet the requirements of the Education Department for a Latin Translation Book suited to pupils in the early stage of the subject. In its more expensive form the volume has been extensively used by the greater Public Schools, and is in its Twelfth Edition. A specimen copy will be sent gratis to any teacher wishing to examine the book with a view to introduction.

TWELFTH EDITION.

# ADITUS FACILIORES.

## AN EASY LATIN CONSTRUING BOOK,

### WITH VOCABULARY.

BY

A. W. POTTS, M.A., LL.D.,

Late Head-Master of the Fettes College, Edinburgh, and sometime  
Fellow of St John's College, Cambridge;

AND THE

REV. C. DARNELL, M.A.,

Late Head-Master of Cargilfield Preparatory School, Edinburgh,  
and Scholar of Pembroke and Downing  
Colleges, Cambridge.

### Contents.

**PART I.—Stories and Fables**—The Wolf on his Death-Bed—Alexander and the Pirate—Zeno's Teaching—Ten Helpers—The Swallow and the Ants—Discontent—Pleasures of Country Life—The Wolf and the Lamb—Simplicity of Farm Life in Ancient Italy—The Conceited Jackdaw—The Ant and the Grasshopper—The Hares contemplate Suicide—The Clever Parrot—Simple Living—The Human Hand—The Bear—Value of Rivers—Love of the Country—Juno and the Peacock—The Camel—The Swallow and the Birds—The Boy and the Echo—The Stag and the Fountain—The Cat's Device—The Human Figure—The Silly Crow—Abraham's Death-Bed—The Frogs ask for a King—The Gods select severally a Favourite Tree—Hear the Other Side.

**PART II.—Historical Extracts**—THE STORY OF THE FABII: Historical Introduction—The Story of the Fabii. THE CONQUEST OF VEII: Historical Introduction—The Conquest of Veii. THE SACRIFICE OF DECIVS: Historical Introduction—The Sacrifice of Decius.

**PART III.—The First Roman Invasion of Britain**—Introduction to Extracts from Cæsar's Commentaries—The First Roman Invasion of Britain.

**PART IV.—The Life of Alexander the Great**—Historical Introduction—Life and Campaigns of Alexander the Great.

APPENDIX. VOCABULARY. ADDENDA.

*Two Maps to Illustrate the First Roman Invasion of Britain and the Campaigns of Alexander the Great.*



**First Latin Sentences and Prose.**

By K. P. WILSON, M.A., late Scholar of Pembroke College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Fettes College. With Vocabulary. 2s. 6d. Also issued in Two Parts, 1s. 6d. each.

**Saturday Review.**—"This is just the right sort of help the beginner wants. ....It is certainly a book to be recommended for preparatory schools or the lower classes of a public school."

**Educational Review.**—"Form masters in search of a new composition book will welcome this publication."

**A First Latin Reader.**

With Notes, Exercises, and Vocabulary. By K. P. WILSON, M.A., Fettes College. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.

**Tales of Ancient Thessaly.**

An Elementary Latin Reading-Book, with Notes and Vocabulary. By J. W. E. PEARCE, M.A., Headmaster of Merton Court Preparatory School, Sidcup; late Assistant-Master, University College School, London. With a Preface by J. L. PATON, M.A., late Fellow of St John's College, Cambridge; Headmaster of the Grammar School, Manchester. 1s.

**Guardian.**—"A striking and attractive volume. Altogether, we have here quite a noteworthy little venture, to which we wish all success."

**Latin Verse Unseens.**

By G. MIDDLETON, M.A., Classical Master, Aberdeen Grammar School, late Scholar of Emmanuel College, Cambridge; Joint-Author of 'Student's Companion to Latin Authors.' 1s. 6d.

**Schoolmaster.**—"They form excellent practice in 'unseen' work, in a great variety of style and subject. For purposes of general study and as practice for examinations the book is a thoroughly useful one."

**Latin Historical Unseens.**

For Army Classes. By L. C. VAUGHAN WILKES, M.A. 2s.

**Army and Navy Gazette.**—"Will be found very useful by candidates for entrance to Sandhurst, Woolwich, and the Militia."

**Stonyhurst Latin Grammar.**

By Rev. JOHN GERARD. Second Edition. Pp. 199. 3s.

**Aditus Faciliores Græci.**

An Easy Greek Construing Book, with Complete Vocabulary. By the late A. W. POTTS, M.A., LL.D., and the Rev. C. DARNELL, M.A. Fifth Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 3s.

**Camenarum Flosculos in Usum Fettesianorum decerptos**  
**Notis quibusdam illustraverunt** A. GUL. POTTS, M.A., LL.D.;  
 GUL. A. HEARD, M.A., LL.D. New Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Greek Accidence.**

For Use in Preparatory and Public Schools. By T. C. WEATHERHEAD, M.A., Headmaster, Choir School, King's College, Cambridge; formerly of Trinity College, Cambridge, and Bell University Scholar. 1s. 6d.

**Literature.**—"Not the least of its merits is the clearness of the type, both Greek and English."

**Pilot.**—"The most useful book for beginners we have seen."

**The Messenian Wars.**

An Elementary Greek Reader. With Exercises and Full Vocabulary. By H. W. AUDEN, M.A., Principal, Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master, Fettes College, Edinburgh; late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, and Bell University Scholar. 1s. 6d.

**Saturday Review.**—"A far more spirited narrative than the Anabasis. We warmly commend the book."

**Higher Greek Prose.**

With an Introduction by H. W. AUDEN, M.A., Principal, Upper Canada College, Toronto. 2s. 6d. \* \* \* *Key (for Teachers only)*, 5s. net.

**Guardian.**—"The selection of passages for translation into Greek is certainly well made."

**Journal of Education.**—"A manual of well-graduated exercises in Greek Prose Composition, ranging from short sentences to continuous pieces."

**Lower Greek Prose.**

By K. P. WILSON, M.A., Assistant-Master in Fettes College, Edinburgh. 2s. 6d. \* \* \* *A Key (for Teachers only)*, 5s. net.

**School Guardian.**—"A well-arranged book, designed to meet the needs of middle forms in schools."

**Higher Greek Unseens.**

For the Use of Higher Forms and University Students. Selected, with Introductory Hints on Translation, by H. W. AUDEN, M.A., Principal, Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master, Fettes College, Edinburgh. 2s. 6d.

**Educational Times.**—"It contains a good selection quite difficult enough for the highest forms of public schools."

**Schoolmaster.**—"The introductory remarks on style and translation form eminently profitable preliminary reading for the earnest and diligent worker in the golden mine of classical scholarship."

**Greek Unseens.**

BEING ONE HUNDRED PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION AT SIGHT IN JUNIOR CLASSES. Selected and arranged. With Introduction by W. LOBBAN, M.A., Classical Master, The High School, Glasgow. 2s.

This little book is designed for the use of those preparing for the Leaving Certificate, Scotch Preliminary, London Matriculation, and similar examinations in Greek. The extracts are drawn from over a score of different authors, and regard has been had in the selection to literary or historical interest, and in the arrangement to progressive difficulty.

**Greek Verse Unseens.**

By T. R. MILLS, M.A., Lecturer in Classics, University College, Dundee, formerly Scholar of Wadham College, Oxford; Joint-Author of 'Student's Companion to Latin Authors.' 1s. 6d.

**School Guardian.**—"A capital selection made with much discretion.....It is a great merit that the selections are intelligible apart from their context."

**University Correspondent.**—"This careful and judicious selection should be found very useful in the higher forms of schools and in preparing for less advanced University examinations for Honours."

**Greek Test Papers.**

By JAMES MOIR, Litt.D., LL.D., late co-Rector of Aberdeen Grammar School. 2s. 6d.

*\*\* A Key (for Teachers only), 5s. net.*

**University Correspondent.**—"This useful book.....The papers are based on the long experience of a practical teacher, and should prove extremely helpful and suggestive to all teachers of Greek."

**Greek Prose Phrase Book.**

Based on Thucydides, Xenophon, Demosthenes, and Plato. Arranged according to subjects, with Indexes. By H. W. AUDEN, M.A., Editor of 'Meissner's Latin Phrase Book.' Interleaved, 3s. 6d.

**Spectator.**—"A good piece of work, and likely to be useful."

**Athenæum.**—"A useful little volume, helpful to boys who are learning to write Greek prose."

**Journal of Education.**—"Of great service to schoolboys and schoolmasters alike. The idea of interleaving is especially commendable."

**Aristophanes—Pax.**

Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by H. SHARPLEY, M.A., late Scholar of Corpus Christi College, Oxford. In 1 vol. 12s. 6d. *net.*

**A Short History of the Ancient Greeks from the Earliest Times to the Roman Conquest.**

By P. GILES, Litt.D., LL.D., Master of Emmanuel College, Cambridge. With Maps and Illustrations. *[In preparation.]*

**Outlines of Greek History.**

By the SAME AUTHOR. *2<sup>nd</sup> ed.* In 1 vol.

*[In preparation.]*

**A Manual of Classical Geography.**

By JOHN L. MYRES, M.A., Fellow of Magdalene College; Professor of Ancient History, Oxford. *[In preparation.]*

**BLACKWOODS'**  
*ILLUSTRATED*  
**CLASSICAL TEXTS.**

GENERAL EDITOR—H. W. AUDEN, M.A.

Principal of Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master at Fettes College; late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, and Bell University Scholar.

**Literature.**—"The best we have seen of the new type of school-book."

**Academy.**—"If the price of this series is considered, we know not where to look for its equal."

**Public School Magazine.**—"The plates and maps seem to have been prepared regardless of cost. We wonder how it can all be done at the price."

**BLACKWOODS' CLASSICAL TEXTS.**

**Cæsar—Gallic War, Books I.-III.**

By J. M. HARDWICH, M.A., Assistant-Master at Rugby; late Scholar of St John's College, Cambridge. With or without Vocabulary. 1s. 6d.

**Cæsar—Gallic War, Books IV., V.**

By Rev. St J. B. WYNNE WILLSON, M.A., Headmaster, Haileybury College; late Scholar of St John's College, Cambridge. With or without Vocabulary, 1s. 6d. Vocabulary separately, 3d.

**Cæsar—Gallic War, Books VI., VII.**

By C. A. A. DU PONTET, M.A., Assistant-Master at Harrow. With or without Vocabulary. 1s. 6d.

**Virgil—Georgic I.**

By J. SARGEAUNT, M.A., Assistant-Master at Westminster; late Scholar of University College, Oxford. 1s. 6d.

**Virgil—Georgic IV.**

By J. SARGEAUNT, M.A., Assistant-Master at Westminster; late Scholar of University College, Oxford. 1s. 6d.

BLACKWOODS' CLASSICAL TEXTS—*continued.***Virgil—Æneid, Books V., VI.**

By Rev. ST J. B. WYNNE WILLSON, M.A., Headmaster, Haileybury College. 1s. 6d.

**Ovid—Metamorphoses (Selections).**

By J. H. VINCE, M.A., late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, Assistant-Master at Bradfield. 1s. 6d.

**Ovid—Elegiac Extracts.**

By R. B. BURNABY, M.A. Oxon.; Classical Master, Trinity College, Glenalmond. 1s. 6d.

**Arrian—Anabasis, Books I., II.**

By H. W. AUDEN, M.A., late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge; Principal of Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master at Fettes College. 2s. 6d.

**Homer—Odyssey, Book VI.**

By E. E. SIKES, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of St John's College, Cambridge. 1s. 6d.

**Homer—Odyssey, Book VII.**

By E. E. SIKES, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of St John's College, Cambridge. *[In preparation.]*

**Demosthenes—Olynthiacs, 1-3.**

By H. SHARPLEY, M.A., late Scholar of Corpus College, Oxford; Assistant-Master at Hereford School. 1s. 6d.

**Horace—Odes, Books I., II.**

By J. SARGEAUNT, M.A., late Scholar of University College, Oxford; Assistant-Master at Westminster. 1s. 6d.

**Horace—Odes, Books III., IV.**

By J. SARGEAUNT, M.A., Assistant-Master at Westminster. 1s. 6d.

**Cicero—In Catilinam, I.-IV.**

By H. W. AUDEN, M.A., late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge; Principal of Upper Canada College, Toronto; formerly Assistant-Master at Fettes College. 1s. 6d.

**Cicero—De Senectute and De Amicitia.**

By J. H. VINCE, M.A., Assistant-Master at Bradfield.

*[In preparation.]*

**Cicero—Pro Lege Manilia and Pro Archia.**

By K. P. WILSON, M.A., late Scholar of Pembroke College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Fettes College. 2s. 6d.



BLACKWOODS' CLASSICAL TEXTS—*continued.*

**Cicero—Select Letters.**

By Rev. T. NICKLIN, M.A., Assistant-Master at Rossall. 2s. 6d.

**Cicero—Pro Caecina.**

By Rev. J. M. LUPTON, M.A. Cantab., Assistant-Master at Marlborough College. *[In preparation.]*

**Tacitus—Agricola.**

By H. F. MORLAND SIMPSON, M.A., late Scholar of Pembroke College, Cambridge; Rector of Aberdeen Grammar School. *[In preparation.]*

**Xenophon—Anabasis, Books I., II.**

By A. JAGGER, M.A., late Scholar of Pembroke College, Cambridge; Headmaster, Queen Elizabeth's Grammar School, Mansfield. 1s. 6d.

**Sallust—Jugurtha.**

By I. F. SMEDLEY, M.A., Assistant-Master at Westminster; late Fellow of Pembroke College, Cambridge. 1s. 6d.

**Euripides—Hercules Furens.**

By E. H. BLAKENEY, M.A., Headmaster, King's School, Ely. 2s. 6d.

**Livy—Book XXVIII.**

By G. MIDDLETON, M.A., Classical Master in Aberdeen Grammar School; and A. SOUTER, D.Litt., Regius Professor of Humanity in the University of Aberdeen. 1s. 6d.

**Livy—Book IX.**

By J. A. NICKLIN, B.A., late Scholar of St John's College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Liverpool College. *[In preparation.]*

**Nepos—Select Lives.**

By Rev. E. J. W. HOUGHTON, D.D., Headmaster of Rossall School. *[In the press.]*

MODERN LANGUAGES.

FRENCH.

**Historical Reader of Early French.**

Containing Passages Illustrative of the Growth of the French Language from the Earliest Times to the end of the 15th Century. By HERBERT A. STRONG, LL.D., Officier de l'Instruction Publique, Professor of Latin, University College, Liverpool; and L. D. BARNETT, M.A., Litt.D. 3s.

**Guardian.**—"A most valuable companion to the modern handbooks on historical French grammar."

**The Tutorial Handbook of French Composition.**

By ALFRED MERCIER, L.-ès-L., Lecturer on French Language and Literature in the University of St Andrews. 3s. 6d.

**Educational Times.**—"A very useful book, which admirably accomplishes its object of helping students preparing for examinations.....It is on rather novel lines, which commend themselves at once to any one who has had to teach the subject."

**French Historical Unseens.**

For Army Classes. By N. E. TOKE, B.A. 2s. 6d.

**Journal of Education.**—"A distinctly good book.....May be unreservedly commended."

**A First Book of "Free Composition" in French.**

By J. EDMOND MANSION, B.-ès-L., Senior Modern Language Master, George Watson's College, Edinburgh. 1s.

**School World.**—"We recommend it warmly to all teachers of French, and trust that it will have a wide circulation."

**French Test Papers for Civil Service and University Students.**

Edited by EMILE B. LE FRANÇOIS, French Tutor, Redcliff House, Winchester House, St Ives, &c., Clifton, Bristol. 2s.

**Weekly Register.**—"Deserves as much praise as can be heaped on it.....Thoroughly good work throughout."

**All French Verbs in Twelve Hours (except Defective Verbs).**

By ALFRED J. WYATT, M.A. 1s.

**Weekly Register.**—"Altogether unique among French grammatical helps, with a system, with a *coup d'œil*, with avoidance of repetition, with a premium on intellectual study, which constitute a new departure."

**The Children's Guide to the French Language.**

By ANNIE G. FERRIER, Teacher of French in the Ladies' College, Queen Street, Edinburgh. 1s.

**Schoolmaster.**—"The method is good, and the book will be found helpful by those who have to teach French to small children."

**GERMAN.****A History of German Literature.**

By JOHN G. ROBERTSON, Ph.D., Professor of German in the University of London. 6d. net.

**Times.**—"In such an enterprise even a tolerable approach to success is something of an achievement, and in regard to German literature Mr Robertson appears to have made a nearer approach than any other English writer."

**Outlines of the History of German Literature.**

For the Use of Schools. By the SAME AUTHOR. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

## DR LUBOVIVUS' GERMAN SERIES.

**A Practical German Grammar, Reader and Writer.**

By LOUIS LUBOVIVUS, Ph.D., German Master, Hillhead High School, Glasgow; Lecturer on German, U.F.C. Training College; Examiner for Degrees in Arts, University of Glasgow.

Part I.—Elementary. 2s.

Part II. 3s.

**Lower German.**

Reading, Supplementary Grammar with Exercises, and Material for Composition. With Notes and Vocabulary, and Ten Songs in Sol-Fa Notation. By LOUIS LUBOVIVUS, Ph.D. 2s. 6d.

**Athenæum.**—"The volume is well designed."

**Preparatory Schools Review.**—"A capital reading-book for middle forms."

**Progressive German Composition.**

With copious Notes and Idioms, and FIRST INTRODUCTION TO GERMAN PHILOLOGY. By LOUIS LUBOVIVUS, Ph.D. 3s. 6d.

*Also in Two Parts :—*

**Progressive German Composition.** 2s. 6d.

*\*\* A Key (for Teachers only), 5s. net.*

**First Introduction to German Philology.** 1s. 6d.

**Journal of Education.**—"The passages for translation are well selected, and the notes to the passages, as well as the grammatical introduction, give real assistance.....The part of the book dealing with German philology deserves great praise."

**A Compendious German Reader.**

Consisting of Historical Extracts, Specimens of German Literature, Lives of German Authors, an Outline of German History (1640-1890), Biographical and Historical Notes. Especially adapted for the use of Army Classes. By G. B. BEAK, M.A. 2s. 6d.

**Guardian.**—"This method of compilation is certainly an improvement on the hotch-potch of miscellaneous passages to be found in many of the older books."

**Spartanerjünglinge. A Story of Life in a Cadet College.**

By PAUL VON SZCZEPAŃSKI. Edited, with Vocabulary and Notes, by J. M. MORRISON, M.A., Master in Modern Languages, Aberdeen Grammar School. 2s.

**Scotsman.**—"An admirable reader for teaching German on the new method, and is sure to prove popular both with students and with teachers."

**A German Reader for Technical Schools.**

By EWALD F. SECKLER, Senior Language Master at the Birmingham Municipal Day School; German Lecturer, Birmingham Evening School; French Lecturer, Stourbridge Technical School. 2s.

## SPANISH.

### A Spanish Grammar.

With Copious Exercises in Translation and Composition; Easy reading Lessons and Extracts from Spanish Authors; a List of Idioms; a Glossary of Commercial Terms (English-Spanish); and a copious General Vocabulary (Spanish-English). By WILLIAM A. KESSEN, Teacher of Spanish, Hillhead High School, Glasgow. 3s. 6d.

**Investors' Review.**—"To the student who wishes to master the Spanish language for commercial or literary purposes this admirable little book will prove invaluable."

**Commerce.**—"Contains practically all that is necessary for the acquirement of a working knowledge of the language."

## MATHEMATICS.

### Arithmetic.

With numerous Examples, Revision Tests, and Examination Papers. By A. VEITCH LOTHIAN, M.A., B.Sc., F.R.S.E., Mathematical and Science Lecturer, E.C. Training College, Glasgow. *With Answers.* 3s. 6d.

**Guardian.**—"A work of first-rate importance.....We should find it hard to suggest any improvement.....We venture to predict that when the book becomes known, it will command a very wide circulation in our public schools and elsewhere."

### Practical Arithmetical Exercises.

FOR SENIOR PUPILS IN SCHOOLS. Containing upwards of 8000 Examples, consisting in great part of Problems, and 750 Extracts from Examination Papers. Second Edition, Revised. 364 pages, 3s. *With Answers,* 3s. 6d.

JAMES WELTON, Esq., *Lecturer on Education, and Master of Method, Yorkshire College.*—"Your 'Practical Arithmetic' seems to me the most complete collection of exercises in existence. Both idea and execution are excellent."

### Elementary Algebra.

The Complete Book, 288 pp., cloth, 2s. *With Answers,* 2s. 6d. *Answers* sold separately, price 9d. Pt. I., 64 pp., 6d. Pt. II., 64 pp., 6d. Pt. III., 70 pp., 6d. Pt. IV., 96 pp., 9d. *Answers* to Pts. I., II., III., each 2d. *Answers* to Pt. IV., 3d.

**Educational News.**—"A short and compact introduction to algebra.....The exercises are remarkably good, and the arrangement of the subject-matter is on the soundest principles. The work is, on the whole, to be commended as being at once inexpensive and scholarly."

### Handbook of Mental Arithmetic.

With 7200 Examples and Answers. 264 pp. 2s. 6d. Also in Six Parts, limp cloth, price 6d. each.

**Teachers' Monthly.**—"The examples are mainly concrete, as they should be, are of all varieties, and, what is most important, of the right amount of difficulty."

**Educational News.**—"This is, as a matter of fact, at once a handbook and a handy book. It is an absolute storehouse of exercises in mental computations. ....There are most valuable practical hints to teachers."

## Modern Geometry of the Point, Straight Line, and Circle.

An Elementary Treatise. By J. A. THIRD, D.Sc., Headmaster of Spier's School, Beith. 3s.

**Schoolmaster.**—“Each branch of this wide subject is treated with brevity, it is true, and yet with amazing completeness considering the size of the volume. So earnest and reliable an effort deserves success.”

**Journal of Education.**—“An exceedingly useful text-book, full enough for nearly every educational purpose, and yet not repellent by overloading.”

**Educational News.**—“A book which will easily take rank among the best of its kind. The subject is treated with complete thoroughness and honesty.”

## Mensuration.

128 pp., cloth, 1s. Also in Two Parts. Pt. I., Parallelograms and Triangles. 64 pp. Paper, 4d.; cloth, 6d. Pt. II., Circles and Solids. 64 pp. Paper, 4d.; cloth, 6d. *Answers* may be had separately, price 2d. each Part.

**Educational Times.**—“The explanations are always clear and to the point, while the exercises are so exceptionally numerous that a wide selection is offered to the students who make use of the book.”

## Higher Arithmetic.

For Ex-Standard and Continuation Classes. 128 pp. Paper, 6d.; cloth, 8d. With *Answers*, cloth, 11d. *Answers* may be had separately, price 3d.

# GEOGRAPHY.

*Fifty-Fifth Thousand.*

## Elements of Modern Geography.

By the Rev. ALEXANDER MACKAY, LL.D., F.R.G.S. Revised to the present time. Pp. 300. 3s.

**Schoolmaster.**—“For senior pupils or pupil-teachers the book contains all that is desirable.....It is well got up, and bears the mark of much care in the authorship and editing.”

*One Hundred and Ninety-Sixth Thousand.*

## Outlines of Modern Geography.

By the SAME AUTHOR. Revised to the present time. Pp. 128. 1s.

These ‘Outlines’—in many respects an epitome of the ‘Elements’—are carefully prepared to meet the wants of beginners. The arrangement is the same as in the Author’s larger works.

*One Hundred and Fifth Thousand.*

## First Steps in Geography.

By the SAME AUTHOR. 18mo, pp. 56. Sewed 4d.; in cloth, 6d.



**A Manual of Classical Geography.**

By JOHN L. MYRES, M.A., Professor of Ancient History, Oxford.  
*[In preparation.]*

## CHEMISTRY AND POPULAR SCIENCE.

**Forty Elementary Lessons in Chemistry.**

By W. L. SARGANT, M.A., Headmaster, Oakham School. Illustrated.  
 1s. 6d.

*Glasgow Herald.*—"Remarkably well arranged for teaching purposes, and shows the compiler to have a real grip of sound educational principles. The book is clearly written and aptly illustrated."

**Inorganic Tables, with Notes and Equations.**

By H. M. TIMPANY, B.Sc., Science Master, Borough Technical School, Shrewsbury. Crown 8vo, 1s.

**Things of Everyday.**

A Popular Science Reader on Some Common Things. With Illustrations. 2s.

*Guardian.*—"Will be found useful by teachers in elementary and continuation schools who have to conduct classes in the 'science of common things.'.....Well and strongly bound, and illustrated by beautifully clear diagrams."

## GEOLOGY.

**An Intermediate Text-Book of Geology.**

By Professor CHARLES LAPWORTH, LL.D., University, Birmingham.  
 Founded on Dr PAGE'S 'Introductory Text-Book of Geology.' With Illustrations. 5s.

*Educational News.*—"The work is lucid and attractive, and will take high rank among the best text-books on the subject."

*Publishers' Circular.*—"The arrangement of the new book is in every way excellent, and it need hardly be said that it is thoroughly up to date in all details.....Simplicity and clearness in the book are as pronounced as its accuracy, and students and teachers alike will find it of lasting benefit to them."

*Education.*—"The name of the Author is a guarantee that the subject is effectively treated, and the information and views up to date."

## PALÆONTOLOGY.

**A Manual of Palæontology.**

For the Use of Students. With a General Introduction on the Principles of Palæontology. By Professor H. ALLEYNE NICHOLSON, Aberdeen, and RICHARD LYDEKKER, B.A., F.G.S. &c. Third Edition. Entirely rewritten and greatly enlarged. 2 vols. 8vo, with 1419 Engravings. 63s.

## PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY.

*Fifteenth Edition, Revised.*

### Introductory Text-Book of Physical Geography.

With Sketch-Maps and Illustrations. By DAVID PAGE, LL.D., &c., Professor of Geology in the Durham College of Science, Newcastle. Revised by Professor CHARLES LAPWORTH. 2s. 6d.

**Athenæum.**—"The divisions of the subject are so clearly defined, the explanations are so lucid, the relations of one portion of the subject to another are so satisfactorily shown, and, above all, the bearings of the allied sciences to Physical Geography are brought out with so much precision, that every reader will feel that difficulties have been removed and the path of study smoothed before him."

## PSYCHOLOGY AND LOGIC.

### An Introductory Text-Book of Logic.

With Numerous Examples and Exercises. By SYDNEY HERBERT MELLONE, M.A. (Lond.), D.Sc. (Edin.); Examiner in Philosophy in the University of Edinburgh. Fifth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**Scotsman.**—"This is a well-studied academic text-book, in which the traditional doctrine that has been handed down from Aristotle to the university professors of to-day is expounded with clearness, and upon an instructive system which leads up naturally to the deeper and different speculations involved in modern logic.....The book, in fine, is an excellent working text-book of its subject, likely to prove useful both to students and to teachers."

### Elements of Psychology.

By SYDNEY HERBERT MELLONE, M.A. (Lond.), D.Sc. (Edin.), and MARGARET DRUMMOND, M.A. (Edin.) Second Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**Scotsman.**—"Thoroughness is a feature of the work, and, treating psychology as a living science, it will be found fresh, suggestive, and up-to-date."

**Education.**—"The authors of this volume have made satisfactory use of accredited authorities; in addition, they have pursued original investigations and conducted experiments, with the result that great freshness of treatment marks their contribution to the teaching of psychology"

### A Short History of Logic.

By ROBERT ADAMSON, LL.D., Late Professor of Logic in the University of Glasgow. Edited by W. R. SORLEY, Litt.D., LL.D., Fellow of the British Academy, Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of Cambridge. Crown 8vo, 5s net.

"There is no other History of Logic—short or long—in English, and no similar short work in any other language."

## FORESTRY.

### The Elements of British Forestry.

A Handbook for Forest Apprentices and Students of Forestry. By JOHN NISBET, D.C.E., Professor of Forestry at the West of Scotland Agricultural College, Author of 'The Forester.' Crown 8vo, 5s. 6d. net.

### Forest Entomology.

By A. T. GILLANDERS, Wood Manager to His Grace the Duke of Northumberland, K.G. Second Edition, Revised. With 351 Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

# ELEMENTARY SERIES. BLACKWOODS' LITERATURE READERS.

Edited by JOHN ADAMS, M.A., LL.D.,

Professor of Education in the University of London.

|                   |                        |
|-------------------|------------------------|
| BOOK I. . . . .   | Pp. 228. Price 1s.     |
| BOOK II. . . . .  | Pp. 275. Price 1s. 4d. |
| BOOK III. . . . . | Pp. 303. Price 1s. 6d. |
| BOOK IV. . . . .  | Pp. 381. Price 1s. 6d. |

## NOTE.

This new Series would seek to do for Literature what has already been done by many series of School Readers for History, Geography, and Science. Many teachers feel that their pupils should be introduced as soon as possible to the works of the great writers, and that reading may be learnt from these works at least as well as from compilations specially written for the young. Because of recent changes in Inspection, the present is a specially suitable time for the Introduction of such a series into Elementary Schools. In the Preparatory Departments of Secondary Schools the need for such a series is clamant.

It is to be noted that the books are not manuals of English literature, but merely Readers, the matter of which is drawn entirely from authors of recognised standing. All the usual aids given in Readers are supplied; but illustrations, as affording no help in dealing with Literature, are excluded from the series.

"The volumes, which are capitally printed, consist of selected readings of increasing difficulty, to which notes and exercises are added at the end. The selected pieces are admirably chosen, especially in the later books, which will form a beginning for a really sound and wide appreciation of the stores of good English verse and prose."—*Athenæum*.

"The selected readings.....are interesting, and possessed of real literary value. The books are well bound, the paper is excellent, and the unusual boldness and clear spacing of the type go far to compensate for the entire absence of pictorial illustrations."—*Guardian*.

"A very excellent gradus to the more accessible heights of the English Parnassus.....The appendices on spelling, word-building, and grammar are the work of a skilful, practical teacher."—*Pall Mall Gazette*.

"If we had the making of the English Educational Code for Elementary Schools, we should insert a regulation that all boys and girls should spend two whole years on these four books, and on nothing else."—*Bradford Observer*.

"The books are graded with remarkable skill."—*Glasgow Herald*.

" Absolutely the best set of all the history readers that have hitherto been published."—*The Guardian*.

# THE STORY OF THE WORLD.

FOR THE CHILDREN OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE. (In Five Books.)

By M. B. SYNGE.

With Coloured Frontispieces and numerous Illustrations by  
E. M. Syngé, A.R.E., and Maps.

## BOOK I. ON THE SHORES OF THE GREAT SEA. 1s. 4d.

Colonial Edition, 1s. 6d.

THE Home of Abraham—Into Africa—Joseph in Egypt—The Children of Israel—The First Merchant Fleet—Hiram, King of Tyre—King Solomon's Fleet—The Story of Carthage—The Story of the Argonauts—The Siege of Troy—The Adventures of Ulysses—The Dawn of History—The Fall of Tyre—The Rise of Carthage—Hanno's Adventures—The Battle of Marathon—King Ahasuerus—How Leonidas kept the Pass—Some

Greek Colonies—Athens—The Death of Socrates—The Story of Romulus and Remus—How Horatius kept the Bridge—Coriolanus—Alexander the Great—King of Macedonia—The Conquest of India—Alexander's City—The Roman Fleet—The Adventures of Hannibal—The End of Carthage—The Triumph of Rome—Julius Cæsar—The Flight of Pompey—The Death of Cæsar.

## BOOK II. THE DISCOVERY OF NEW WORLDS. 1s. 6d.

THE Roman World—The Tragedy of Nero—The Great Fire in Rome—The Destruction of Pompeii—Marcus Aurelius—Christians to the Lions—A New Rome—The Armies of the North—King Arthur and his Knights—How the Northmen conquered England—The First Crusade—Frederick Barbarossa—The Third Crusade—The Days of Chivalry—Queen of the Adriatic—The Story of Marco Polo—Dante's Great Poem—The

Maid of Orleans—Prince Henry, the Sailor—The Invention of Printing—Vasco da Gama's Great Voyage—Golden Goa—Christopher Columbus—The Last of the Moors—Discovery of the New World—Columbus in Chains—Discovery of the Pacific—Magellan's Straits—Montezuma—Siege and Fall of Mexico—Conquest of Peru—A Great Awakening.

## BOOK III. THE AWAKENING OF EUROPE. 1s. 6d.

Colonial Edition, 1s. 9d.

STORY of the Netherlands—The Story of Martin Luther—The Massacre of St Bartholomew—The Siege of Leyden—William the Silent—Drake's Voyage round the World—The Great Armada—Virginia—Story of the Revenge—Sir Walter Raleigh—The 'Fairy Queen'—First Voyage of the East India Company—Henry Hudson—Captain John Smith—The Founding of Quebec—The Pilgrim Fathers—Thirty Years of War—The Dutch at Sea—Van Riebeeck's Colony

—Oliver Cromwell—Two Famous Admirals—De Ruyter—The Founder of Pennsylvania—The 'Pilgrim's Progress'—William's Invitation—The Struggle in Ireland—The Siege of Vienna by the Turks—The Story of the Huguenots—The Battle of Blenheim—How Peter the Great learned Shipbuilding—Charles XII. of Sweden—The Boyhood of Frederick the Great—Anson's Voyage round the World—Maria Theresa—The Story of Scotland.

## THE STORY OF THE WORLD—*continued.*

### BOOK IV. THE STRUGGLE FOR SEA POWER. 1s. 9d.

The Story of the Great Mogul—Robert Clive—The Black Hole of Calcutta—The Struggle for North America—George Washington—How Pitt saved England—The Fall of Quebec—"The Great Lord Hawke"—The Declaration of Independence—Captain Cook's Story—James Bruce and the Nile—The Trial of Warren Hastings—Maria Antoinette—The Fall of the Bastille—Napoleon Bonaparte—Horatio Nelson—The Adventures of Mungo Park—The Travels of Baron Humboldt—The Battle of the Nile—

Copenhagen—Napoleon—Trafalgar—The Death of Nelson—The Rise of Wellington—The First Australian Colony—Story of the Slave Trade—The Defence of Saragoza—Sir John Moore at Corunna—The Victory of Talavera—The Peasant Hero of the Tyrol—The "Shannon" and the "Chesapeake"—Napoleon's Retreat from Moscow—Wellington's Victories in Spain—The Fall of the Empire—Story of the Steam Engine—Waterloo—The Exile of St Helena.

### BOOK V. GROWTH OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE. 2s.

How Spain lost South America—The Greek War—Victoria, Queen of England—The Great Boer Trek—The Story of Natal—The Story of Canada—The Winning of the West—A Great Arctic Expedition—Discoveries in Australia—The Last King of France—Louis Kossuth and Hungary—The Crimean War—The Indian Mutiny—King of United Italy—Civil War in America—The Mexican Revolution—Founding the German Empire—The Franco-German War—The Dream of Cecil Rhodes—The Dutch Republics in

South Africa—Livingstone's discoveries in Central Africa—China's Long Sleep—Japan, Britain's Ally—Russia—The Annexation of Burma—The Story of Afghanistan—The Empire of India—Gordon, the Hero of Khartum—The Redemption of Egypt—The Story of British West Africa—The Story of Uganda—The Founding of Rhodesia—British South Africa—The Dominion of Canada—Australia—The New Nation—Freedom for Cuba—Reign of Queen Victoria—Welding the Empire—Citizenship.

Also in 2 volumes, at 3s. 6d. each net, suitable as prize books.

Uniform with this Series.

## THE WORLD'S CHILDHOOD.

*With numerous Illustrations by Brinsley Le Fanu.*

### I. STORIES OF THE FAIRIES. 10d.

#### CONTENTS

1. Lit-tle Red Ri-ding Hood.
2. The Three Bears.
3. The Snow-Child.
4. Tom Thumb.
5. The Ug-ly Duck-ling.
6. Puss in Boots.
7. The Lit-tle Girl and the Cats.
8. Jack and the Bean-Stalk.
9. Gol-dy.
10. Cin-der-el-la—Part I.

11. Cin-der-el-la—Part II.
12. The Lost Bell.
13. Jack the Gi-ant Kill-er.
14. Star-bright and Bird-ie.
15. Beau-ty and the Beast.
16. Peach-Dar-ling.
17. In Search of a Night's Rest.
18. Dick Whit-ting-ton and his Cat.
19. The Sleep-ing Beau-ty.

### II. STORIES OF THE GREEK GODS AND HEROES. 10d.

#### CONTENTS.

1. A-bout the Gods.
2. The Names of the Gods.
3. Turn-ed in-to Stone.
4. The Shin-ing Char-i-ot.
5. The Laur-el Tree.
6. A Horse with Wings.
7. The Cy-press Tree.
8. The Fruits of the Earth.
9. Cu-pid's Gold-en Ar-rows.
10. Pan's Pipe.
11. A Long Sleep.
12. The Re-ward of Kind-ness.

13. At-a-lan-ta's Race.
  14. The Stor-y of Al-ces-tis.
  15. The Snow-White Bull.
  16. The Spi-der and his Web.
  17. I-o—the White Cow.
  18. The Three Gold-en Ap-ples.
  19. The Ol-ive Tree.
  20. A Boy Her-o of Old.
  21. The Thread of Ar-i-ad-ne.
  22. The Boy who tried to Fly.
  23. The Gold-en Harp.
- Teacher's Appendix.



"If history can be given a form likely to make it palatable to young folks, "F" has succeeded in doing so in these 'Stories of the English.' It is no exaggeration to say that the book represents not only *a masterpiece in literature for children*, but a work of no slight value for the national good."—*Scotsman*.

## STORIES OF THE ENGLISH FOR SCHOOLS.

By F.

FOR JUNIOR SCHOLARS.

VOL. I.—FROM THE COMING OF THE ENGLISH TO THE ARMADA. — 1s. 6d.

**CONTENTS.**—The coming of the White Horse—The coming of the Cross—The Fight with the Raven—Alfred the Great—Edward the Confessor—William the Conqueror—The Kings of the Golden Broom—Richard Lion-Heart—King John and Magna Charta—Earl Simon the Righteous—Edward the Englishman—Bannockburn and Berkeley—The Lions and the Lilies—A King dethroned—Prince Hal—King Harry—The Wars of the Roses—Henry VIII. and the Revolt from Rome—Edward VI. and Mary—Elizabeth, the Great Queen: (1) English Adventurers and the Cruise of the *Pelican*; (2) Mary, Queen of Scots; (3) Papist Plots and the Massacre of Saint Bartholomew; (4) The Armada.

**ILLUSTRATIONS.**—Dover Castle—The Pharos, Dover—Norsemen—Homes of our Ancestors—Château Gaillard—Tomb of a Crusader (Gervase Alard), Winchelsea Church—Carnarvon Castle—Coronation Chair, Westminster Abbey—Knights of the Fourteenth Century—Edward the Third—The Battle of Cressy—Tomb of Edward the Third, Westminster Abbey—Tomb of the Black Prince, Canterbury Cathedral—Richard II. on his voyage to Ireland—Jerusalem Chamber, Westminster Abbey—Henry V. with Military Attendants—Henry V. addressing his Army—Joan of Arc—The Crowning of Henry VII. on Bosworth Field—Henry VIII.—Wolsey—Sir Thomas More taking leave of his Daughter—Calais during the Sixteenth Century—Queen Elizabeth—The Armada—Drake—Mary, Queen of Scots—Drake playing Bowls with his Captains—Sir Walter Raleigh.

FOR SENIOR SCHOLARS.

VOL. II.—THE STRUGGLE FOR POWER AND GREATER ENGLAND.—1s. 6d.

**CONTENTS.**—The First of the Stuarts—The Struggle for Power—The Puritan Tyranny—The Second Struggle for Power: Charles II.—The Revolution—The Fight with France: The Dutch King—Queen Anne and Marlborough—Greater England—The Story of Anson—The Story of Wolfe—The Story of Captain Cook—The Story of Clive—The War of American Independence—The great French War—The Story of Nelson—The Story of the Great Duke—The End of the Stories.

**ILLUSTRATIONS.**—James I.—Bacon—Charles I.—A Cavalier—Oliver Cromwell—The Great Fire of London—The Seven Bishops going to the Tower—Landing of William of Orange in England—Marlborough—Gibraltar—Chatham—Fight between the *Centurion* and the Manila Ship—General Wolfe—The Death of Captain Cook—Washington—Pitt—Napoleon Bonaparte—Nelson—H.M.S. *Victory*, Portsmouth Harbour—Duke of Wellington—Napoleon on board the *Bellerophon*.

*Moirá O'Neill*, Author of 'Songs of the Glen of Antrim,' writing to Mr Blackwood, says: "F's 'Stories of the English' was written for my little daughter Susan. The child is quite fascinated by it, but equally so are all the grown-up friends to whom I have shown it. I lent it once to a sailor uncle, and he sat up to all hours of that night with it, and afterwards told me that he could hardly believe that such an account of Nelson's great battles had been written by a woman, because it was technically accurate. And a soldier friend and critic used almost the same words about the account of Marlborough's campaigns. F. is the most patient and faithful student of history that I know. She has such a strong literary sense that she simply could not write anything except in a literary form, and combined with it she has that rare thing, a judicial mind. This, I think, gives her work a quite peculiar value."

### Standard Readers.

Revised Edition. With Supplementary Pages, consisting of "Spelling Lists," "Word-Building," "Prefixes and Suffixes," &c. Profusely Illustrated with Superior Engravings.

|           |            |   |   |   |   |         |
|-----------|------------|---|---|---|---|---------|
| BOOK I.   | 40 Lessons | . | . | . | . | 8d.     |
| BOOK II.  | 40 Lessons | . | . | . | . | 9d.     |
| BOOK III. | 60 Lessons | . | . | . | . | 1s. 0d. |
| BOOK IV.  | 60 Lessons | . | . | . | . | 1s. 3d. |
| BOOK V.   | 60 Lessons | . | . | . | . | 1s. 4d. |
| BOOK VI.  | 60 Lessons | . | . | . | . | 1s. 6d. |

**Schoolmaster.**—"We strongly recommend these books.....Children will be sure to like them; the matter is extremely suitable and interesting, the print very distinct, and the paper a pleasure to feel."

### Infant Series.

|                         |   |                        |
|-------------------------|---|------------------------|
| FIRST PICTURE PRIMER.   | . | Sewed, 2d.; cloth, 3d. |
| SECOND PICTURE PRIMER.  | . | Sewed, 2d.; cloth, 3d. |
| PICTURE READING SHEETS. |   |                        |

1ST SERIES. | 2ND SERIES.

Each containing 16 sheets, unmounted, 3s. 6d. Mounted on 8 boards, with cloth border, price 14s.; varnished, 3s. 6d. per set extra.

Or the 16 sheets laid on linen, varnished, and mounted on a roller, 17s. 6d.

THE INFANT PICTURE READER. With numerous Illustrations. Cloth, limp, 6d.

**Educational News.**—"Teachers will find these Primers a useful introduction to the art of reading. We consider them well adapted to their purpose."

### Geographical Readers.

With numerous Maps, Diagrams, and Illustrations.

|                      |                   |         |         |
|----------------------|-------------------|---------|---------|
| GEOGRAPHICAL PRIMER. | (For Stand. I.)   | 96 pp.  | 9d.     |
| BOOK I.              | (For Stand. II.)  | 96 pp.  | 9d.     |
| BOOK II.             | (For Stand. III.) | 156 pp. | 1s. 0d. |
| BOOK III.            | (For Stand. IV.)  | 192 pp. | 1s. 3d. |
| BOOK IV.             | (For Stand. V.)   | 256 pp. | 1s. 6d. |
| BOOK V.              | (For Stand. VI.)  | 256 pp. | 1s. 6d. |
| BOOK VI.             | (For Stand. VII.) | 256 pp. | 1s. 9d. |

**Schoolmaster.**—"This is a really excellent series of Geographical Readers. The volumes have, in common, the attractiveness which good paper, clear type, effective woodcuts, and durable binding can present; whilst their contents, both as to quality and quantity, are so graded as to be admirably adapted to the several stages of the pupil's progress."

**Historical Readers.**

With numerous Portraits, Maps, and other Illustrations.

**SHORT STORIES FROM ENGLISH**

|                                    |         |         |
|------------------------------------|---------|---------|
| HISTORY . . . . .                  | 160 pp. | 1s. 0d. |
| FIRST HISTORICAL READER . . . . .  | 160 pp. | 1s. 0d. |
| SECOND HISTORICAL READER . . . . . | 224 pp. | 1s. 4d. |
| THIRD HISTORICAL READER . . . . .  | 256 pp. | 1s. 6d. |

**Schoolmaster.**—"These new Historical Readers have been carefully compiled. The facts are well selected; the story is well told in language most likely to impress itself in the memory of young children; and the poetical pieces are fitting accompaniments to the prose."

**School Board Chronicle.**—"The treatment is unconventional, but always in good taste. The volumes will meet with much favour generally as lively, useful, high-toned Historical Readers."

**Standard Authors.**

Adapted for Schools.

**HAWTHORNE'S TANGLEWOOD TALES.** With Notes and Illustrations. 160 pp. 1s. 2d.

**Aytoun's Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers.**

With Introduction, Notes, and Life of the Author, for Junior Classes.

|                                      |                             |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| EDINBURGH AFTER FLODDEN . . . . .    | 32 pages, 2d. ; cloth, 3½d. |
| THE EXECUTION OF MONTROSE . . . . .  | 32 pages, 2d. ; cloth, 3½d. |
| THE BURIAL-MARCH OF DUNDEE . . . . . | 32 pages, 2d. ; cloth, 3½d. |
| THE ISLAND OF THE SCOTS . . . . .    | 32 pages, 2d. ; cloth, 3½d. |

**Teachers' Aid.**—"Capital annotated editions.....Beautifully clear and painstaking; we commend them heartily to our brother and sister teachers."

**Educational News.**—"Useful issues of well-known poems.....The notes are exceedingly appropriate, and leave nothing in doubt. For class purposes we can specially recommend these little books."

**School Recitation Books.**

|                              |     |
|------------------------------|-----|
| BOOK I. 32 pages . . . . .   | 2d. |
| BOOK II. 32 pages . . . . .  | 2d. |
| BOOK III. 48 pages . . . . . | 3d. |
| BOOK IV. 48 pages . . . . .  | 3d. |
| BOOK V. 64 pages . . . . .   | 4d. |
| BOOK VI. 64 pages . . . . .  | 4d. |

**Schoolmistress.**—"These six books are a valuable contribution to school literature. The poems for each standard are judiciously chosen, the explanatory notes and questions at the end of every lesson are very suitable."

### Grammar and Analysis.

|           |            |                             |
|-----------|------------|-----------------------------|
| BOOK II.  | 24 pages . | . Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| BOOK III. | 24 pages . | . Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| BOOK IV.  | 48 pages . | . Paper, 2d. ; cloth, 3d.   |
| BOOK V.   | 64 pages . | . Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.   |
| BOOK VI.  | 64 pages . | . Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.   |
| BOOK VII. | 64 pages . | . Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.   |

**Schoolmaster.**—"This is a series of good practical books whose merits ought to ensure for them a wide sale. Among their leading merits are simplicity in definitions, judicious recapitulation, and abundance of well-selected exercises for practice."

**Teachers' Aid.**—"For thoroughness, method, style, and high-class work, commend us to these little text-books.....A practical hand has impressed every line with individuality.....We are determined to use them in our own department."

### Arithmetical Exercises.

|                                                                       |       |                             |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|-----------------------------|
| BOOK I.                                                               | . . . | . Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| BOOK II.                                                              | . . . | . Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| BOOK III.                                                             | . . . | . Paper, 2d. ; cloth, 3d.   |
| BOOK IV.                                                              | . . . | . Paper, 2d. ; cloth, 3d.   |
| BOOK V.                                                               | . . . | . Paper, 2d. ; cloth, 3d.   |
| BOOK VI.                                                              | . . . | . Paper, 2d. ; cloth, 3d.   |
| BOOK VII.                                                             | . . . | . Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.   |
| HIGHER ARITHMETIC for Ex-Standard and Continuation Classes, 128 pp. . |       | . Paper, 6d. ; cloth, 8d.   |

\* \* *ANSWERS may be had separately, and are supplied direct to Teachers only.*

**Schoolmaster.**—"We can speak in terms of high praise respecting this series of Arithmetical Exercises. They have been carefully constructed. They are well graduated, and contain a large and varied collection of examples.....We can recommend the series to our readers."

**Schoolmistress.**—"Large quantity, excellent quality, great variety, and good arrangement are the characteristics of this set of Arithmetical Exercises."

### Elementary Grammar and Composition.

Based on the ANALYSIS OF SENTENCES. With a Chapter on WORD-BUILDING and DERIVATION, and containing numerous Exercises. New Edition. 1s.

**Schoolmaster.**—"A very valuable book. It is constructive as well as analytic, and well-planned exercises have been framed to teach the young student how to use the elements of his mother-tongue.....A junior text-book that is calculated to yield most satisfactory results."

**Educational Times.**—"The plan ought to work well.....A decided advance from the old-fashioned practice of teaching."

**Grammar and Analysis.**

Scotch Code.

|               |           |                           |
|---------------|-----------|---------------------------|
| STANDARD II.  | 24 pages. | Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| STANDARD III. | 32 pages. | Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| STANDARD IV.  | 56 pages. | Paper, 2½d. ; cloth, 3½d. |
| STANDARD V.   | 56 pages. | Paper, 2½d. ; cloth, 3½d. |
| STANDARD VI.  | 64 pages. | Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.   |

**Teachers' Aid.**—"These are thoughtfully written and very practically conceived little helps.....They are most exhaustive, and brimming with examples."

**New Arithmetical Exercises.**

Scotch Code.

|                                                            |           |   |                           |
|------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|---|---------------------------|
| STANDARD I.                                                | 32 pages  | . | Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| STANDARD II.                                               | 32 pages  | . | Paper, 1½d. ; cloth, 2½d. |
| STANDARD III.                                              | 56 pages  | . | Paper, 2d. ; cloth, 3d.   |
| STANDARD IV.                                               | 64 pages  | . | Paper, 3d. ; cloth, 4d.   |
| STANDARD V.                                                | 80 pages  | . | Paper, 4d. ; cloth, 6d.   |
| STANDARD VI.                                               | 80 pages  | . | Paper, 4d. ; cloth, 6d.   |
| HIGHER ARITHMETIC for Ex-Standard and Continuation Classes | 128 pages | . | Paper, 6d. ; cloth, 8d.   |

\* \* *ANSWERS may be had separately, and are supplied direct to Teachers only.*

**Educational News.**—"The gradation of the exercises is perfect, and the examples, which are very numerous, are of every conceivable variety. There is ample choice for the teacher under every head. We recommend the series as excellent School Arithmetics."

**Merit Certificate Arithmetic.**

96 pp. Paper cover, 6d. cloth, 8d.

**Mensuration.**

128 pp., cloth, 1s. Also in Two Parts. Pt. I., Parallelograms and Triangles. 64 pp. Paper, 4d. ; cloth, 6d. Pt. II., Circles and Solids. 64 pp. Paper, 4d. ; cloth, 6d. *Answers may be had separately, price 2d. each Part.*

**Educational Times.**—"The explanations are always clear and to the point, while the exercises are so exceptionally numerous that a wide selection is offered to the students who make use of the book."

**A First Book on Physical Geography.**

For Use in Schools. 64 pp. 4d.

**Journal of Education.**—"This is a capital little book, describing shortly and clearly the geographical phenomena of nature."



**Manual Instruction—Woodwork.** DESIGNED TO MEET THE REQUIREMENTS OF THE MINUTE OF THE SCIENCE AND ART DEPARTMENT ON MANUAL INSTRUCTION. By GEORGE ST JOHN, Undenominational School, Handsworth, Birmingham. With 100 Illustrations. 1s.

### Blackwoods' Simplex Civil Service Copy Books.

By JOHN T. PEARCE, B.A., Leith Academy. Price 2d. each.

#### CONTENTS OF THE SERIES.

- No. 1. Elements, Short Letters, Words.
- " 2. Long Letters, Easy Words.
- " 3. Capitals, Half-line Words.
- " 4. Text, Double Ruling, Sentences.
- " 5. Half-Text, Sentences, Figures.
- " 6. Small Hand, Double Ruling.
- " 7. Intermediate, Transcription, &c.
- " 8. Small Hand, Single Ruling.

*The Headlines are graduated, up-to-date, and attractive.*

### Blackwoods' Universal Writing Books.

Have been designed to accompany the above series, and teachers will find it advantageous to use them as Dictation Copies, because by them the learner is kept continually writing at the correct slope, &c. No 1. is adapted for LOWER CLASSES, No. 2 for HIGHER CLASSES. Price 2d. each.

**Practical Teacher.**—"Our readers would do well to write for a specimen of this book, and of the blank exercise-books ruled on the same principle. They are worth careful attention."

**School World.**—"Those teachers who are anxious to train their pupils to write in the style associated with Civil Service Competitions should find the copy-books designed by Mr Pearce very useful. The writing is certainly simple; it may, in fact, be reduced to four elements, in which the pupil is rigorously exercised in the earlier books before proceeding in later numbers to continuous writing."

**Schoolmaster.**—"Those of our readers in search of new books should see these."

**Journal of Education.**—"Aids the eye and guides the hand, and thus checkmates any bias towards error in the slope."

## UNIVERSITY CALENDARS.

### St Andrews University Calendar.

Printed and Published for the Senatus Academicus. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

### St Andrews University L.L.A. Calendar.

Printed and Published for the Senatus Academicus. Crown 8vo, 1s.

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD & SONS, EDINBURGH AND LONDON.









